



~~LXII~~

Journals



Smith  
Q1  
S6A21  
MAMM

8K

SMITHSONIAN MISCELLANEOUS COLLECTIONS  
VOLUME 77, NUMBER 2

APR 18 1925  
ALLEGY

# EXPLORATIONS AND FIELD-WORK OF THE SMITHSONIAN INSTITUTION IN 1924



(PUBLICATION 2794)



CITY OF WASHINGTON  
PUBLISHED BY THE SMITHSONIAN INSTITUTION

1925



*S. Mamm.*

SMITHSONIAN MISCELLANEOUS COLLECTIONS  
VOLUME 77, NUMBER 2

EXPLORATIONS AND FIELD-WORK OF THE  
SMITHSONIAN INSTITUTION  
IN 1924



(PUBLICATION 2794)



CITY OF WASHINGTON  
PUBLISHED BY THE SMITHSONIAN INSTITUTION

1925

**The Lord Baltimore Press**  
BALTIMORE, MD., U. S. A.

## CONTENTS

	PAGE
Introduction .....	I
Geological Explorations in the Canadian Rockies (Dr. Charles D. Walcott). .	1
Geological Field-Work in Tennessee (Dr. R. S. Bassler).....	15
Geological Field-Work in the Rocky Mountains (Dr. Charles E. Resser). .	19
Geological Field-Work in Maryland and Connecticut (Mr. Earl V. Shannon) .....	23
Geological Field-Work in Nevada (Dr. W. F. Foshag).....	26
Field-Work of the Astrophysical Observatory (Dr. C. G. Abbot).....	28
Zoological Explorations in Western China (Rev. David C. Graham)....	33
Visit of Mr. Gerrit S. Miller, Jr., to the Lesser Antilles (Mr. Gerrit S. Miller, Jr.) .....	36
Experiments in Heredity at the Tortugas (Dr. Paul Bartsch).....	43
Insect Collecting Expedition in the Pacific Coast Region (Dr. J. M. Aldrich) .....	48
Botanical Exploration in Panama and Costa Rica (Mr. Paul C. Standley). .	50
Botanical Work in Southeastern New Mexico (Mr. Paul C. Standley)... .	56
Botanical Expedition to the Central Andes (Dr. A. S. Hitchcock).....	57
Archeological Expedition to China (Mr. Carl Whiting Bishop).....	67
Ethnological and Archeological Reconnoissance in Arizona (Dr. Walter Hough) .....	75
Marsh-Darien Expedition (Mr. R. O. Marsh).....	77
Archeological Investigations at Pueblo Bonito, New Mexico (Mr. Neil M. Judd) .....	83
Prehistoric Aboriginal Culture of the Gulf States (Dr. J. Walter Fewkes). .	92
Repair of Mummy Cave Tower in the Canyon del Muerto, Arizona (Mr. Earl H. Morris) .....	108
Ethnological and Linguistic Studies on the Tulé Indians of Panama (Mr. J. P. Harrington).....	112
Study of Tule Indian Music (Miss Frances Densmore).....	115
Researches on the Burton Mound and Kiowa Indians (Mr. J. P. Harrington) .....	128
Ethnological Researches among the Fox Indians, Iowa (Dr. Truman Michelson) .....	133







Food Mt. (6665)

Cotton Peak (6672) and Ridge

Cotton Grass Cirque

Tidbit Mt. and Gage

Sawback Range

Antlerian Mt. (6970)

Brachepod Mt.



ake

# EXPLORATIONS AND FIELD-WORK OF THE SMITHSONIAN INSTITUTION IN 1924

## INTRODUCTION

Scientific exploration and field-work has from the beginning formed an important phase of the Institution's work in the "increase of knowledge." This pamphlet serves as a preliminary announcement of the work along these lines accomplished during the past calendar year, 1924. The accounts are written and the photographs taken for the most part by the field workers themselves, and the scientific results of many of the expeditions will later be presented fully in the various series of publications of the Institution and its branches. With the very limited funds at its command, the Institution is unable to finance many major expeditions, but it endeavors to cooperate in this work, whenever possible, with other institutions, by furnishing men, materials, etc. The many expeditions initiated or cooperated in by the Institution during the 79 years of its existence have resulted in many important additions to knowledge as well as in valuable and instructive material for exhibition to the public in the U. S. National Museum.<sup>1</sup>

## GEOLOGICAL EXPLORATIONS IN THE CANADIAN ROCKIES

Secretary Charles D. Walcott continued geological field-work in the Canadian Rockies of western Alberta for the purpose of completing his reconnaissance study of the pre-Devonian formations north of the Bow Valley.

The field season was most unfavorable owing to cold and stormy weather (see figs. 2, 3) that made it difficult and often impossible to work on forty-two days of the season. Eighteen camps were made while on the trail (see figs. 3, 10), and collections of fossils from typical localities were obtained. Incidentally, the party succeeded in getting a fine pair of mountain sheep and a black-tailed deer for the National Museum. At a beautiful but stormy camp just below Baker Lake the Lyell larches were scattered in clumps on the slopes a little below tree line (fig. 4), and wild flowers occurred in profusion about the small lakes south of the camp (figs. 18, 19). Mrs. Walcott made water-color sketches of sixteen flowers new to her collection.

---

<sup>1</sup> See Report on Cooperative Educational and Research Work Carried on by the Smithsonian Institution and its Branches, Smithsonian Misc. Coll., Vol. 76, No. 4, 1923.



FIG. 2.—North end of Oyster Mountain near head of Red Deer River Canyon Valley after an August snow squall, northeast of Canadian Pacific Railway, Alberta. (C. D. Walcott, 1924.)



FIG. 3.—Walcott Camp, beside Upper Baker Creek, a short distance below Baker Lake, on a snowy morning. Eight miles (12.9 km.) in a direct line northeast of Lake Louise Station, on the Canadian Pacific Railway, Canada. (Mary V. Walcott, 1924.)



FIG. 4.—Outlook from camp east of Baker Lake. The Lyell larches extend up the slope to tree line. (C. D. Walcott, 1924.)

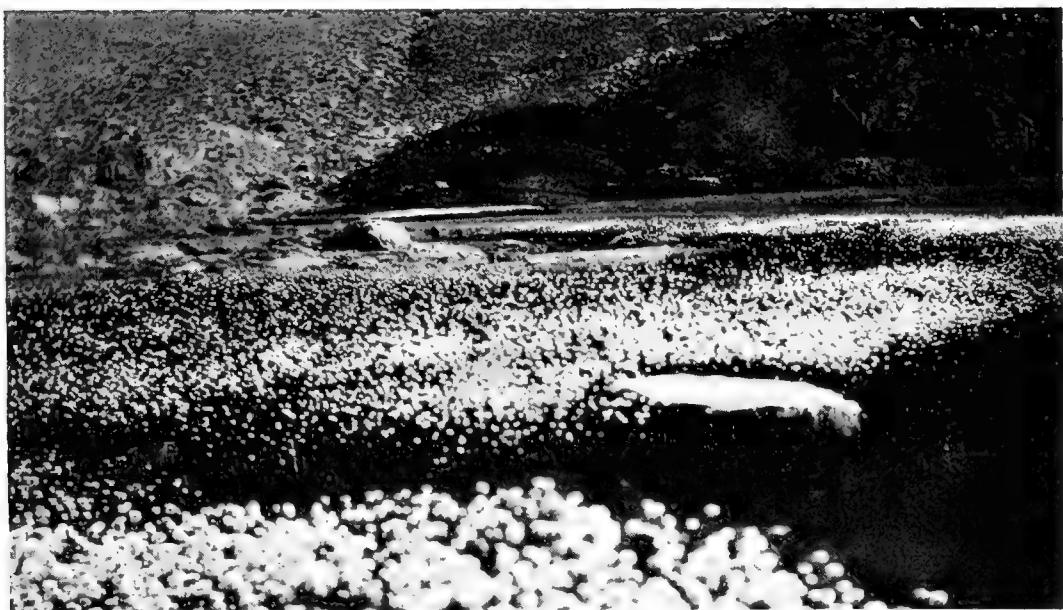


FIG. 5.—Cotton grass tufted seed heads from Cotton Grass Cirque.  
(C. D. Walcott, 1924.)



FIG. 6.—Enlargement of cotton grass seed heads from Cotton Grass Cirque.  
(C. D. Walcott, 1924.)



FIG. 7.—Tilted Mountain Cirque with Upper Cambrian strata of the Bosworth Formation tilted up against horizontal Devonian limestones near the head of the cirque. Upturned Upper Cambrian Lyell limestones on the right. (C. D. Walcott, 1924.)

The main objective was to find fossils in the great Lyell limestone<sup>1</sup> in order to determine its position in the scheme of classification. Many attempts have been made during the past six years, but without success, as the thick-bedded, coarse magnesian limestones were uniformly unfossiliferous except for the presence of a few



FIG. 8.—Tilted Mountain Falls, west foot of Tilted Mountain and north-east of Lake Louise Station, on the Canadian Pacific Railway, Alberta. Water flowing over thick-bedded magnesian Upper Cambrian Lyell limestones. (C. D. Walcott, 1924.)

casts of worm trails and the cylindrical structures supposedly built up by the secretions of algal growth, both of which may occur in sedimentary formations from the pre-Cambrian to the present day. In measuring a section from Fossil Mountain (fig. 1) eastward into Oyster Mountain, the Lyell limestones were found to form the main north and south ridge, and in two large, glacial cirques cutting

<sup>1</sup> Smithsonian Misc. Coll., Vol. 72, No. 1, 1920, p. 15.

deep into the ridge, the base of the Lyell was uncovered (fig. 1), as well as the oolitic limestones and shales of the Bosworth formation<sup>1</sup> that are so finely exposed in Mt. Bosworth on the Continental Divide above Kicking Horse Pass near Wapta Lake. The most northern cirque was named Cotton Grass from the presence of large areas of the beautiful cotton grass tufted seed heads (figs. 5, 6). The southern cirque (fig. 7) almost cuts through Tilted Mountain and bears its name. Mountain sheep have a trail up the



FIG. 9.—Rocky Mountains Park warden cabin, on Panther River, opposite the mouth of Snow Creek. (C. D. Walcott, 1924.)

cirque and over into Douglas Lake Canyon valley and onto the northern ice and snow fields of Bonnet Peak. In figure 7 the Lyell limestones, with the more readily eroded Bosworth beds below, were pushed eastward and the latter are tilted up against the horizontally-bedded massive Devonian limestones, forming the broadly and smoothly rounded mountain at the head of the cirque. We followed the brook running out of the little glacial lake in the bottom of the cirque in its course westward over the ledges of Lyell limestones to the falls, where it slides and falls into the canyon valley of upper Baker Creek (fig. 8) but everywhere the same hard, thick-bedded,

<sup>1</sup> Smithsonian Misc. Coll., Vol. 53, No. 5, 1908, p. 205.

light gray limestone extended in all directions until near the edge of the sloping cliffs above the canyon valley, where long narrow strips of trees and grass covered spaces occurred between the north and south ledges. Another approach was made from the south side of the brook, and an outcrop of a few thin layers of bluish-gray limestone was encountered on a small, rounded, glaciated ridge of the



FIG. 10.—Camp on north slope of Burgess Pass, B. C., from which the Burgess shale quarry was worked for several years. This is a typical camp where grass for horses, firewood and water are close at hand. (C. D. Walcott, 1924.)

magnesian Lyell limestone. These bluish-gray layers were interbedded in the Lyell, and contained fragments of Upper Cambrian trilobites. Returning another day, the thin band of bluish-gray limestone was traced to the brook and in a small narrow canyon two bands of shale and bluish-gray limestone were found a little lower in the section. The lowest band was rich in fragments of trilobites that later were found to be closely related to Upper Cambrian Franconia trilobites



FIG. II.—Mountain sheep at a salt lick at the "Falls" near mouth of McConnell Creek. The party brought in three fine sheep heads and skins for the National Museum collections. (Mrs. Mary V. Walcott, 1924.)

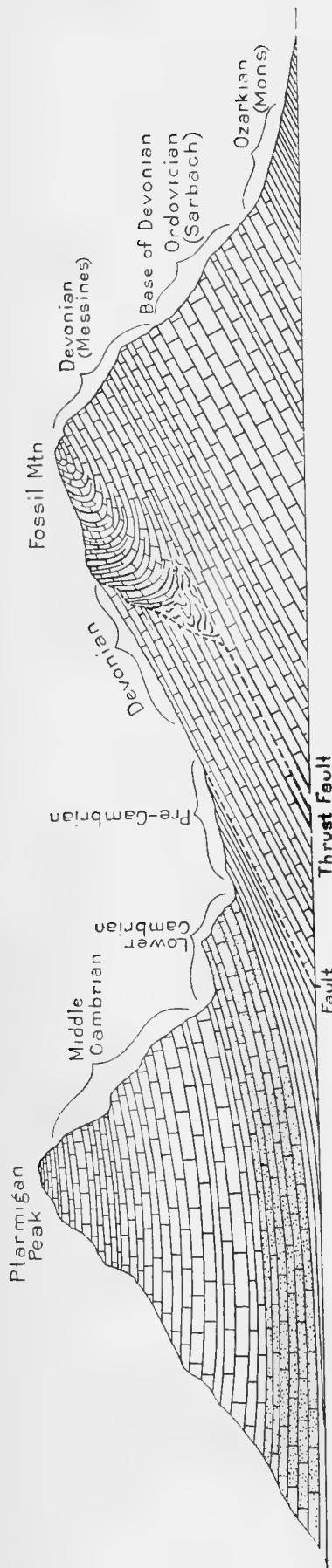


FIG. 12.—Diagrammatic section of the geological formations occurring in Ptarmigan Peak and Fossil Mountain (see fig. 15) illustrating the position of the strata and the over-thrusting of the Ptarmigan Peak pre-Cambrian sandy shales on the Devonian limestones.

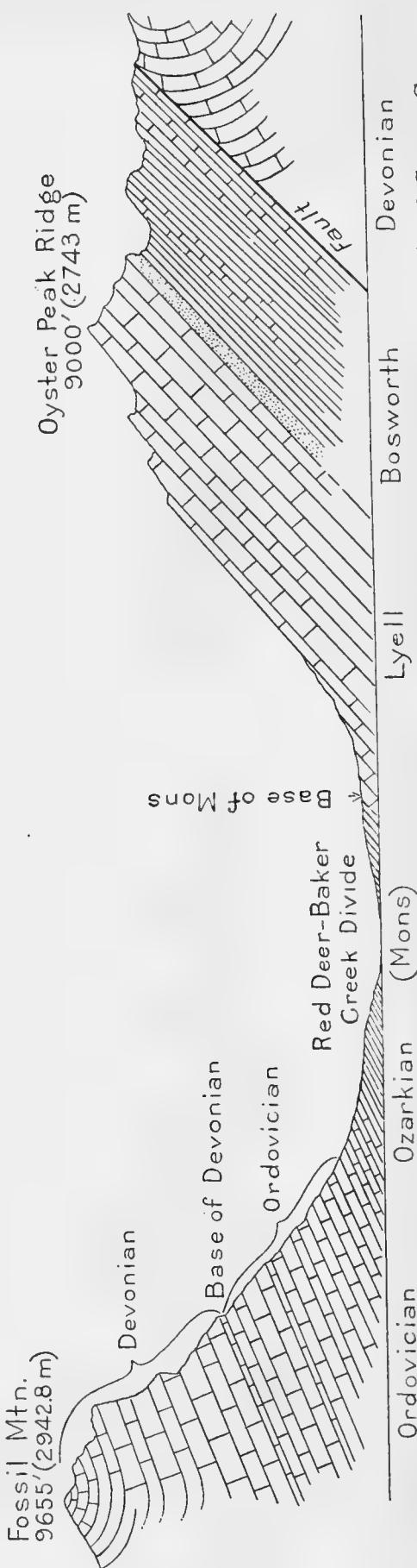
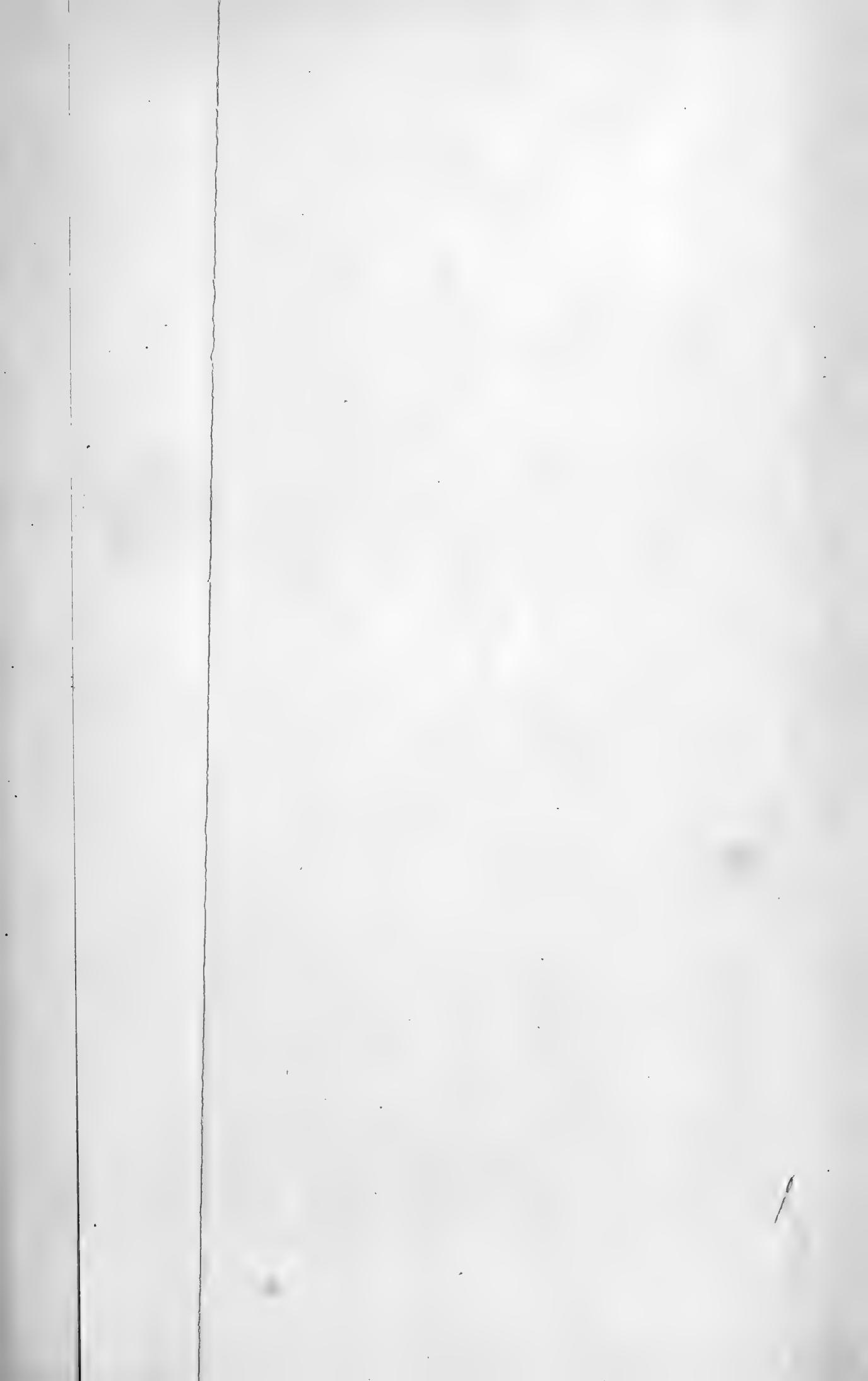


FIG. 13.—Diagrammatic section of Fossil Mountain across Red Deer-Baker Creek Divide and the north side of Cotton Grass Cirque, Oyster Peak Ridge. This section was measured and studied in 1924 and the left half of the panoramic view, figure 1, illustrates its character as seen by the camera.





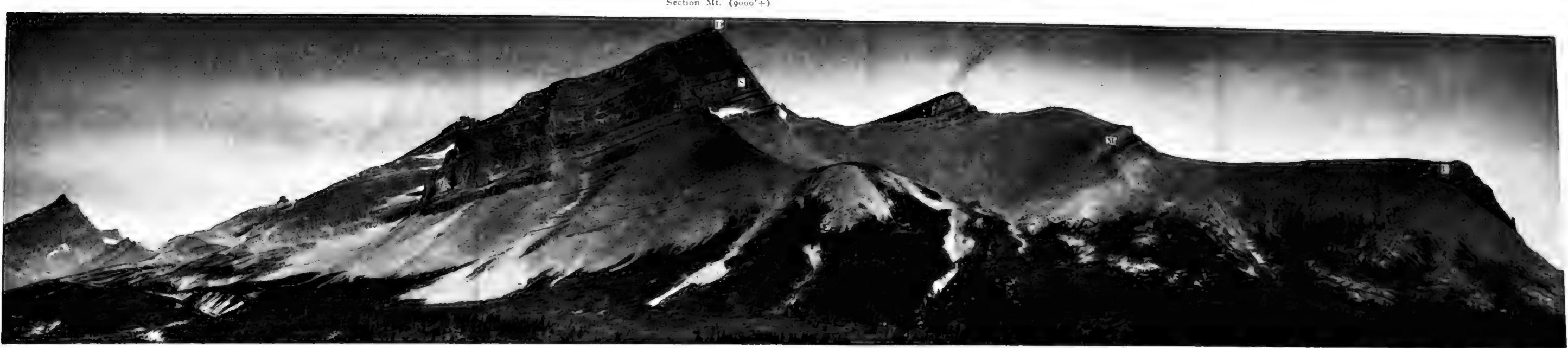


FIG. 14.—Cliffs on the north side of the Upper Clearwater River, in which the pre-Devonian section is similar to that of Fossil Mountain. D = Devonian, S = Sarbach of the Ordovician, M = Mons of Ozarkian, and L = Lyell of Upper Cambrian. (C. D. Walcott, 1924.)

Brachiopod Mt.

Ptarmigan Peak (10,070')

Fossil Mt. (9665')



FIG. 15.—Panoramic view of east and south face of Fossil Mountain; on the right Ptarmigan Peak with its basal beds thrust over onto the limestones of Fossil Mountain in the center, and on the left the end of Brachiopod Mountain with a great mass of limestone that has broken away from the mountain. Baker Lake in central foreground is 8 miles (12.9 km.) east of Lake Louise Station. (C. D. Walcott, 1924.)



from Wisconsin, and the fauna of the upper band was found to be of the same type as the fauna of the St. Lawrence member of the Trempealeau formation of Wisconsin. With these two faunules definitely located in the upper portion of the Lyell limestones, we now know that the latter are of Upper Cambrian age, and thus is brought to a successful conclusion a search conducted for four field seasons

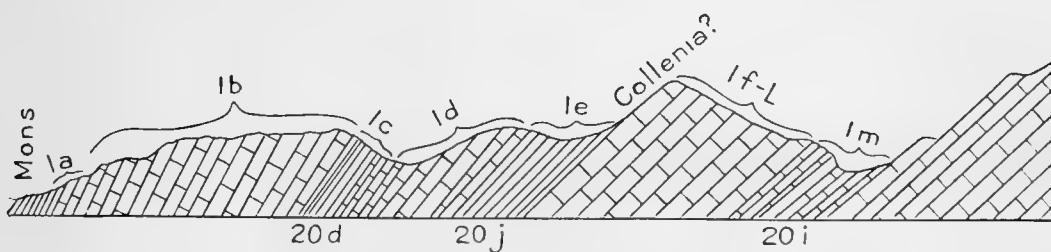


FIG. 16.—Diagrammatic section of the Upper Lyell at Tilted Mountain Falls (see fig. 8). I<sup>a</sup>—Arenaceous beds at contact of Lyell and Mons formations; I<sup>b</sup>, I<sup>d</sup>, I<sup>f-L</sup>, gray magnesian limestones; I<sup>c</sup>, I<sup>e</sup>, I<sup>m</sup>, fossiliferous bands of shale and gray limestone. (C. D. Walcott, 1924.)

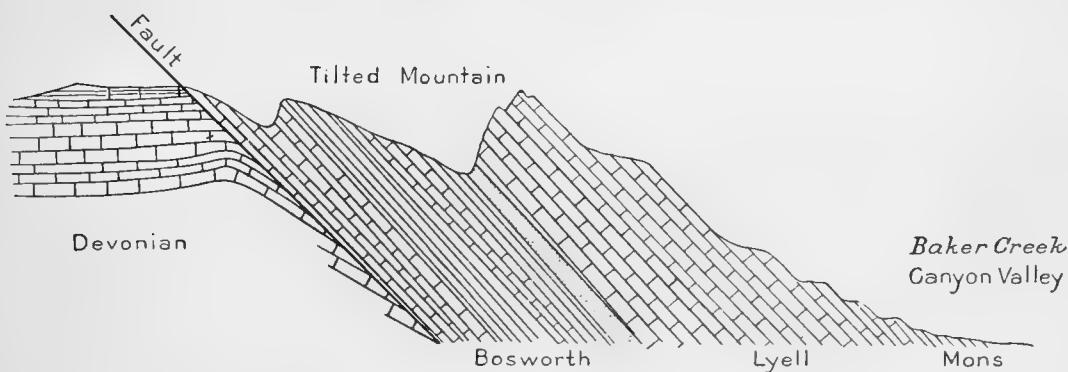


FIG. 17.—Diagrammatic section of Tilted Mountain interpreting the geologic structure, as shown by fig. 7. (C. D. Walcott, 1924.)

to determine the position of Lyell limestones in the Upper Cambrian series of the Canadian Rockies.

With the Lyell question out of the way, further collections were made from the Ozarkian upper Mons limestones of Fossil Mountain before going to Wild Flower Canyon. The latter is referred to in the account of exploration in 1921.<sup>1</sup> It heads on Johnston Creek Pass and extends in a northwesterly direction to where it joins Baker Creek Canyon. The gray limestones of the Mons formations form the high ridge on its northeast side and in these were collected many

<sup>1</sup> Smithsonian Misc. Coll., Vol. 72, No. 15, 1922, pp. 8, 9.



FIG. 18.—Arrow-leaved Coltsfoot (*Petasites sagittata*) from Burgess Pass, British Columbia. (Mrs. Mary V. Walcott, 1924.)



FIG. 19.—Sweet Androsace (*Androsace carinata*) from Baker Lake, Alberta. (Mrs. Mary V. Walcott, 1924.)

specimens of the upper Mons faunules. Early in September, the party crossed to the head of the Red Deer River and followed it down to where it breaks through the eastward-facing cliffs of Devonian limestone which have been thrust eastward over onto the sandstones, shales and limestones of the Cretaceous formations of the "foothills." It was expected to secure some fine photographs of interesting structural geology but the continuous cloudy and rainy weather prevented. On the ridge between the Red Deer and Panther Rivers at Snow Creek (fig. 9) a very fine pair of sheep was obtained and



FIG. 20.—Cricket, faithful 21-year-old saddle horse, the wisest one of the bunch of horses. She is waiting for a crust of bread. (C. D. W.)

unusually fine trout were caught below Eagle Pass north of the Red Deer River, also in Baker Creek earlier in the season. As hunting and fishing are only incidental to the geological work and Mrs. Walcott's wild flower studies, it is only on rainy days or after the day's work is over that the men indulge in sport. At a "lick" beside the Red Deer River, many mountain sheep were seen (fig. 11) and on the trail, moose, deer, goats, and smaller mammals were met with, especially about Baker Lake and in the Red Deer Canyon.

Some progress has been made the past eight field seasons towards a better understanding of the pre-Devonian geological formations and

their contained faunas in the Canadian Rockies, but there is a great opportunity for the young, vigorous geologist and paleontologist to add to knowledge of them for many years to come, especially between the Canadian Pacific Railway and the Arctic Ocean.

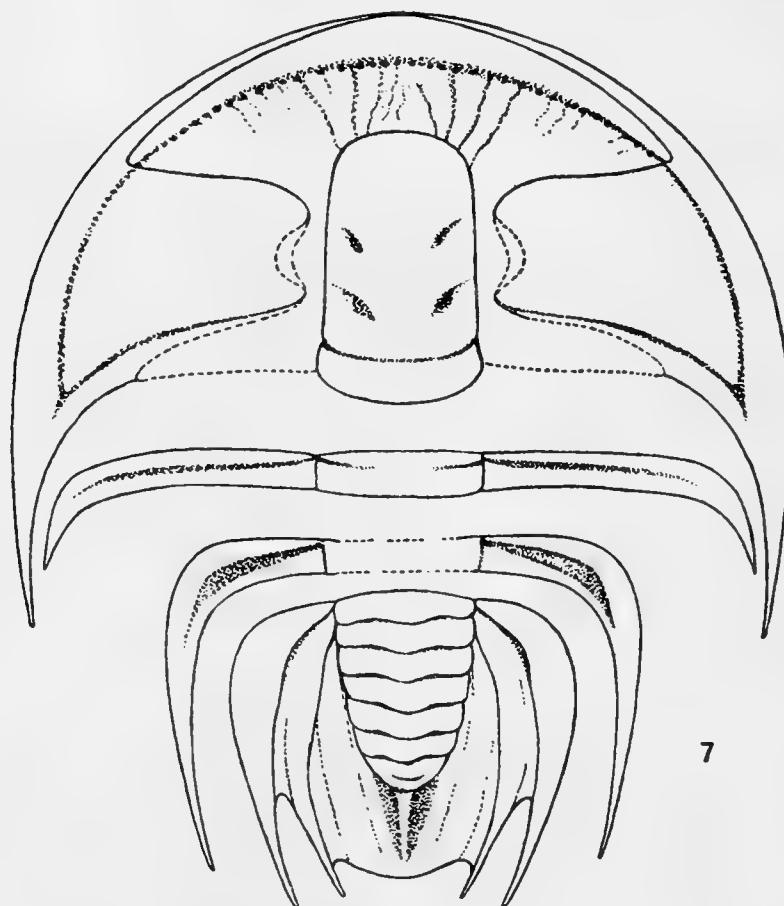


FIG. 21.—*Kainella billingsi* (Walcott). This large, fine trilobite loses its former generic name *Hungaia*,<sup>1</sup> as a species referred to *Hungaia* was published in a list of Upper Cambrian fossils in 1914 as *Hungaia magnificus* Billings.<sup>2</sup> The genus *Kainella* is now proposed with the species *billingsi* Walcott as the genotype. Other species occur that will be described in a subsequent paper. The name *Kainella* is derived from Mount Kain (9,392 feet, 2,862.7 m.), which was named after Conrad Kain, a noted Swiss guide and Alpine climber. It is located southeast of Billings Butte and Robson Peak, British Columbia, Canada.

As in previous years, assistance was freely given by Commissioner J. B. Harkin and the members of the Canadian National Parks Service, and the officials and employees of the Canadian Pacific Railway. The expedition was greatly aided by grants from the O. C. Marsh and Joseph Henry endowment funds<sup>3</sup> of the National Academy of Sciences.

<sup>1</sup> Smithsonian Misc. Coll., Vol. 75, No. 1, 1924, p. 37, fig. 7, p. 38.

<sup>2</sup> Loc. cit., Vol. 57, No. 13, 1914, p. 351.

## GEOLOGICAL FIELD-WORK IN TENNESSEE

In the field season of 1924, R. S. Bassler, curator of paleontology, U. S. National Museum, continued geologic work in Tennessee commenced several years ago in cooperation with the Geological Survey of Tennessee under the direction of State Geologist Wilbur A. Nelson. In previous seasons the geology and paleontology of the Central Basin were studied, followed in 1923 by an investigation of the eastern portion of the surrounding Highland Rim. In 1924 the Highland Rim work was carried northward to the Kentucky-Tennessee boundary where an area of about 125 square miles comprised in the Lillydale quadrangle of the Cumberland River district was mapped in detail. The primary object of this mapping was an economic one for the geologic structure of the region gives it oil possibilities. This area is far from railroad facilities and transportation is by the Cumberland River, when high enough, automobile sometimes, but most often by horseback. The method of transporting gasoline is shown in figure 22.

The Highland Rim of Tennessee is the plateau area averaging a thousand feet elevation surrounding the Central Basin. It is usually so flat that the underlying rocks are seldom exposed but in the Lillydale quadrangle the Cumberland River and its tributaries have cut so deeply into the Rim that the topography is very rough and the strata are exposed at frequent intervals. Here the exposed strata range in age from the Catheys (Trenton) limestone of the Middle Ordovician to the Cypress sandstone of the Chester group near the close of the Mississippian. The Catheys limestone and the succeeding Leipers limestone of Upper Ordovician age are followed directly by the Chattanooga black shale of Early Mississippian time, all Silurian and Devonian strata being absent. The black shale formation is only 20 feet thick in this area but it is so widely distributed that the geologic structure of the region is best determined by its outcrops. All of the strata here are essentially horizontal, but by plotting the elevation above sea level of the base of this black shale from outcrop to outcrop and connecting the places of equal elevation, thereby forming a structure contour map, no less than 20 small but distinct dome-like uplifts were discovered in this quadrangle alone. The formations above and below the black shale exhibit this same structure but the dip is usually so slight as to be almost imperceptible (fig. 23). Some of the domes formed by the uplifted strata (fig. 24) are known to be



FIG. 22.—Transportation methods along Upper Cumberland River, Celina, Tennessee. (Photograph by Bassler.)



FIG. 23.—Slightly dipping Upper Ordovician limestone, Clay County, Tennessee. (Photograph by Bassler.)



FIG. 24.—Part of an oil structure along Kettle Creek, northern Tennessee.  
(Photograph by Bassler.)

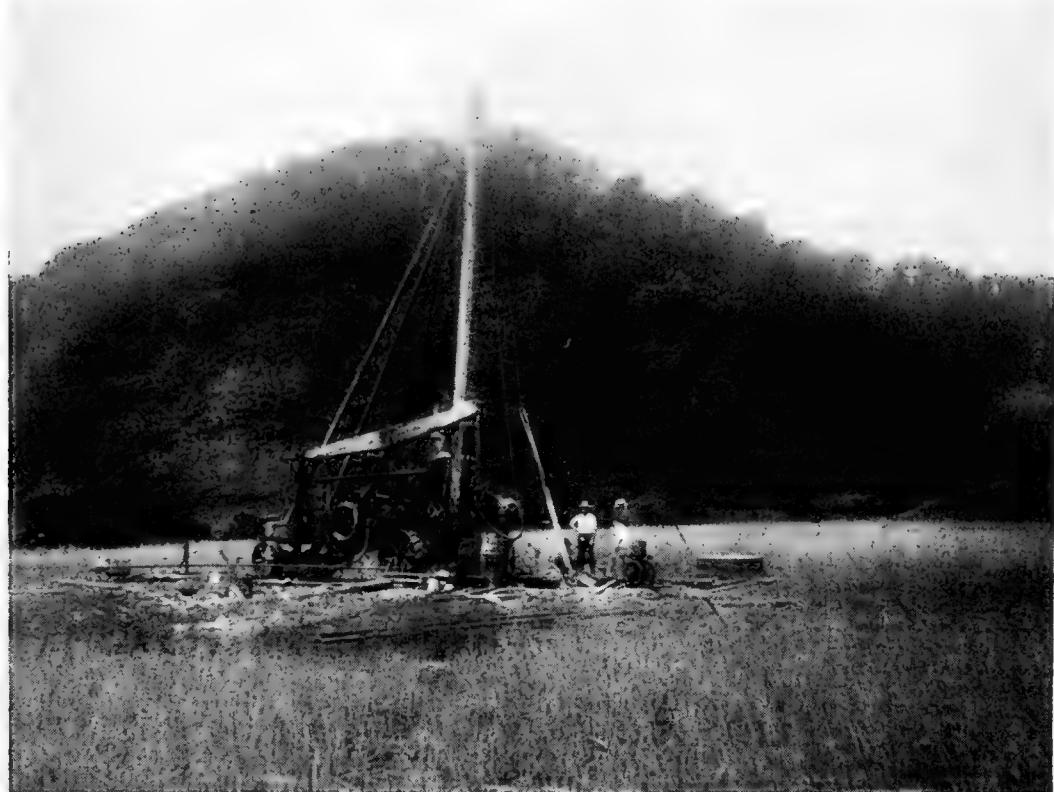


FIG. 25.—Drilling for oil, Neely's Fork, Clay County, Tennessee.  
(Photograph by Bassler.)

oil reservoirs and drilling is being actively pursued on such areas (fig. 25).

From a paleontological standpoint, the Mississippian formations following the black shale were of highest interest. Usually in Tennessee the rather unfossiliferous Fort Payne chert of Keokuk age succeeds the Chattanooga black shale but in parts of the Lillydale quadrangle two intervening formations were discovered. These were: first, the Ridgetop shale of Kinderhook age reaching a thickness of 200 feet, and second, the richly fossiliferous New Providence shale

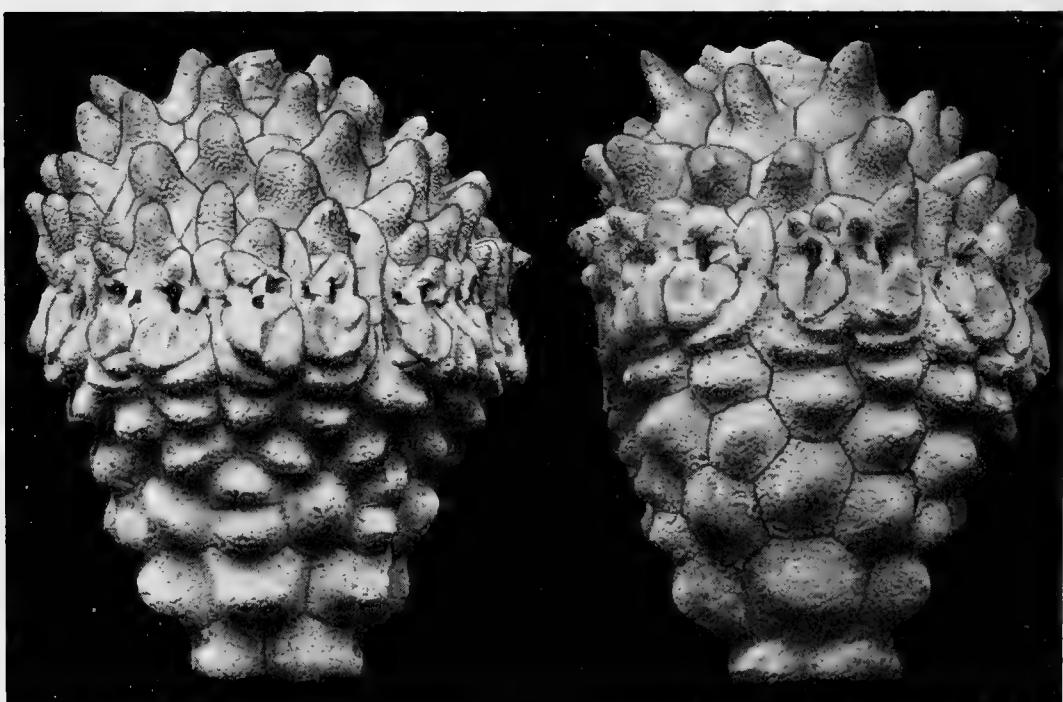


FIG. 26.—*Batocrinus springeranus* Bassler, a new species from the Lower Keokuk, Overton County, Tennessee; slightly less than natural size. (Photograph by Bassler.)

of Burlington age noted particularly for its crinoid fossils. Detailed mapping showed that these two formations were not deposited over a wide area but that they occupied ancient embayments of the sea surrounding the Cincinnati anticline. The succeeding strata in the quadrangle are of Keokuk, Warsaw, St. Louis and Chester age and show a more uniform, widespread development. The Keokuk limestone, however, exhibited different characteristics from its usual development in Tennessee as the Fort Payne chert, but the relationships between these strata will have to be determined from future studies of a more extended area. Paleontologically this formation in the

Lillydale quadrangle was of particular interest in that the basal beds afforded a splendid fauna of crinoids many of which are new to science. One of these new species, named in honor of the eminent specialist, Dr. Frank Springer, is illustrated herewith (fig. 26).

#### GEOLOGICAL FIELD-WORK IN THE ROCKY MOUNTAINS

During August and September, 1924, Dr. Charles E. Resser, associate curator of paleontology, U. S. National Museum, under the direction of Secretary Charles D. Walcott, continued the study of the Cambrian formations in the Rocky Mountains, using the Ford truck and camp equipment purchased the previous season. He was accompanied and ably assisted by Mr. Robert S. Bassler, of Washington, D. C.

At the invitation of Prof. L. A. Keyte, Colorado College, Colorado Springs, Colorado, the first stop was at that place and several days were spent studying the lower Paleozoic beds along the Rocky Mountain front. Under Professor Keyte's guidance and with his automobile, no delay was experienced in locating fossiliferous outcrops and securing good collections. During the past few years this region has yielded many very excellent Ozarkian fossils, new to our study series.

Work was continued in Logan Canyon, Utah, to ascertain whether any beds of Ozarkian age, which occur 30 miles to the south in Blacksmith Fork Canyon, outcrop at this place. A snowstorm prevented the completion of this task the previous September, but this year it was found that the lower beds sought are not present.

Camp was then moved by rapid stages to the Cooke City Ranger station in the extreme northeastern corner of Yellowstone National Park. A most excellent section exposing most of the Cambrian formation present in this part of the Rocky Mountains (Absaroka Mountains) was measured up Republic Creek, south of Cooke City, Montana. Cooke City is a small community which came into existence upon the discovery of silver ores in the surrounding mountains. It can be reached by only one road which enters the Yellowstone Park at Gardner, Montana, and branches off of the "Loop System" of roads at Camp Roosevelt, following first the Lamar River past the Buffalo Ranch, and then up Soda Butte Creek, a total distance of more than 70 miles. On all other sides high mountains hem it in and since the ores have never proven rich enough to compensate for the town's isolation, the mines are undeveloped and the population is sparse. The road to Cooke City traverses the best of the mountain

scenery in Yellowstone Park. One member of the Cambrian series of beds is always massive and since Soda Butte Creek has cut into a gently dipping fold, this massive limestone rims the valley. Every stream, permanent and temporary, falls over this layer, usually in a very narrow canyon, adding very much to the picturesqueness of the region. Indeed, Cooke City is coming to be a favored tourist resort. Immediately above the massive limestone just mentioned, the beds become shaly, and from these were secured an entire Cambrian crinoid of which no complete individual had previously been discovered in rocks as ancient as these. However, the fossils obtained from this



FIG. 27.—Jackson Lake and Mt. Moran. The Grand Teton visible to the south. The dead timber along shore is caused by flooding when dam fills. (Photograph by Resser.)

excellent section were few in number compared to what might be expected from such a group of Cambrian beds, due to their deposition in shallow water. At many places the rocks are composed almost entirely of fossil fragments which had been ground up by the waves prior to preservation.

A brief trip was made into the south end of the Gallatin Range, to secure a few fossils in order to determine the relationship of the Cambrian beds present here to those in the Absaroka and Teton Ranges.

Work was next continued in the Teton Mountains, which are in many respects the most magnificent in the United States, rising as they

do into sharp, steep peaks more than 7,000 feet above the deep Jackson Lake. A dam has been built at the former outlet of the lake, impounding the flood waters to a depth of 39 feet, thus preserving an enormous quantity of water for irrigation in the Snake River Valley, 300 miles away. The Teton Mountains, due to their ruggedness, and the extensive lakes at their base, proved more than ordinarily difficult to work from an automobile. They present, however, many interesting and some unique geological problems. This range consists of highly tilted Archaean rocks on the eastern face overlain from



FIG. 28.—View south from Glen Eyrie, Colorado, showing the strata folded during building of Rocky Mountains, now weathered into upright forms. Garden of the Gods visible in distance. (Photograph by Resser.)

the west by much less steeply inclined strata which include Cambrian, Ordovician and younger series. A six-inch layer of relatively pure iron ore was observed near the base of the Cambrian series. At all points in the range visited this season it was found that the fossils had also been broken before being buried.

The highway across Teton Pass, by which one leaves Jackson Hole, going south and west proved exceedingly steep but highly interesting and of great beauty. The drainage of Jackson Hole escapes through the Grand Canyon of the Snake River, cut more than a half mile deep into the mountain wall closing in the south end of the valley, for which reason the road cannot follow along it.



FIG. 30.—Republic Creek, south of Cooke City, Montana. Characteristic outcrop of the massive Cambrian limestones in the narrow creek canyons. (Photograph by Resser.)



FIG. 29.—Entrance to Williams Canyon, on road from Manitou Springs to the Cave of the Winds. Several feet of beds at the roadside are Cambrian, the remainder Ozarkian. (Photograph by Resser.)

The past season was the hottest and driest ever recorded for the western part of our country, in consequence of which snow banks that had never been known to disappear, melted away. Most of the mountain streams had little more than a fourth or half of their normal flow and the roads became almost impassable at places because the soil, having turned to soft dust, was blown away leaving large stones exposed. Difficult travel was consequently encountered at many places.

The latter part of the season was spent in continuing the study of various parts of the great Wasatch Range, to determine the stratigraphic position of the beds from which some of the earliest collections of fossils were made by exploring parties sent out previous to the settlement of the country.

#### GEOLOGICAL FIELD-WORK IN MARYLAND AND CONNECTICUT

Mr. Earl V. Shannon, assistant curator, division of physical and chemical geology, U. S. National Museum, made several short trips into Maryland during the year to visit mineral localities in that state. The most noteworthy was that made in May to Cecil County, where several feldspar quarries and the historically famous locality known as the State Line Chrome Mine were visited. Much material was collected for study. The reopening of the Chrome Mine during the war made available on the dump a quantity of freshly mined rock and a fine series of specimens of chromite, magnesite, kammererite and especially of the precious green serpentine known as williamsite was obtained.

In October, Mr. Shannon made a beginning in the cooperative work with the Geological and Natural History Survey of Connecticut leading toward the publication of a work on the mineralogy of that state. Between two and three weeks was spent in a highly successful collecting trip. A beginning was made in the southeastern corner of the area, including a visit to many of the quarries, mines, and road cuts in Groton, Stonington and Waterford. At the Mason's Island quarry in Stonington, numerous pegmatite dikes occurring in the gneiss were studied and some of them were found to contain notable quantities of primary magnetite. In places biotite-rich streaks in this quarry were found to contain golden-brown stilbite, and in one end of the quarry a quartz vein was located which furnished associated specimens of garnet, epidote, and stilbite. In Salter's quarry in



FIG. 31.—Salters Quarry, Groton, Connecticut. A typical stone quarry like hundreds in New England, any one of which can be depended upon to furnish much interesting mineralogical material.



FIG. 32.—Hungry Hill iolite locality, Guilford, Connecticut. The photograph shows Messrs. Alfred E. Hammer and Warren E. Mumford standing on what is probably the best locality for iolite in North America, if not in the world.

Groton, specimens and notes on peculiar diorite-pegmatites, older than the Westerly granite sills, were obtained and other pegmatites of interest were observed intruding the Mamacoke gneiss which is quarried in the Goos, Flatrock and other quarries in Waterford. One day was spent in examining the various outcrops, cuts, and quarries along the shore line branch of the New York, New Haven and Hartford Railroad from Saybrook Junction to Nantic. Another was spent at the Falls of the Yantic, in Norwich, a famous locality for minerals obtained early in the last century and but little known since. No iolite nor corundum were found, but sillimanite was located in quantity in

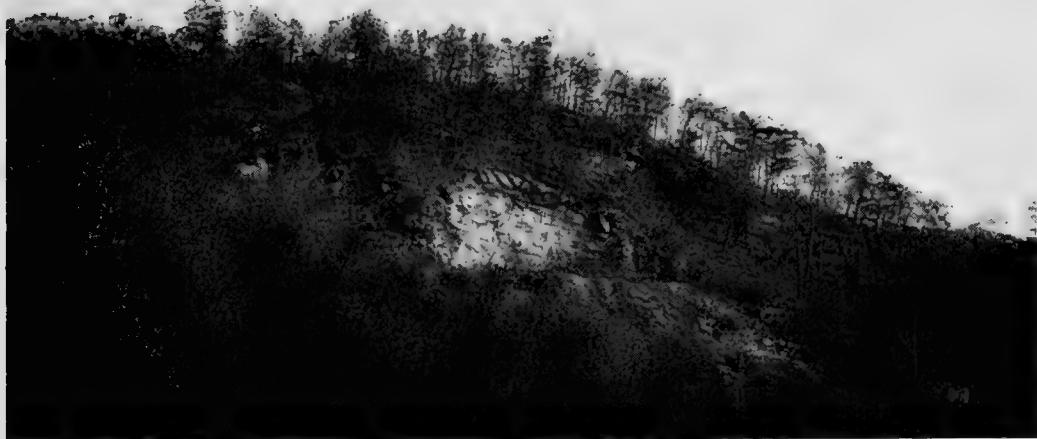


FIG. 33.—The main pit of the mine at Long Hill in Trumbull, Connecticut, probably the first tungsten mine of America. While never commercially successful as a tungsten mine and the source of more than one "wildcat" project, this is now a famous mineralogical locality.

a schist in a railroad cut, and plenty of monazite specimens were obtained from pegmatite blocks in fence walls in the neighborhood.

The latter part of the trip was spent at Branford as the guest of Mr. Alfred E. Hammer, who is particularly well informed regarding the local geology and mineralogy and the history of mining in his vicinity. In company with Messrs. Hammer and Warren E. Mumford, metallurgist for the Malleable Iron Fittings Company of Branford, many of the important localities were visited. These included the iolite and garnet-vesuvianite ledges in Guilford, the jail spar quarry, the spessartite ledge and other feldspar quarries in Haddam, and the Gillette quarry on Haddam Neck, where many remarkable minerals

were found. In Middletown the old lead mine, famous as a source of metallic lead for bullets in Revolutionary days, was examined. The Cheshire barite-copper mine and the trap quarry on Mt. Carmel were visited, and the last trip of the season included a visit to the now famous mineralogical locality of the tungsten mine at Long Hill in Trumbull. On this trip the old Booth-Curtis bismuth mine in Monroe, long a source of native bismuth specimens, was located, but too late to secure extensive collections.

#### GEOLOGICAL FIELD-WORK IN NEVADA

During the four months, June to September, Dr. W. F. Foshag, assistant curator of mineralogy, U. S. National Museum, worked in



FIG. 34.—Walker Lake, Nevada, showing the old shore lines of Lake Lahontan.

cooperation with one of the U. S. Geological Survey field parties in the mapping of the Hawthorne quadrangle, western Nevada, making a special study of the mineralogy and ore deposits of the area. Besides Paleozoic and Mesozoic sedimentary rocks, Cretaceous granites and Tertiary lavas, the area embraced a number of interesting lake beds of Miocene, Pliocene and Pleistocene age, in which were found the remains of fishes, fresh water gastropods, plants, and the bones and teeth of horses, camels, mastodon, and rhinoceros. A reported occurrence of artifacts in the beds of the extinct lake Lahontan, Pleistocene



FIG. 36.—Wind pot holes.



FIG. 35.—Collecting camel bones, Lahontan gravels, Walker Lake.

in age, was visited and examined in detail. Flakes of obsidian such as are found in abundance throughout this area were noted but no ancient artifacts or other evidence of Pleistocene man were found.

Some time was devoted to a study of ore deposits of the region including those of the historic old camps of Candelaria and Aurora and also those more recent. The mercury deposits of the Pilot Mountains were studied in some detail and interesting collections made. The quadrangle is unusually rich in minerals and much material was collected for study. This came largely from the mines and prospects of the region, but some unusually fine material was also recovered from the muds of the "playa" lakes.

#### FIELD-WORK OF THE ASTROPHYSICAL OBSERVATORY IN CHILE, ARIZONA, AND CALIFORNIA

The Astrophysical Observatory continued its work on the sun's heat and the variations of it. More and more interest is being expressed in this work because it promises to be a basis for advances in weather forecasting. At first sight, the problem is very simple. As the temperature and rainfall of the earth depend on the sun's heat, a change in the sun's heat must modify temperature and rainfall. Actually, however, the effects are highly involved.

To explain the matter briefly, there are always certain regions of high and others of low barometric pressure. These are centers of atmospheric circulation. The word circulation is indeed more expressive than we often think, for the wind directions bend around these centers of circulation. Meteorologists speak of cyclones and anti-cyclones, meaning the great rotary tendencies of the winds over areas hundreds of miles in diameter, associated respectively with barometric lows and highs. Such being the case it depends at least partly on the observer's position, relative to one of these atmospheric centers of circulation, whether his weather is warm or cold. For winds from warmer latitudes tend to make warm weather, and winds from colder ones cold weather.

If, now, the effect of increase of the solar heating acting upon the highly complex surface of the earth, with its mountains, deserts, oceans, etc., should tend to displace an atmospheric action center (toward the pole, for instance) a station which previously received prevailingly tropical winds might afterwards receive prevailingly polar winds, and thereby be *cooled*, not *warmed*, by the supposed increase of solar heat. Another station, a few hundred miles away, might experience the very opposite effect from the same cause.

On such grounds we have not to expect any simple or easy solution of the problem of the influence of variations of the sun on our weather. Apparently there is only one way to proceed. It is to observe diligently and accurately for years the sun's changes of radiation, and then, with the basis of fact so laid, examine the behavior of atmospheric pressure, temperature and rainfall at a great number of stations over all the world, at all times of the year, in order to work out at last the exact dependence of weather on solar changes.

This is a very large program. The Astrophysical Observatory began with it in 1902, when it commenced to observe the solar radiation in Washington. But the atmosphere in Washington was loaded with clouds, smoke, dust and humidity. It was necessary to remove to a purer sky. Since then stations have been occupied as follows: Mt. Wilson, Calif., during summer and autumn, 1905 to 1920; Mt. Whitney, Calif. (the highest mountain of the United States outside Alaska) on several days in 1908, 1909, and 1910; Bassour, Algeria, in summer and autumn 1911 and 1912; Hump Mountain, N. C., almost a full year beginning May, 1917; Calama, Chile, July, 1918, to July, 1920; Montezuma, Chile, August, 1920, to the present time; Mt. Harqua Hala, Ariz., October, 1920, to the present time.

During all this time better and better methods have been developed, obstacles to accuracy overcome, and new sources of error recognized and avoided. The body of experience which has thus come to the members of the staff is unique, and a very great asset. There is, indeed, the highest necessity for it. The results of Mr. H. H. Clayton, who has attempted with much success to unravel the effects of solar changes on the weather, indicate that variations of the sun as small as 0.5 per cent, or  $1/200$  of the whole solar output, produce well recognizable effects. Changes greater than 3 per cent do not often occur, though once in a great while they go even higher than 5 per cent. Observing, as we do, at the bottom of a sea of atmosphere, loaded more or less with variable elements, like dust, water vapor, etc., it is very difficult to reach a high enough standard of accuracy to reveal surely changes as small as these.

During the past four years, with the newest methods of observation and computation, our two observing stations in Arizona and Chile each determined the sun's heat on upwards of 70 per cent of all days. Taking all fairly good days when both stations observed, the average deviation of these independent measures, made over 4,000 miles apart and reduced independently for atmospheric losses, is about 0.5 per cent. During October, 1923, however, both stations reported almost every day, and the average daily difference was less than 0.2 per cent.

It would be highly advantageous to have another pair of stations located, if possible, in well separated cloudless regions where the months December to March are more favorable.

VARIATION OF THE SUN 1918 TO 1924  
TEN-DAY MEAN VALUES

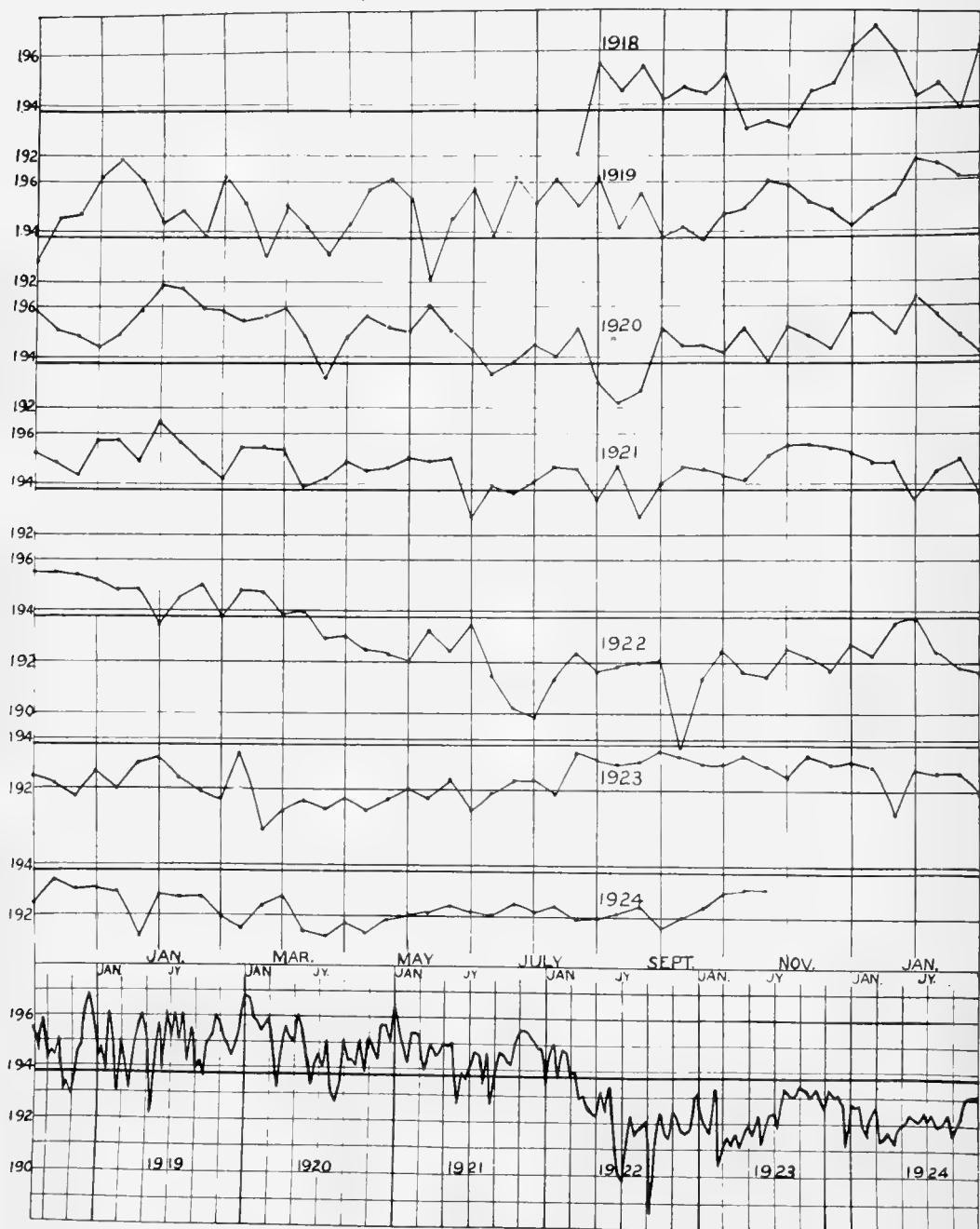


FIG. 37.

On the whole, the solar heat appears to have been continuously below the normal for the past  $2\frac{1}{2}$  years. Of late months the tendency to rise has become apparent, so that it seems likely that higher values

will soon prevail again. We had hitherto noted an association of higher solar radiation with greater sun-spot activity. (See fig. 38.) As we have now passed the minimum of sun-spots, and greater solar activity is to be expected in the next years, the rising tendency of the solar radiation is not surprising.

During the past year, the Institution has received each morning telegrams from Arizona and Chile giving the solar results of the preceding

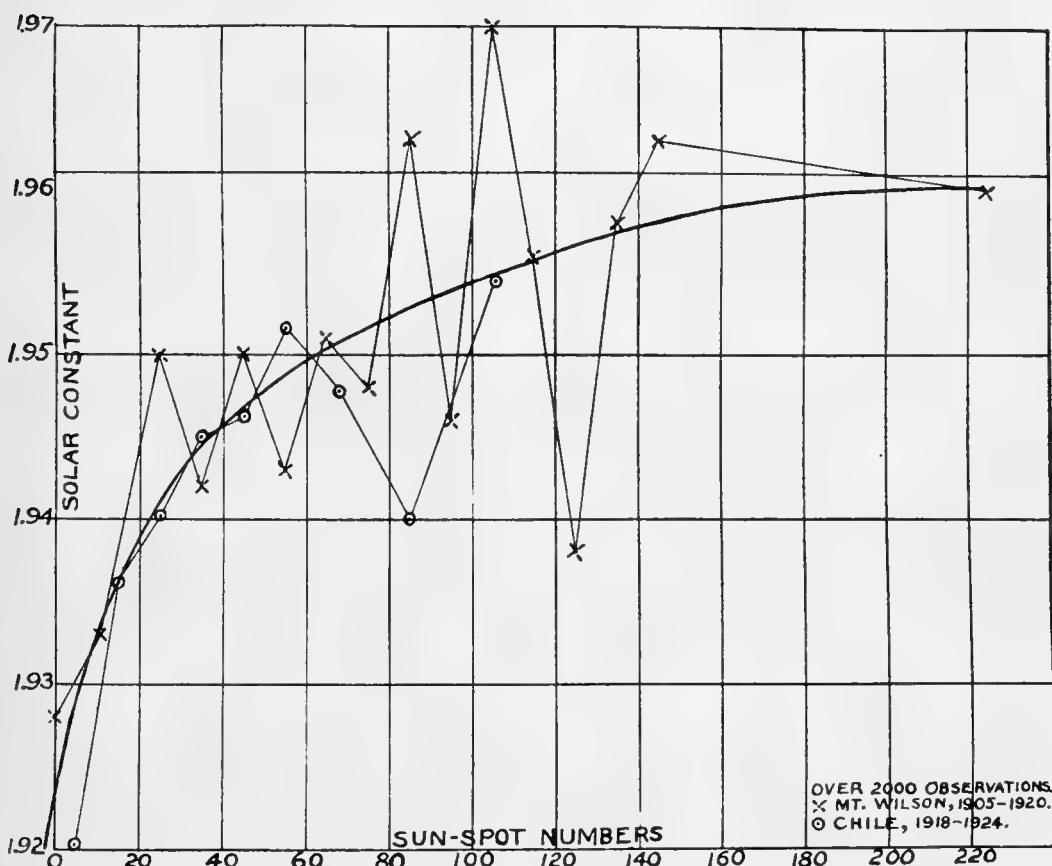


FIG. 38.—Increased solar activity brings higher solar-constant values.

day, and has forwarded the combined result by telegraph to Mr. H. H. Clayton in Massachusetts. Mr. Clayton has returned to the Institution on the same afternoon a letter giving forecasts for the temperature of New York City several days in advance. Mathematical methods, independent of personal bias, show that these forecasts indicate some degree of real prevision, based on the solar observations, even to 5 days in advance. These investigations are supported by Mr. John A. Roebling. A continuation of them is intended.

Interesting results were secured in quite a different field. Dr. Abbot employed a Nichols radiometer in connection with the 100-inch reflect-

ing telescope of Mt. Wilson Observatory. He not only could observe the heat of the brighter stars, but, separating this into a long spectrum,

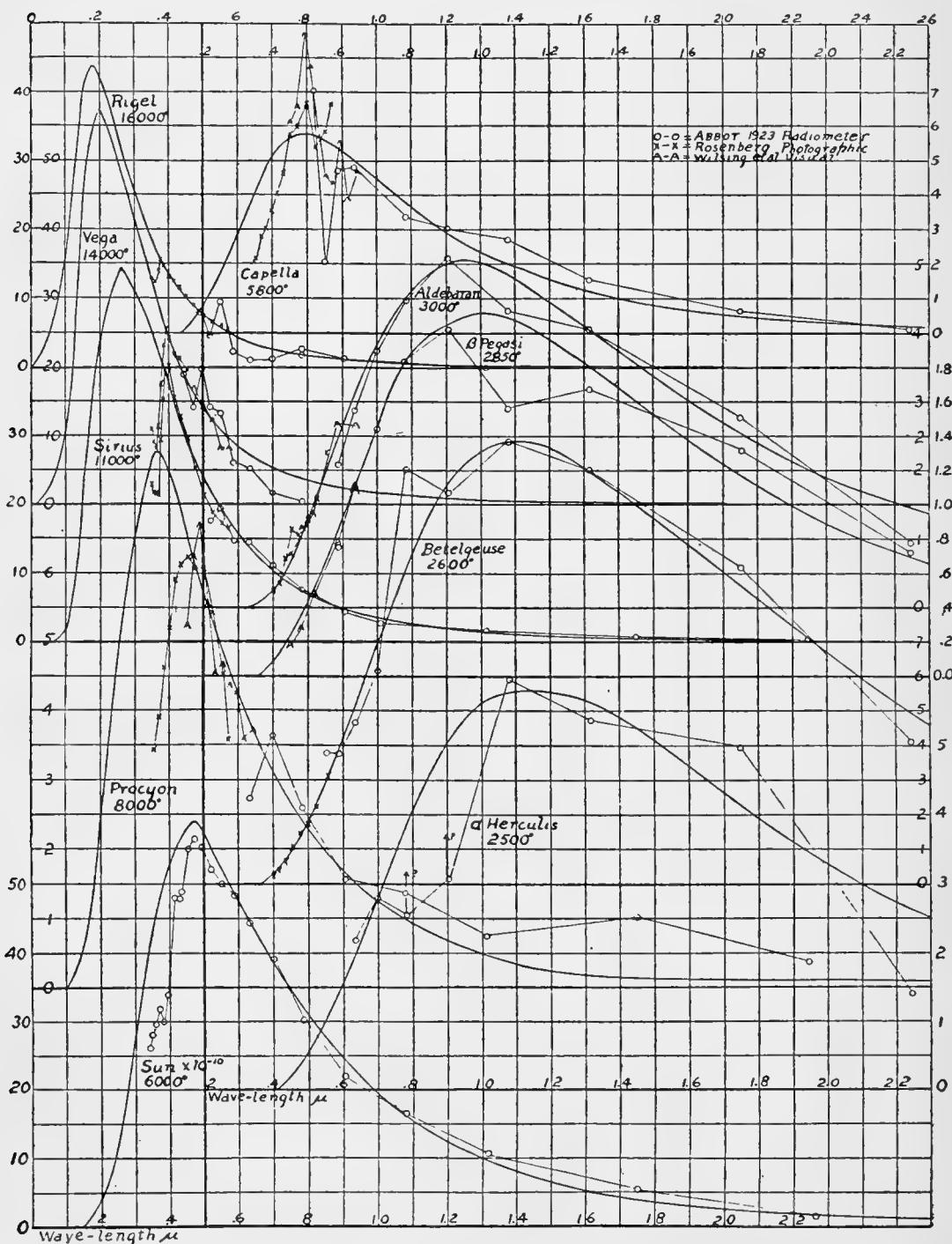


FIG. 39.—Normal energy-spectrum curves and corresponding black-body curves. Various scales of ordinates; two scales of abscissae.

he obtained fairly accurate measurements of the heat of the different colors, and even far into the infra-red. In this way curves were drawn

indicating the spectral distribution in the radiation of blue, white, yellow and red stars, and estimates of their probable temperatures were made. From these results and the results giving the total amounts of heat they send compared to the sun, estimates were possible of the diameters of the stars observed.

A summary of these results follows, in which the diameters he estimated are compared with the values found in other ways by Michelson's interferometry methods, and by Russell from photometry. It is hoped to improve the sensitiveness of the radiometric devices sufficiently to make possible a study of much fainter stars.

#### STELLAR TEMPERATURES, RADIATION, AND DIAMETERS

Star	Absolute temperature C.	$N^*$ Unit = $10^{-11}$	Parallax	Diameter $\odot = 1\ddagger$		
				Radiometer	Interferometer	Russell
Sun .....	6,000°	....	....	....	....	....
$\beta$ Orionis ..	16,000	3.20	0''.007	20.	....	28.
$\alpha$ Lyrae ....	14,000	6.10	0 .130	2.0	....	3.0
$\alpha$ Can. Maj.	11,000	6.60	0 .370	1.2	2.0	....
$\alpha$ Can. Min.	8,000	1.24	0 .315	1.1	....	1.6
$\alpha$ Aurigae..	5,800	2.20	0 .071	13.	....	9.
$\alpha$ Tauri ....	3,000	2.54	0 .053	70.	39.	....
$\beta$ Pegasi ...	2.850	1.11	0 .026	94.	82.	....
$\alpha$ Orionis ..	2,600	7.90	0 .017	510.	280.	....
$\alpha$ Herculis..	2,500	3.60	{ 0 .007 0 .013	{ 900. 480.	....	230.

\*  $N$  = Ratio of stellar to solar radiation outside earth's atmosphere.

† To express in kilometers, multiply by  $1.42 \times 10^6$ . To express in miles, multiply by  $0.865 \times 10^6$ .

#### ZOOLOGICAL EXPLORATIONS IN WESTERN CHINA

For several years the Rev. David C. Graham, of the West China Mission of the American Baptist Foreign Mission Society, has been collecting natural history material in the vicinity of his station at Suifu, in the province of Szechuen, and sending his specimens to the U. S. National Museum. At times his activities have led him further afield, and last year (1923) he conducted a successful trip to Tatsienlu, a locality several days' journey to the northwest of Suifu.

Tatsienlu is an important spot for naturalists through being the type locality for many species brought to light by earlier travellers. It was visited by the Abbé Armand David about the year 1869, by Prince Henri d'Orleans in 1890, and by A. E. Pratt in the same year, followed in 1894 by a Russian explorer, G. Potanin. Ernest H. Wilson

and W. R. Zappey were there in 1908, the former interested in botany and the latter in zoology. In 1913, a German traveller, Walter Stötzner, made collections in various parts of Szechuen, including Tatsienlu and vicinity. The above incomplete list of visitors who have made this place a collecting ground will suffice to stamp the region as one fairly well known to naturalists. Nevertheless, the locality was all but unrepresented in the U. S. National Museum collections, and the material sent in by Mr. Graham was received with no little gratification.

After finishing his trip to Tatsienlu, Mr. Graham contemplated a visit to Moupin, the scene of some of David's early work and also a type locality of note, but the presence of bandits in that district caused him to look elsewhere for the moment and he decided upon Songpan (or Sungpan), in the northern part of the province, reasoning that a visit to this district would result in the gathering of many species not common to the regions he had already explored. This trip was projected at the end of the year 1923 and began to assume shape in May of the year 1924, when the Smithsonian Institution with the approval of Dr. W. L. Abbott, transferred to him the collecting outfit of the late Charles M. Hoy, who had been operating in the province of Honan.

Songpan was first visited by an Occidental in 1877, when the late Captain W. J. Gill reached it, according to Ernest H. Wilson, who was there on several occasions, the first time in 1903, during his botanical travels in Szechuen. Berezowski spent several months at Songpan in 1894, and Stötzner collected specimens there in 1913. Wilson writes that since Gill's entry into the city "several foreigners have paid visits, and missionaries of Protestant denominations have made abortive attempts to establish stations there."

While Songpan was the objective of Graham's proposed journey, it was not so much the actual city as the general region that attracted his attention. He had heard that good collecting ground existed in its vicinity, hence looked forward to it as a trip worthy of trial. During the latter part of May and early June he made himself familiar with the new outfit and carried out his plans and preparations for the long, rough trip. The distance from Suifu to Songpan in a straight line is probably not much over 240 miles, but by the route travelled would be nearer 400 miles, partly by water, but chiefly by land, and to keep the cost of the trip within his original estimates, Mr. Graham planned to walk over practically all of the overland part of his journey.

Preparations were completed for the trip by the 22d of June, and at daybreak on the morning of the 23d, Mr. Graham and his party, consisting of several Chinese carriers, helpers, skinners, etc., embarked by boat from Suifu. They touched at various minor towns and hamlets by the way, collecting specimens at every opportunity, and reached Kiating, the first place of importance, on the 29th. Frequent and heavy rains fell almost daily, but the party succeeded in registering specimens from point to point throughout the journey. From Kiating to Chengtu Mr. Graham's party had an escort of four soldiers, and beyond Chengtu the escort consisted of double this number, who had neither guns nor swords for defense; yet, withal, the party got through in safety. Chengtu was reached on July 2, after daily stops at small towns and villages. Mowchow, the next place of consequence, was reached on the 9th, the country for some miles on either side of it being semi-arid in nature; apparently for the time they had passed out of the region of heavy rains.

The Graham party arrived at Songpan on July 14, after a strenuous journey of twenty-two days. During his stay at this place, Mr. Graham found the city was devoid of foreigners, and the native officials would not permit him to venture out of its limits except to the east and south.

In a letter dated September 3, 1924, Mr. Graham writes:

The Songpan trip has been taken, and we are safely at Suifu with 50 boxes of specimens, most of which are about ready to be mailed by parcel post.

This has been a harder and rougher trip than the one to Tatsienlu or any other previous trip. It is much harder to secure food and other necessities around Songpan than at Tatsienlu. There were times when we could purchase no fruit, vegetables, eggs, or meat. At Songpan it was impossible to go west or north, where large mammals are found in abundance, so that the only place we could go was east to the Yellow Dragon Gorge. Even there we had to have an escort of six Chinese soldiers and had of course to pay all their expenses.

Continuing, he writes:

The reason we could not go north of Songpan or west of that place was that the Bolotsi aborigines are so savage and so inclined to murder and brigandage that the Chinese can not control them and are afraid of them, and the officials could not protect us in those regions. . . . Just before we returned from Songpan, the Bolotsis attacked a company of Chinese soldiers, killed several of their number, stole several rifles, and drove the scared and defeated soldiers back to their barracks. I have not heard that the Chinese have dared to go into the Bolotsi country with a punitive expedition.

The catch of mammals is not large. We are very sorry about this. It is due primarily to the fact that the mammal-catching districts around Songpan

were closed to us. Yellow Dragon Gorge was a fine place for birds and insects, but a great festival had just been held there, in which aborigine and Chinese hunters from all directions had joined in the chase, and wood cutters were busy in the woods cutting timber for the new temples that are being constructed. The mammals had been scared away.

In addition to the material collected on the Songpan trip, Mr. Graham had native collectors at work in other districts, about whose activities he writes:

This year's catch is bigger than that of last year. There are 50 boxes of specimens on hand, and I expect to send them off by parcel post as early as possible. Besides the 50 boxes just mentioned, there is the entire catch of the netter Ho for at least three months, who has been collecting about Beh Luh Din, Chengtu, and Kuanshien during the summer, and specimens now being secured by two collectors on Mt. Omei, one at Shin Kai Si and one on the higher altitudes.

The material obtained on the Songpan trip included about 5,000 insects, of which the two-winged flies and butterflies and moths constituted an important element, many of them being either new to the Museum or new to science. The birds, 558 in number, were received at a late date, and have not been fully examined, though to date about a dozen species new to the Museum have been detected.

About 250 mollusks and a lesser number of mammals, fishes, reptiles and batrachians, earthworms, plants, etc., comprise the remainder of the shipment.

#### VISIT OF MR. GERRIT S. MILLER, JR., TO THE LESSER ANTILLES

During February and March, 1924, I visited the Lesser Antilles, more for the purposes of vacation and of getting a personal impression of the islands than with any plan for definite research. Two weeks were spent on Barbados and a month on Grenada; while each of the principal islands was visited for a few hours during the southward and return voyages. Some miscellaneous collections were made, chiefly of ferns, cacti, and lizards.

Much detailed work in zoology and botany remains to be done on the islands of the Lesser Antillean chain. As a striking illustration of this fact, it may be mentioned that, in a group of plants so conspicuous as the cacti, and so well monographed as these have recently been in the elaborate work of Dr. N. L. Britton and Dr. J. N. Rose, nine species (7 genera) were found growing wild on Grenada, from which island these authors had actually examined only two. One of the common Grenadan cacti was described in 1837, but had remained



FIG. 40.—Market, St. Kitts—mostly vegetables and fruit. The Island of Nevis appears dimly in the background.



FIG. 41.—Market, St. Vincent—whale blubber.



FIG. 42.—Market, Barbados—pottery.



FIG. 43.—Harbor of Charlotte Amalie, St. Thomas.



FIG. 44.—Basse Terre, St. Kitts. Lighters coming out to the steamer. At only two islands (St. Thomas and St. Lucia) is the water of the harbors deep enough to permit large vessels to dock.



FIG. 45.—Ruined sugar mill, Montserrat. Ruined windmills—abandoned in favor of modern machinery—are as characteristic of the Lesser Antillean landscape as the old watch towers are of that of the Mediterranean coast of Europe.



FIG. 47.—Street near botanical garden,  
Roseau, Dominica.

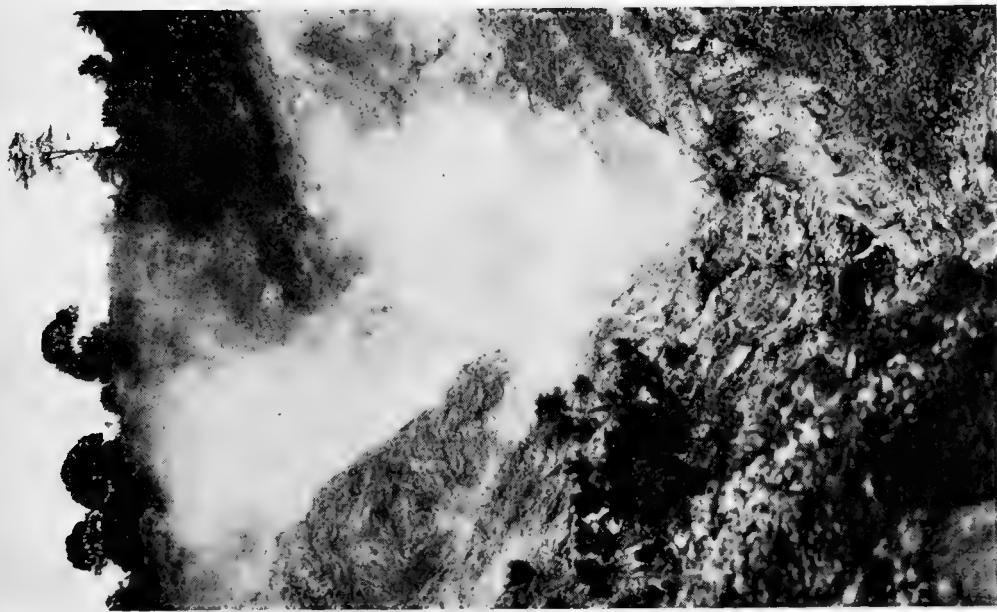


FIG. 46.—Sulphur vent, Montserrat, near  
left base of the mountain shown in fig. 45.  
This vent is now increasing its area, and  
killing many trees, which had grown to  
large size near it.



FIG. 48.—Pointe-a-Pitre, Guadeloupe. On account of quarantine regulations, no closer approach to the town was allowed during the winter of 1923-24.



FIG. 49.—Bridgetown, Barbados.



FIG. 50.—Avenue of palms and Casuarina, Barbados. Young sugar cane in foreground.



FIG. 51.—Negro fisherman searching for crabs, eels and rock inhabiting fish at Atlantis, windward side of Barbados. The peculiar undercutting of the rocks is often seen along this part of the coast.



FIG. 52.—Cactus (*Cereus grenadensis*) on Glover's Island, off south coast of Grenada. Unlike *Cereus hexagonus*, this species appears to branch naturally.



FIG. 54.—Cactus (*Acanthocereus pentagonus*) on rocky shore of Glover's Island, off south coast of Grenada.



FIG. 53.—Cactus (*Cereus hexagonus*) on hill above St. George, Grenada. The branching of this plant seems to be chiefly due to injuries. When growing in protected situations among trees it forms simple columns 30 feet high.

"lost" until, under the guidance of Dr. J. N. Rose, I "rediscovered" it; yet the plant flourishes at the roadside within a few hundred yards of the fine botanical garden in the suburbs of Saint George. For the convenience of anyone who might be interested in doing some field-work on these Islands, attention may be called to the ease with which they can be reached. The boats of the Quebec Steamship Company maintain a service from New York to Barbados, touching at the islands of St. Thomas, St. Croix, St. Kitts, Antigua, Guadeloupe, Dominica, Martinique and St. Lucia, and remaining at each for a period which depends on the quantity of cargo to be handled, but which is usually from three to ten hours. As the islands are small and the roads on most of them are good, there is usually time to get a fair general idea of topography, forests and cultivation during the vessel's call, particularly when it is remembered that points of special interest can be seen again on the return voyage. From Barbados the passage to St. Vincent and Grenada is made by the Royal Mail boats plying between St. John, New Brunswick, and Demarara, British Guiana, by way of Bermuda, the Lesser Antilles and Trinidad. There is also a line directly from New York to Grenada and Trinidad, but this gives no opportunity to see other islands. On the return voyage inconvenience may be experienced in obtaining passage owing to the number of "round trippers" with whom the boats are sometimes crowded; and for the same cause travel between neighboring islands is not always easy.

The appended photographs show characteristic scenes.

GERRIT S. MILLER, JR.

#### EXPERIMENTS IN HEREDITY AT THE TORTUGAS

In continuation of the heredity experiments in the Tortugas conducted under the joint auspices of the Smithsonian and Carnegie Institutions, Dr. Paul Bartsch visited Cuba from May 27 to May 30 this year, in order to add a spirally striated Cerion element to the Cerion colonies established at the Tortugas. Thanks to the good offices of Dr. Carlos de la Torre, of the University of Havana, he was able to secure a sufficient series of a strongly spirally striated new species of Cerion belonging to the *Cerion johnsoni* group at Mariel, where also a large number of *Cerion sculptum*, likewise, though less strongly spirally striated, were gathered. In addition to these, *Cerion mummia* from Marianao and *Cerion chrysalis* from Cabanas Fort and *Cerion tridentata* from Rincon de Guanabon were collected and planted at the Tortugas. The last is peculiar on account of the internal lamination of the aperture, thus adding another element to our experiments.

On June 1 a visit was paid to the hybrid Cerion colony on New-found Harbor Key. This was found to be in a flourishing condition and 100 specimens were taken to Washington for record and dissection. From June 2 to June 15 was spent at the Tortugas where the various Cerion colonies which have been established there were studied and new ones added. All the colonies were found to be doing well, excepting that of *Cerion uva* from Curaçoa, which is on the verge of extinction.



FIG. 55.—Four of the six island groups.

We gathered a number of *F<sub>2</sub>* Florida-grown specimens of *Cerion crassilabre*, which show no measurable differences from those of the check series of the *F<sub>1</sub>* Florida-grown generation, thus again confirming our finding with the other races of transplanted Cerions, that changed environmental factors have no appreciable influence upon the *F<sub>1</sub>* and *F<sub>2</sub>* generations of the transplanted material.

A large series of offsprings of the mixed colony of *Cerion casablancae* and *Cerion viaregis* (Colony I) were gathered and taken to Washington to be carefully studied for a possible cross.

## NEW COLONIES OF CERIONS ESTABLISHED THIS YEAR

- 500 *Cerion mummia* from the point at Miramar, Cuba.  
 500 *Cerion chrysalis* from near Cabanas Fort, Cuba.  
 500 *Cerion sculptum* from near the lighthouse at Mariel, Cuba.  
 125 *Cerion* new species, young specimens from a little east of the point at Mariel, Cuba.  
 500 *Cerion tridentata* from Rincon de Guanabon.

These were planted on the west and north side of the parapet at Fort Jefferson on Garden Key, each duly marked with a stake and tag.

Our failure in the past to grow Cerions in cages at the Tortugas caused us to try isolating them on little islands this year. Mr. Mills inclosed four 6 x 6 ft. areas with a concrete trench, a cross-section

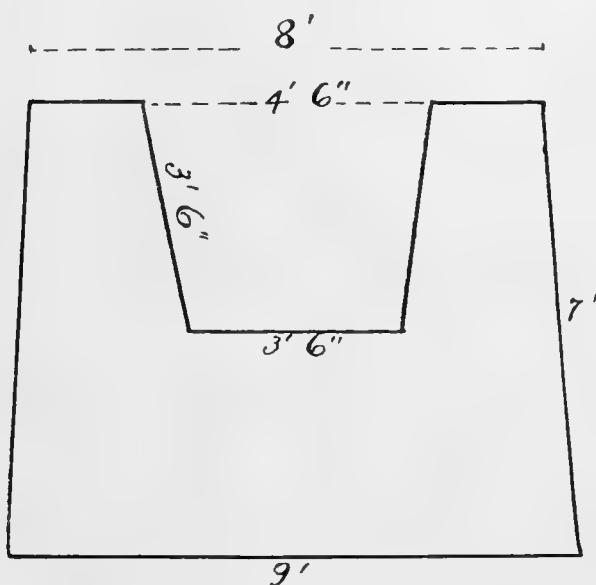


FIG. 56.—Cross-section of concrete trenches.

of the construction of which is shown in the accompanying diagram (fig. 56). Two additional areas of the same size were subdivided by a similar median septum which yielded four almost 3 x 3 ft. islets. The simple trenches require each some nine pails of water and the compound correspondingly more. Arrangements have been made with Mr. Charles Johnson, keeper of the Tortugas lighthouse, to keep these trenches filled with water. Evaporation at the Tortugas is great and it will be necessary to replenish the loss of water almost daily. For this purpose a pump has been installed in the middle of the battery of islands which will make this a comparatively easy daily task.

The inclosed areas have been planted each with a *Hymenocallis* plant and a few such grasses as are favored by Cerions, likewise a few added fragments of coconut pediole fibers; in other words, all things

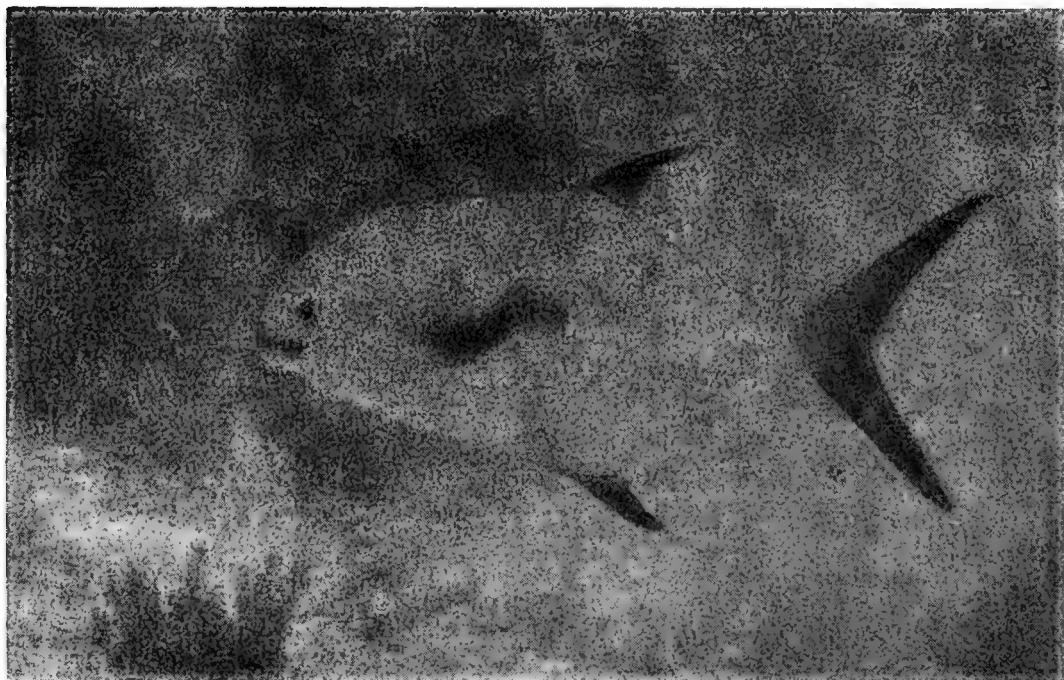


FIG. 57.—Good's pompano (*Trachinotus goodi* Jordan and Evermann).



FIG. 58.—A group of Grey Snappers (*Neomænis griseus* L.) swimming in an aisle between massive coral heads.

favored for attachment by Cerions. These islands are placed south of the laboratory and east of the men's quarters. They have been stocked with:

1. 25 *Cerion incanum* and 25 *Cerion* new species
2. 25 *Cerion incanum* and 25 *Cerion chrysalis*
3. 25 *Cerion incanum* and 25 *Cerion mummia*
4. 25 *Cerion incanum* and 25 *Cerion tridentata*
- 5 and 6. In each compartment a two-thirds grown individual of *Cerion incanum* and *Cerion viaregis*.

On June 15, during the return trip to Key West, Man and Boy Keys were visited. The Boy Key colony has in part survived the burning of last year, but that on Man Key has again been burned over and it is questionable if any living thing is left in it.

Thanks to the authorities of the United States Bureau of Fisheries, some plantings were made within the compound of the Fisheries station at Key West where our colonies will be safe from burnings. Two colonies were established here on the opposite extremities of the seaside leg of the grounds. They consist of 500 specimens each of *Cerion viaregis* and *Cerion incanum*, and 500 each of *Cerion tridentatum* and *Cerion incanum*, respectively.

In addition to the work done at the various stations on the Florida Keys and Cuba, twenty of the hybrid Cerions from the Newfound Harbor colony have been dissected at the National Museum by Miss Mary E. Quick, under the direction of Dr. Bartsch. These show most remarkable changes in anatomic character. It is planned to make a greater number of dissections of these hybrid Cerions in order to determine the range of changes produced by hybridization.

While at the Tortugas, Dr. Bartsch exposed 1,200 feet of moving picture film with his undersea camera, photographing denizens of the coral reef. He took the precaution this year to place the camera upon a tripod, which has eliminated the seasickness-producing effects obtained during similar efforts last year when the camera was held freely in the hands while working in a rather rough sea. The negatives since developed are quite satisfactory.

As in previous years a full record of the birds seen from day to day was kept and added to the list recorded in the past. This has yielded so far not only a large series of notes on the avian population of the Florida Keys and the breeding habits of local forms, but much information on bird migration.

## INSECT COLLECTING EXPEDITION IN THE PACIFIC COAST REGION

On May 31, 1924, Dr. J. M. Aldrich, associate curator of the division of insects, U. S. National Museum, left Washington on a western trip for the purpose of examining type material of insects in certain museums and collecting the two-winged flies in localities of especial interest in the Pacific Coast region.

The first official work was done at the University of Kansas, where some types of muscoid flies were examined. Next, a stop for collecting was made at Redlands, California, and two days were spent



FIG. 59.—Coast of Oregon, near California line.

in the San Bernardino Mountains with Dr. Frank R. Cole. This mountain range is somewhat isolated in position, but includes in its fauna some of the northern species of flies as well as some known from Mexico. An entirely different fauna is that of the lower San Joaquin Valley where the next stop was made at the town of Newman. In this vicinity the dry weather had made the collecting very poor, except along the banks of the San Joaquin River; but here some insects of unusual interest were obtained, including one genus new to the National Museum.

Two days were spent in the Academy of Natural Sciences in San Francisco, examining types and assisting to some extent in determining material for the museum. A brief visit to Stanford University permitted the examination of some interesting type material of parasitic flies occurring on birds and bats.

From Oakland, California, the trip was made by automobile to Eureka and on up the coast into Oregon as far as Marshfield. Along this route the extremely dry season made the collecting very poor except in the vicinity of Marshfield, where the climate is comparatively humid and the collecting was much better. Two days were spent here with very good results. At Corvallis, Oregon, some type material was examined in the collection of the Agricultural College.

In the vicinity of Spokane, Washington, considerable collecting was done for two or three days, resulting in additions of some value but not of exceptional rarity.



FIG. 60.—Coast of Oregon, near California line.

Near Moscow, Idaho, the mountain locally known as Mount Moscow was visited on several days and some important material obtained. This mountain is the type locality for a considerable number of new species of insects. At Kendrick, Idaho, the greatest rarity of the trip was discovered, about 20 specimens of a fly which was originally described in 1877 from streams in Marin County, California.

Two days were spent in collecting at Summit, Montana, and at the Glacier National Park railroad station, a region from which very few flies had previously been obtained for the National Museum.

The illustrations shown (figs. 59, 60) are from photographs taken along the Pacific Coast in southern Oregon, where a very good highway winds in and out of the forests, frequently following the bluffs along the ocean.

## BOTANICAL EXPLORATION IN PANAMA AND COSTA RICA

With the cooperation of the government of the Panama Canal, botanical field-work was undertaken in 1923 in the region of the Zone by Mr. Paul C. Standley, associate curator of the division of plants, U. S. National Museum, with the object of obtaining collections and data for a report upon the plant life, which it is planned to publish in the near future. Part of November, December, and most of January were spent in botanical exploration in and near the Zone. Nearly all parts of this area were visited, and 7,000 numbers of plants were obtained, represented by about twice as many specimens. These collections are now being studied and have been found to contain a number of species new to science, besides many not collected previously in the area.

The vegetation of the Zone is typical of that existing in Central America at low elevations, but it is here possible to study in close proximity the floras of the Atlantic and Pacific slopes, these floras being sharply differentiated in Central America because of differences in the climates of the two watersheds. The Pacific slope has well defined wet and dry seasons; on the Atlantic slope there is usually plentiful moisture throughout the year.

Although the original vegetation of the Isthmus of Panama has been greatly modified in many places because of long occupation by man, and especially because of operations incident to the construction and management of the Canal, there remain near the Canal extensive areas of virgin forest whose animal and plant life is of great interest. Advantage has been taken of this fact to establish recently a station for tropical scientific research on Barro Colorado Island in Gatún Lake, the island having been set aside for the purpose by the Governor of the Canal. Upon this island, largely as a result of the energy and enthusiasm of Mr. James Zetek, there has been constructed this year a laboratory building with accommodations for students, and trails have been cut to make the virgin forest, which covers several hundred acres, available for study.

The most striking botanical feature of the Canal Zone is doubtless the orchid garden formed by Mr. C. W. Powell of Balboa. In this collection Mr. Powell has assembled orchid plants from many parts of Panama, and he has in cultivation nearly all the species known to occur in the Republic. During the last ten years he has found over 300 species, about three times as many as were known previously from Panama, and many of them have proved to be forms unknown to orchid students.

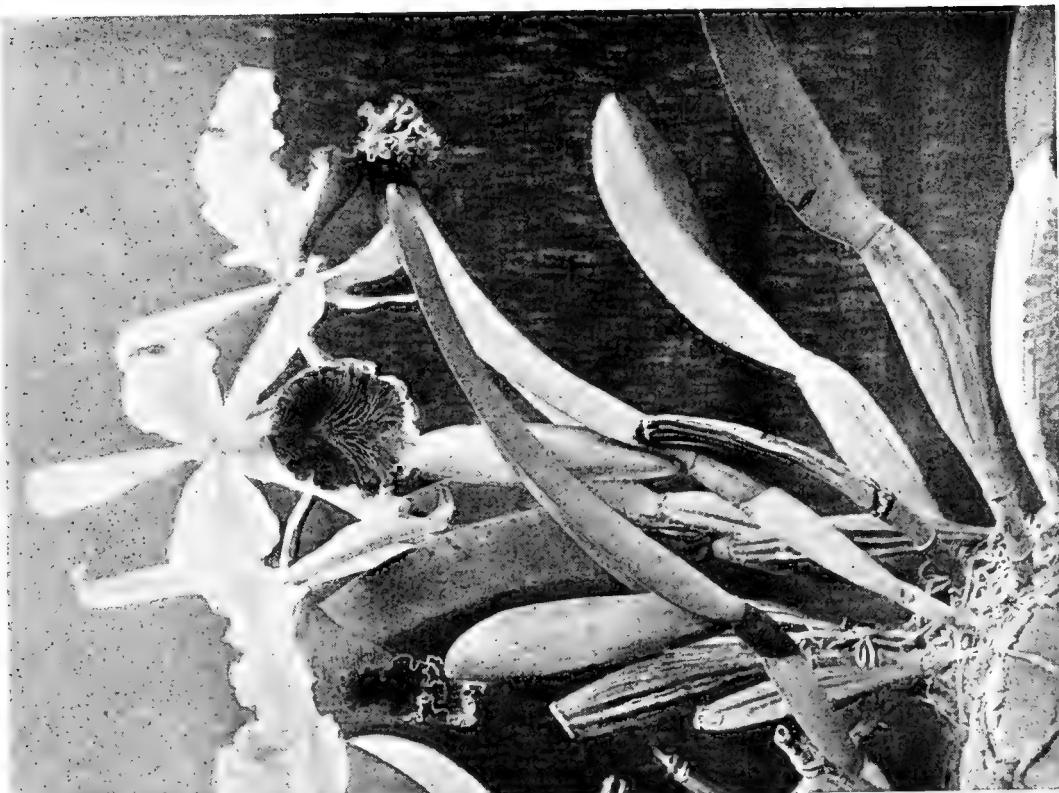


FIG. 62.—*Cattleya dowiana*, native of Costa Rica, probably the finest orchid of Central America. Sepals and petals pale buff; lip deep crimson with golden veins

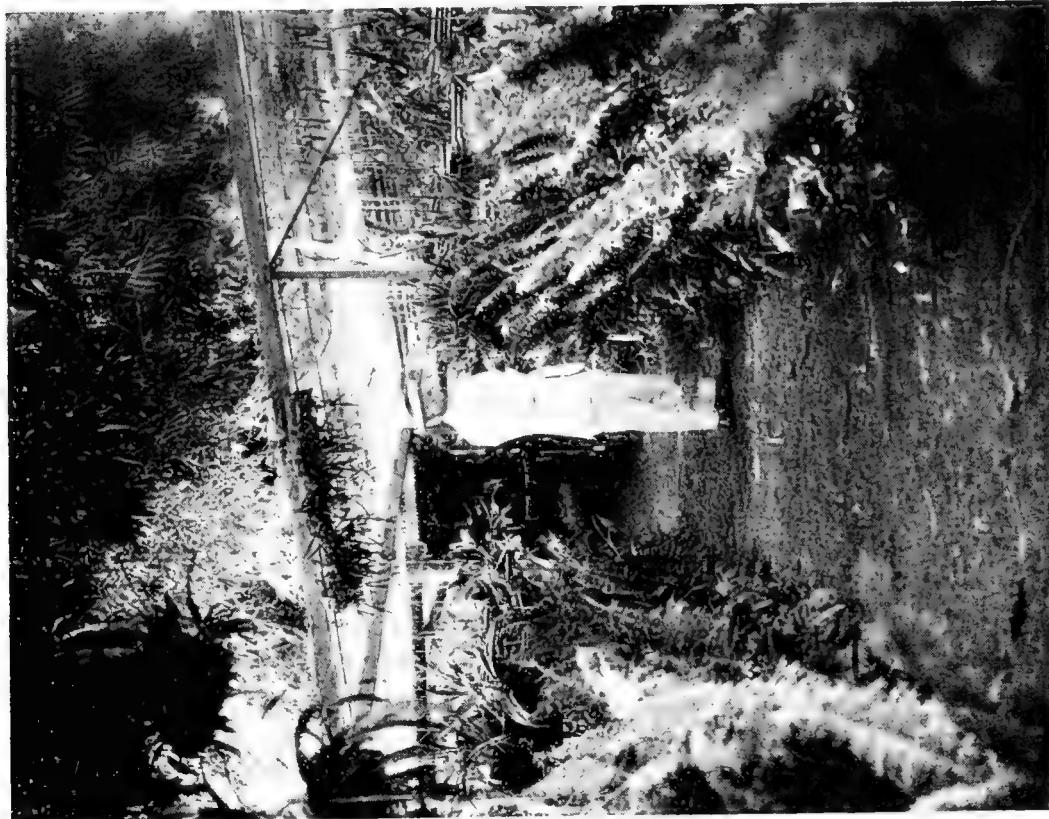


FIG. 61.—Orchid garden of Mr. C. W. Powell, Balboa, Canal Zone.



FIG. 63.—A patio of a Costa Rican home. Nearly all Central American houses are built about a courtyard, which is beautifully decorated with orchids, ferns, and other plants, making a delightful place in which to live. The tile floors of the corridors are frequently very elaborate and handsome. (Photograph by M. Gómez Miralles.)



FIG. 64.—*Cattleya skinneri* in Costa Rica, one of the handsomest of Central American orchids. Flowers purple. (Photograph by M. Gómez Miralles.)



FIG. 65.—Method of growing the chayote (*Sechium edule*) in Costa Rica. The chayote, a relative of the cucumber, which it somewhat resembles, is one of the popular vegetables of tropical America. (Photograph by M. Gómez Miralles).



FIG. 66.—View along the Reventazón River, Atlantic lowlands of Costa Rica. The tall cane at the right is much used in the construction of houses. (Photograph by M. Gómez Miralles.)

At the end of January, Mr. Standley proceeded to Costa Rica, remaining there until the middle of April, when he returned to Washington. Costa Rica is botanically the richest part of North America. In the highlands, where the climate is temperate rather than tropical and where there is a heavy rainfall, the vegetation is extraordinarily luxuriant, and the variety of plants bewildering. Although large collections already have been made in Costa Rica, it will require many years of intensive exploration to gain an adequate knowledge of the plant life.

Mr. Standley's collection consists of 8,000 numbers of plants, many of which will doubtless prove to be new. Special attention was given to the orchids, of which about 1,500 numbers were obtained. These are now being studied by Mr. Oakes Ames, through whose interest the work in Costa Rica was undertaken. Of orchids Costa Rica possesses probably a larger number of species than any other portion of the American tropics of equal extent. Over 1,000 species have been reported from this small Republic, and it is certain that many more await discovery. While most Costa Rican orchids, like those of other countries, have inconspicuous flowers, some, such as the Cattleyas, are of unsurpassed beauty.

Visits were made to the Volcano of Poás, celebrated for its great crater, which contains a lake that erupts frequently; to the Volcano of Turrialba, whose forests are noted for their wealth of ferns; and to many other rich localities in the central highlands.

A short visit to the comparatively arid Pacific coast proved that the flora of this part of Costa Rica is relatively meager and uninteresting. Several visits were made to the wet lowland forests of the Atlantic watershed, where the vegetation is even more luxuriant than in the mountains and the species are almost equally numerous. Little is known of the plants of the Atlantic lowlands of Central America, although it is probable that no other region will better reward exploration.

#### BOTANICAL WORK IN SOUTHEASTERN NEW MEXICO

During part of August, 1924, Mr. Standley was detailed for field-work as a member of the Carlsbad Cavern Expedition of the National Geographic Society. This expedition, under the direction of Dr. Willis T. Lee, was engaged this year in a detailed survey of the Carlsbad Cavern, recently set aside as a national monument, and of its surroundings. The cavern is noteworthy because of its large size and lavish decorations, and is one of the most notable of the

many remarkable natural features of the State of New Mexico. Mr. Standley made a study of the plants of the plains and hills near the cavern, an area possessing a great variety of cactuses and other characteristic desert plants of the Southwest. Visits were made also to the canyons of the near-by Guadalupe Mountains. This range, partly in New Mexico and partly in Texas, has at its southern end Signal Peak, the highest point in the latter State, about which it has been proposed to establish a State park. The Guadalupe Mountains are comparatively unknown botanically, and numerous species were found that had not been collected previously in New Mexico. One of the interesting features of the vegetation of these mountains is the profusion of the Venus-hair fern (*Adiantum capillus-veneris*), a species rare in the Southwest but here abundant everywhere along the small streams.

After completion of the field-work in the vicinity of the cavern, a trip by automobile was made to El Paso, Texas, passing the southern end of the Guadalupes. From El Paso the route was followed to Las Cruces, New Mexico, and thence over the picturesque Organ Mountains and past the White Sands, a vast expanse of gypsum sand, almost pure white, resembling great drifts of snow. The White Mountains also were visited, and the road was followed to Roswell and Carlsbad, thus making it possible in a short time to gain a general impression of the varied types of vegetation covering a large area of characteristic desert and mountain country of southern New Mexico.

#### BOTANICAL EXPEDITION TO THE CENTRAL ANDES

During the summer and fall of 1923, Dr. A. S. Hitchcock, botanist in charge of systematic agrostology, Bureau of Plant Industry, Department of Agriculture, and custodian of the section of grasses of the U. S. National Museum, visited Ecuador, Peru, and Bolivia for the purpose of studying and collecting the grasses. He left New York May 25 and arrived at Guayaquil June 16, making a short stop at Port au Prince, Haiti, and at Buenaventura, Colombia, and a stay of several days at Panama.

The work in Ecuador was done in cooperation with the New York Botanical Garden and the Gray Herbarium of Harvard University, and these institutions shared in the specimens obtained. Therefore in this country the collections included all families of flowering plants. Several localities on the coastal plain were visited, after which collections were made in the vicinity of Huigra, a town on the railroad

at 4,000 feet elevation. Headquarters was then transferred to Quito, the capital, at 9,500 feet elevation. The only important railroad in Ecuador runs from Guayaquil to Quito, crossing the coastal plain for about 100 kilometers and then ascending through one of the valleys to the Sierra or central plateau over a pass about 10,000 feet. The train

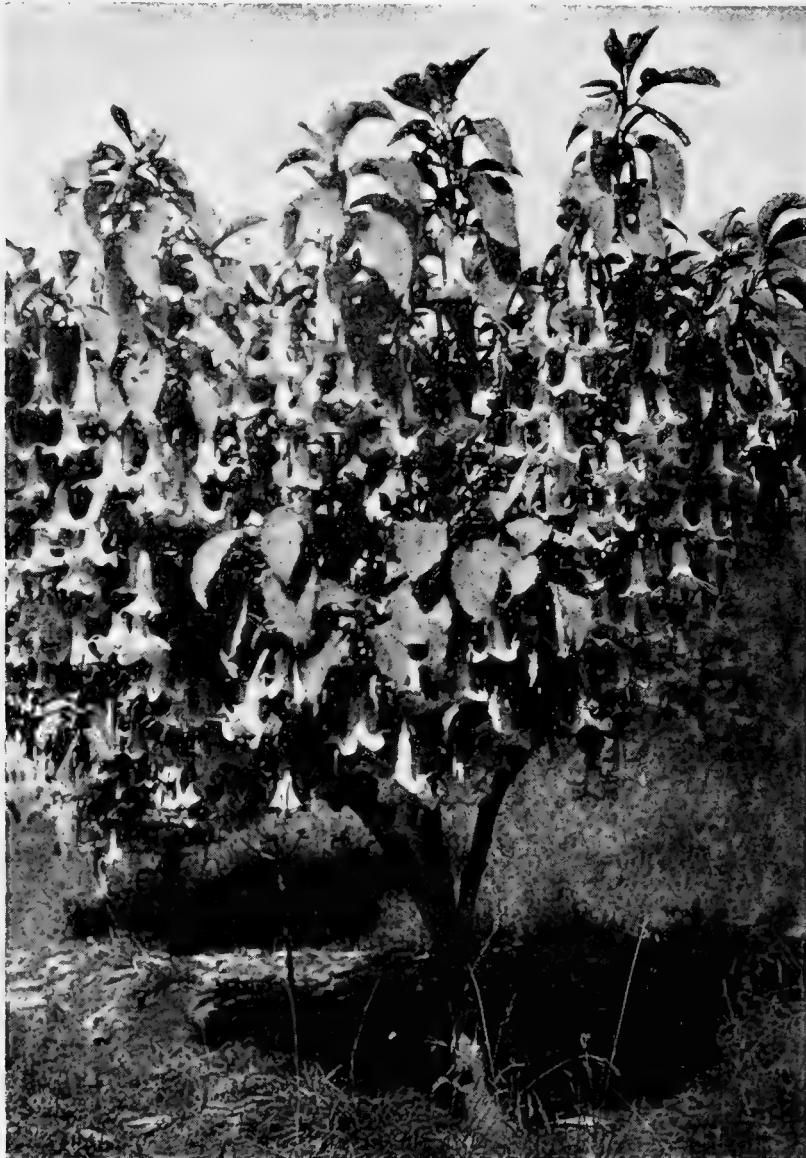


FIG. 67.—Angel's trumpet (*Datura arborea*), a small tree about 8 feet tall with white flowers about 8 inches long. A native plant frequently cultivated for ornament in the Andes.

takes two days to make the trip, stopping overnight at Riobamba. Quito is rather cold, but Riobamba and Ambato have a very salubrious climate.

An overland trip was made from Quito to Tulcán on the Colombian border, occupying about a week. Another trip taking about three



FIG. 68.—A country road near Ambato. A species of *Agave* is commonly used as a hedge plant. Dr. Hitchcock's horse stands in the foreground with a McClellan army saddle taken from Washington. The uncomfortable native saddles are used with heavy pads of sheep's wool.



FIG. 69.—A street of Lima, a fine, modern city, in which the architecture, as in all South American cities, is essentially that of continental Europe

weeks was made from Guayaquil to Santa Rosa by boat and by mule to Portovelo, a gold mine in charge of Americans, to Loja, the southernmost town of importance in Ecuador, and then north through Cuenca, the third city in size, and on to Huigra. A short journey of four days was made into the Oriente from Ambato to Baños and on to Cashurco near Mera. The last collecting was done on the great peak of Chimborazo, ascending to snow line at about 16,000 feet.

Leaving Guayaquil October 11, Callao was reached October 17. In Peru two chief regions were visited, the first being the central plateau east of Lima. A railroad runs from Lima to Oroya (12,000 feet) and north to Cerro de Pasco (14,300 feet). This road is a



FIG. 70.—Atocsaico Ranch, near Junín, Central Peru. The ranch is on the great central plateau at about 13,000 feet and is mainly devoted to sheep-raising. The region lies above tree line, but provides excellent grazing.

marvelous piece of engineering, going over a pass at nearly 16,000 feet, and provided with numerous tunnels, bridges, and switchbacks. A side trip was made down the east side to Colonia Perené, a coffee plantation at 2,000 feet, and another to the Atocsaico Ranch, near Junín, at 13,000 feet, where there is excellent grazing the year around for 35,000 sheep and 1,100 cattle. Cerro de Pasco, on account of the altitude, is a cold bleak place. Here grows the curious moss grass (*Aciachne pulvinata*), covering entire hills with hard compact rounded tussocks. From here a trip was made to La Quinhuá, a gold mine at a lower altitude, and another to Goyllarisquisca, a coal mine, also at a somewhat lower altitude, where the collecting was very good.



FIG. 71.—A quarry from which the Incas obtained stones for the great fortress near Cuzco.



FIG. 72.—A portion of a wall in the great Inca fortress near Cuzco. The stones are fitted with great exactness, but without mortar. A drainage opening is shown in center. The corner stones are rounded and the wall slopes a little. The Incas had no beasts of burden (the llama will carry 75 pounds, but will not pull in harness) and no metal tools. Some of the large stones weigh many tons.

The second region visited in Peru was reached by the Southern Railway from Mollendo on the coast. The first day takes one up to Arequipa at 7,500 feet, where a few days were spent. The second day takes one to Juliaca, and the third to Cuzco. A few days were spent at a new Government experiment station at Chuquibambilla (13,000 feet), north of Juliaca. This station is well-equipped and is devoting its attention chiefly to sheep-raising.

From Cuzco (11,500 feet) a trip was made down the valley northward to Ollantaytambo over a new railroad which ultimately will reach Santa Ana, head of navigation on the Urubamba river. At



FIG. 73.—Mules loaded with coca leaves at Ollantaytambo, Peru, on the way to Cuzco from the lower altitudes. Coca leaves are chewed with a paste of ashes by the Indian men to prevent fatigue. The leaves are largely exported for the production of cocaine. The growing of the coca bush is an important industry of the montañas of Peru and Bolivia.

Ollantaytambo and at Cuzco there are fine examples of Inca architecture, now in ruins, but showing the remarkable stone walls in which the irregular stones are fitted with great accuracy but without mortar.

On going to Bolivia from Cuzco the traveler returns on the Southern Railway to Juliaca, there takes a branch line to Puno on Lake Titicaca, crosses the lake by night on a comfortable little steamer to Guaqui, and then goes by rail to La Paz.

Lake Titicaca, the largest lake in South America and the highest for its size in the world, is 130 miles long, 3,200 square miles in area, and as much as 900 feet deep. The railroad from Guaqui

passes over a high plain, gradually ascends from 12,500 to 13,500 feet, then abruptly descends into a bowl or valley to La Paz at 12,000 feet. It is a very striking experience to come suddenly to the edge of the plain and look down 1,500 feet on the beautiful city below.

From La Paz a four-day journey by mule was made to the great mountain mass, Illimani, about 25 miles nearly east of the city. This snow-capped mountain is a beautiful sight from La Paz and dominates the landscape much as do Rainer and Shasta in this country. The peak is about 22,000 feet in altitude (6,619 meters) but was ascended only to snowline, about 16,000 feet.

A second journey from La Paz was to the Yungas, a region in the montañas (forested region) north of the city but on the Amazon slope of the Cordillera. The trip was made in company with Dr. Otto Buchtien, the well-known German botanist, long resident in Bolivia, who has done so much work on the plants of that country. A railroad takes one over a pass at about 15,000 feet to Pongo (about 12,000 feet), the present terminus of the road which is under construction into the Yungas. Through the courtesy of the director of the railroad, mules were furnished for a week's travel down through the provinces of Nor-Yungas and Sur-Yungas to Chulumani and Coroico. This region is the center of the coca industry of Bolivia. The leaves of the coca shrub (not to be confused with cacao or chocolate tree, nor with the coconut palm) are much used by the Indians as a stimulant. The leaves are mixed with a paste of ashes and chewed. The leaves also form an important article of export as they are the source of the drug cocaine.

After leaving La Paz a journey was made to Cochabamba, a rich agricultural district toward the east on the slope from the main Bolivian plateau. The last expedition was made through the aid of the Ulen Contracting Corporation which is constructing a railroad from Uyuni in southern Bolivia on the main line from La Paz to Antofagasta, Chile, to Villazon on the Argentine border where it will join the Argentine system. The road is now in use as far as Atocha and ultimately will complete the line from La Paz to Buenos Aires. Ten days were spent on a mule-back round trip from Atocha to La Quiaca, the northernmost town in Argentina.

The return home was made from Antofagasta, arriving in New York February 16, 1924.

The region visited consists topographically and climatically of three main divisions. There is a coastal plain mostly not more than 100 miles in width extending all along the coast. In northern Ecuador



FIG. 74.—A glacier on Illimani, altitude about 16,000 feet. Illimani, lying about 25 miles nearly east of La Paz, is a dominating feature of the landscape like our Rainier or Shasta. This and Sorata or Illampu, 40 miles to the north of La Paz, are both nearly 22,000 feet (6,619 and 6,645 meters).



FIG. 75.—In the heart of the Andes or Cordillera Real. On the way to the Yungas, a region on the Amazon slope north of La Paz. This is in the montaña (wooded mountain slopes) and is the center of the coca industry of Bolivia. Altitude about 5,000 feet.

this plain has an abundant rainfall but becomes drier to the south and in Peru is a desert. In Ecuador the chief crops are sugar and cacao. In Peru the agriculture is confined to the valleys that can be irrigated from the mountain streams. Here the crops are sugar, cotton, grain, and alfalfa. The temperature of the coastal plain is modified by the Humboldt current which sweeps up from the cold Antarctic regions and the coastal cities of Peru are much cooler than those of the Atlantic coast in the same latitude.

The central part of Ecuador and Peru is occupied by the great Andes mountain system, the Cordillera. In a general way the system



FIG. 76.—A herd of llamas at Atocha, southern Bolivia. The Bolivian plateau increases in aridity southward. The vegetation of the mountains in the background of the scene is very sparse. The foreground is a river bed that is dry, except after the infrequent hard rains.

consists of two chains with a plateau between. In Ecuador the plateau is divided into several valleys by cross ridges. In the valleys at altitudes from 8,000 to 9,500 feet lie the chief cities, such as Tulcán, Ibarra, Quito, Ambato, Riobamba, and Cuenca. In Peru the plateau is at a greater altitude. South of Cuzco (11,500 feet) it broadens into a wide area embracing all western Bolivia, the plateau being mostly 12,000 to 13,000 feet elevation for 400 miles and more than 100 miles wide. Most of the region above 12,000 feet is devoid of trees and the plain increases in aridity southward. The southwestern part of Bolivia is a desert. The plains and slopes above tree line in Ecuador are called páramos and the region is called the Sierra. They are

subject to cold winds which make travelling uncomfortable. In Peru the treeless plateaus are called punas. Many mountain ranges rise above the plateau and snow-capped peaks are numerous. The best known peaks in Ecuador are Chimborazo and Cotopaxi, more than 20,000 feet in altitude. The height and massiveness of the mountain system in central Peru is indicated by the altitude of the pass on the railroad from Lima to Oroya in the central plateau mentioned above.

In Peru and Bolivia there is little in the way of crop production on the puna, but where there is sufficient rainfall the stock-raising industry flourishes. The grazing on the puna of Peru is in the main excellent and large numbers of sheep are raised. In the valleys falling from the plateau agriculture at once begins and crops of beans (habas, the broad bean of Europe) and barley are first seen; somewhat lower are found alfalfa, corn, potatoes, and wheat.

The third primary region is the montaña, a name applied to the wet forested slopes of the Andes on the east. In Ecuador the slope is abrupt on the eastern chain of the Cordillera and soon passes into the Oriente or great rain forest of the Amazon valley. In a general way this montaña region extends through eastern Peru to the Yungas of Bolivia. Beyond that it merges into the Chaco of eastern Bolivia, which is a drier region of scant forest and grassy plains.

The botanical results of the trip have been very satisfactory. A large collection of grasses was made, which will form the basis of an account of the grass flora of the three countries visited. Already several new species have been described from the general collections made in Ecuador.

#### ARCHEOLOGICAL EXPEDITION TO CHINA

During the winter of 1923-1924, the Expedition sent to China under the joint auspices of the Freer Gallery of Art and the Museum of Fine Arts, Boston, carried on successful investigations at I Chou, in the province of Chihli, and at several localities in the province of Shensi. I Chou is built on the site of an ancient city, perhaps that of Yen Ching, and while there Mr. Carl Whiting Bishop, in charge of the expedition, traced portions of old earthen walls of considerable size, lying to the southwest of the present city. To the east of I Chou, groups of many large, uncovered mounds rise from the flat plains; these were inspected as were also some of the many potsherds and fragments of tile and pottery found on the surfaces of the mounds themselves. Later, Mr. Bishop made a survey of the locality by



FIG. 77.—General view of the Wang Fén Wa mound, looking southeast.

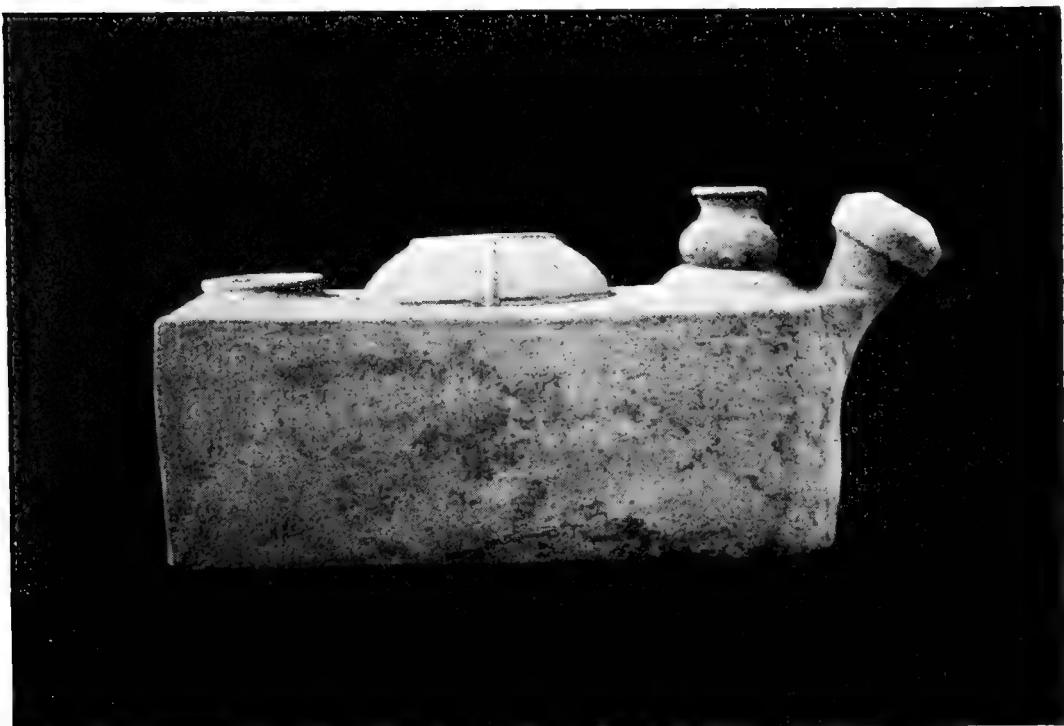


FIG. 78.—Pottery stove retaining traces of glaze; purchased from looters of the Wang Fén Wa tomb, and said to have been found there.

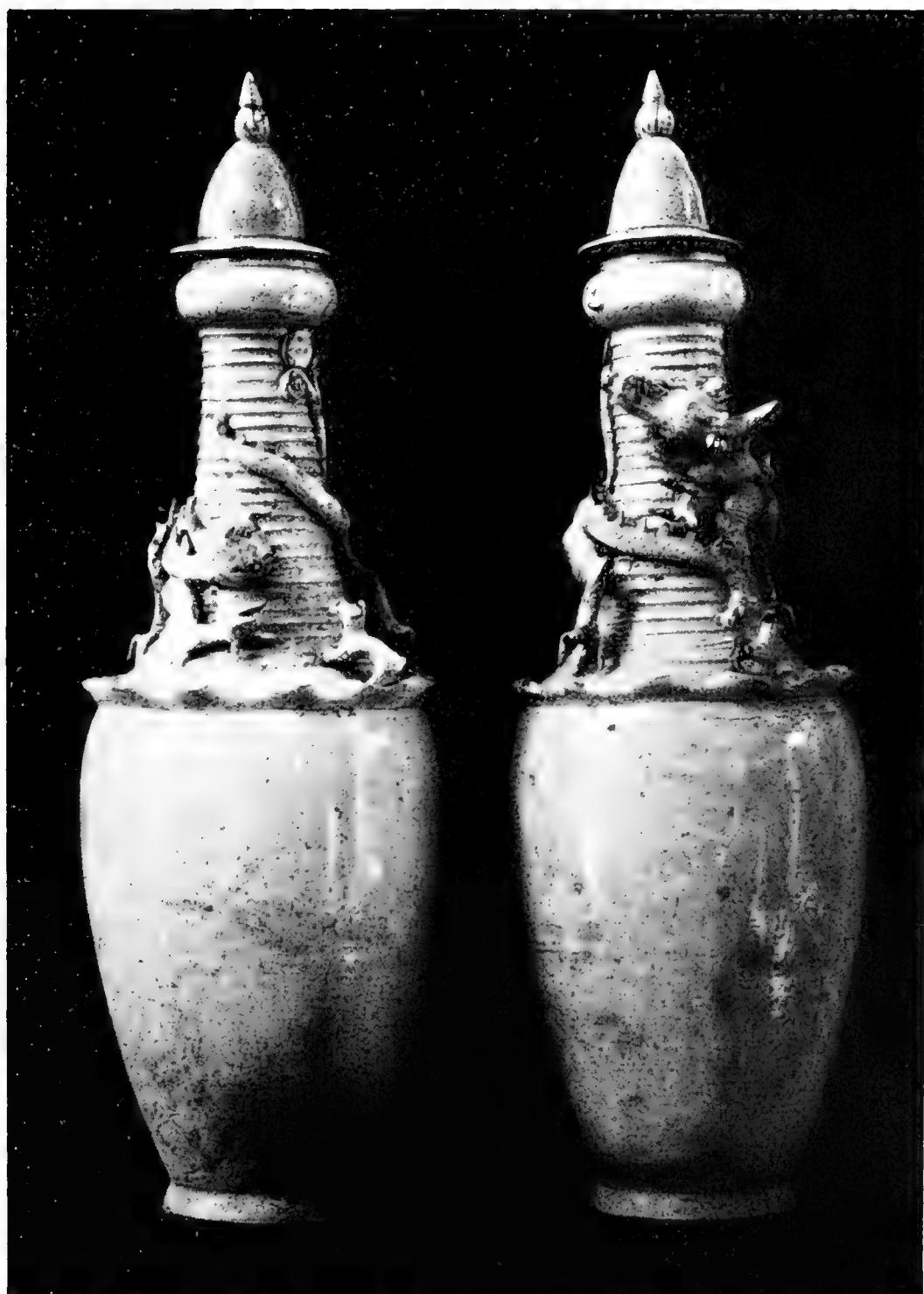


FIG. 79.—Pair of vases purchased in Yü-ho Chén; said to have come from tomb between Wang Fēn Wa and the Hsiung Chia T'ai-tzū.

aeroplane, in order to determine more accurately the extent and general plan of the ancient site.

In Shensi, the members of the field staff visited the Western Han (206 B. C.-A. D. 25) capital of Ch'ang-an, securing sufficient data



FIG. 80.—Brick cist in which pottery was found; pottery *in situ*. Wang Fên Wa tomb.

while there to make a fair reconstruction of the ancient city. In the same province they inspected also, two large mounds of the usual truncated pyramidal form, ascribed to early Han emperors; the supposed tomb of the emperor Ch'in Shih Huang-ti (221-210 B. C.), and the tombs of the famous emperor Han Wu Ti (140-87 B. C.)

and his general Ho Ch'ü-ping. The tomb of Han Wu Ti is an unusually large one, measuring 278 yards at its base and presents opportunities of great archeological interest, as does also that of General Ho Ch'ü-ping, where Mr. Bishop saw not only the well-known stone figure of a horse trampling on a recumbent warrior, but examined also several other partially exposed stone sculptures of the early Han period. Photographs, and scale plans of several of the tombs and temples in this vicinity were made.

The first actual excavation work conducted by the Expedition, was begun in the spring of this year at Yü-ho Chén, about 17 miles west of Hsin-yang Chou, in the province of Honan. This specific undertaking has an added significance archeologically, in that it is the first work of the kind to be conducted in China by any foreign government in cooperation with the Chinese authorities. At Yü-ho Chén, two tombs of the Han dynasty (206 B. C.-A. D. 221), were excavated; the work revealed interesting data on ancient tomb construction and brought to light Chinese cultural objects dating from prehistoric times to the Han period. Specimens in metal, stone and pottery were found in the tombs; chariot-fittings, mirrors and arrow-points of bronze; one or two gold rings; cast-iron implements; a stone axe and parts of stone doors and lintels; a jade chisel; slate arrow-heads, and a number of pieces of ancient pottery—some intact, some fragmentary—among them a kind of glazed pottery which, if it be of Han production, is a type hitherto scarcely known to us.

In August, the Yü-ho Chén finds were exhibited for one day, under Mr. Bishop's direction, at the Historical Museum in Peking; between 5,000 and 6,000 visitors attended the exhibit.

In the early autumn Mr. Bishop, together with Dr. Barbour, professor of geology at Peking University, and Dr. Tegengren, a Swedish mining geologist, examined a mound at Peitaiho, on the gulf of Chihli, which discloses evidences of what Mr. Bishop believes may be a Han dynasty naval base or fortress; one of three which are said to have been built at that time, and of which two only have been located.

A satisfactory report on the purchases made in China during the past year cannot be prepared at this time, for, until a more detailed examination of the objects shall have been made, definite information with regard to age, provenance and type will not be possible. The purchases include Buddhist stone sculptures, Chinese pottery and bronzes, and, among the last named, a collection which we believe has come from Shou Chou, the last capital of the Kingdom of Ch'u, which was destroyed in 223 B. C.



FIG. 81.—Looking south from rear of tomb at the Wang Fēn Wa, showing portions of front walls, stone door-sills, and, above, brick cist in which pottery was found.



FIG. 82.—Bronze objects from the Lei Ku T'ai; arrowpoint probably not associated with interment. (Yü-ho Chén.)



FIG. 83.—The Lei Ku T'ai mound; Tomb I, ready for measuring.



FIG. 84.—Western end of Tomb I, Lei Ku T'ai.

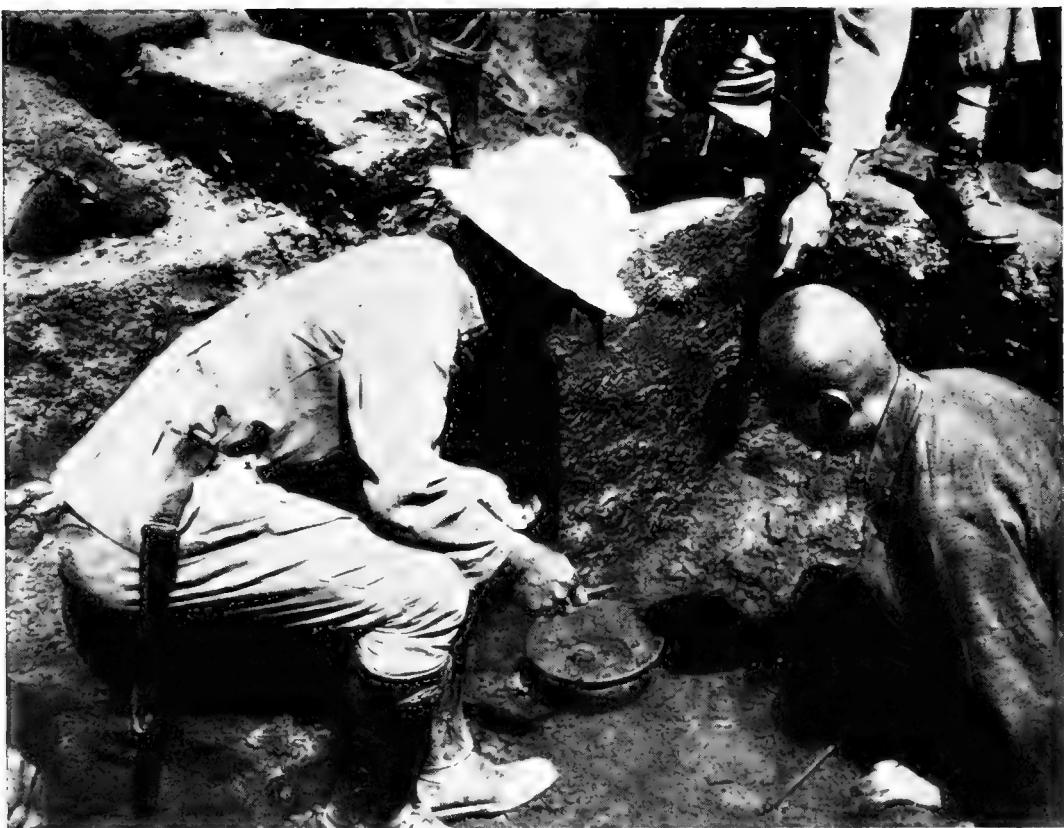


FIG. 85.—Mr. Tung getting out pottery found in the tombs at the Lei Ku T'ai mound.



FIG. 86.—Tombs I and II, Lei Ku T'ai; beyond, barley harvest in progress.

Important as the archeological work of our Expedition has been, a summary of the year's activities in China should include a statement concerning the perhaps still more gratifying success we have had in accomplishing what was the fundamental object of our Expedition; namely, the establishment of a cooperative agreement between ourselves and the Chinese authorities with regard to archeological research. This agreement establishes for the first time, a mutually beneficial relationship between Chinese and Western archeologists, which will prove to be, let us hope, a dignified working basis for more enlightened scholarship and valuable scientific research in this increasingly important field. The cooperative agreement between ourselves and the Chinese authorities was confirmed by the unsolicited appointment of Mr. Bishop as Honorary Advisor in Archeology to the Historical Department of the Chinese government, and, later, by the permissions granted to our Expedition, not only by the Governor of Shensi and the Director of Education for Honan, to excavate within their respective provinces, but also by the Ministry of Education, to excavate anywhere in China.

#### ETHNOLOGICAL AND ARCHEOLOGICAL RECONNOISSANCE IN ARIZONA

During August and September, Dr. Walter Hough, head curator of anthropology, U. S. National Museum, carried on ethnological and archeological reconnaissance work in Arizona. Revisiting the White Mountain Apache after an absence of several years, effort was made to ascertain the present status of these Indians in comparison with their condition and attitude towards innovations some years ago. Measures adopted for the welfare of the Indians give imperceptible results for a period; then the innovation is gradually accepted and finally reaches the effective stage among the larger number of Indians. In this way schools, hospitals, etc., slowly enter the consciousness of the Indian. Attempts to hasten matters unadvisedly in the past have resulted in disastrous failure, blocking the orderly course of reforms. More basic and perhaps more important is the extension of commerce and the consequent realization by the Indian of the value of money. Last year two prominent Apaches occupied American type houses. This step appears to mark the abandonment of the miserable, unsanitary tipi of brush which has held back the Apache during all his generations.

Among the Hopi it is becoming apparent that changes are in progress that will profoundly affect the persistence of this Indian group.

The young men are qualifying as artisans and necessarily the work entails a permanent absence from the pueblos. Most of them are employed in the mechanical work of the Santa Fe railroad. They



FIG. 87.—A combination of old and new. Hopi Indian, Walpi, Arizona.

receive large wages and are much esteemed for their skill. The result of this on the integrity of pueblo life is on the eve of becoming disastrous, as the older people are left on their own resources without able help. This phase in the history of the Hopi was unexpected as a disintegrating element. No one suspected that the Hopi would be

caught in the industrial maelstrom, especially as the Rio Grande Pueblos never progressed in this direction.

The archeological results of the reconnaissance were the location of several hitherto unidentified ruins, notably a large ancient settlement of apparently pre-pueblo age about five miles from Whiteriver, Arizona. A careful examination was made of the numerous picture writings on the rocks in the vicinity of Holbrook. Most interesting of these depictions was a group of snake dancers clothed in archaic costume.



FIG. 88.—Apache house, Oak Creek, Arizona.

On the journey Dr. Hough made a careful inspection of museums at Santa Fe, Los Angeles, Pasadena, San Francisco, Salt Lake City, and Denver.

#### MARSH-DARIEN EXPEDITION

Mr. R. O. Marsh continued during a part of 1924 his work of exploration in hitherto almost unknown regions of the Isthmus of Darien. A considerable party of scientific men accompanied the expedition, among them Mr. John L. Baer, who was deputed to care for the anthropological work on the part of the Smithsonian. The Expedition experienced a great misfortune in the sudden illness of Mr. Baer while proceeding up the Chucunaque River. He was transported



FIG. 89.—Chocó Indian house with open sides.

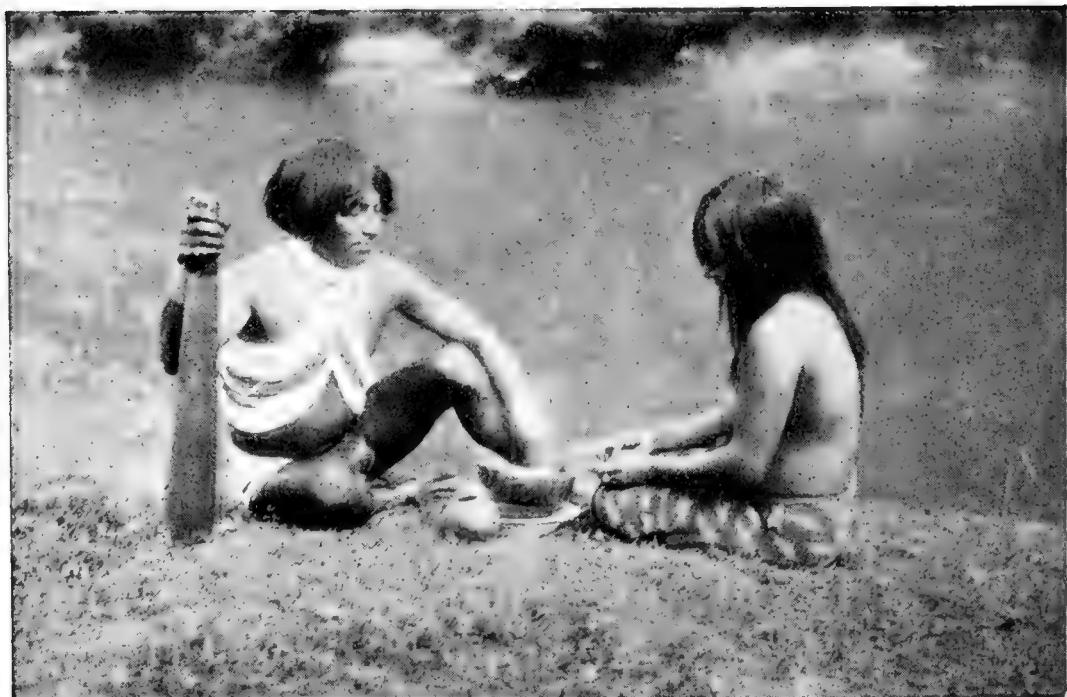
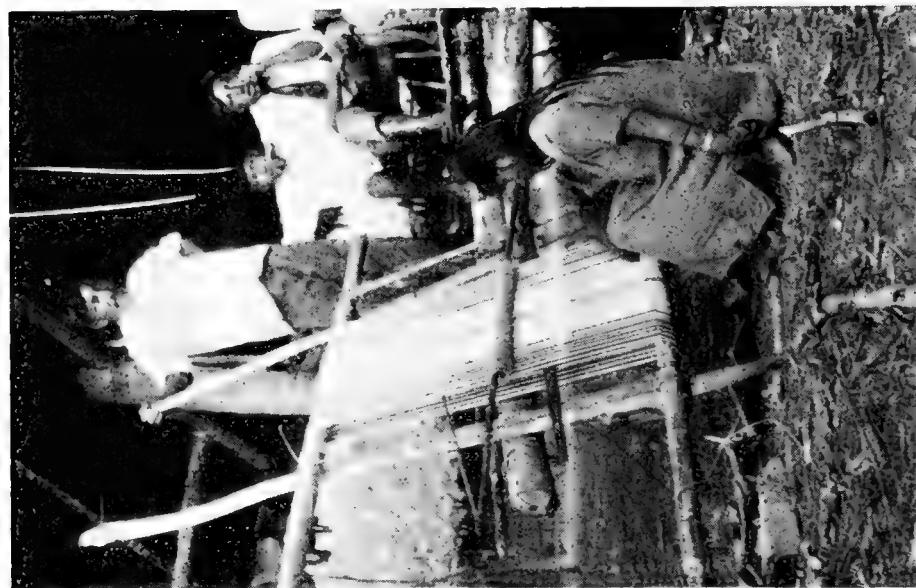
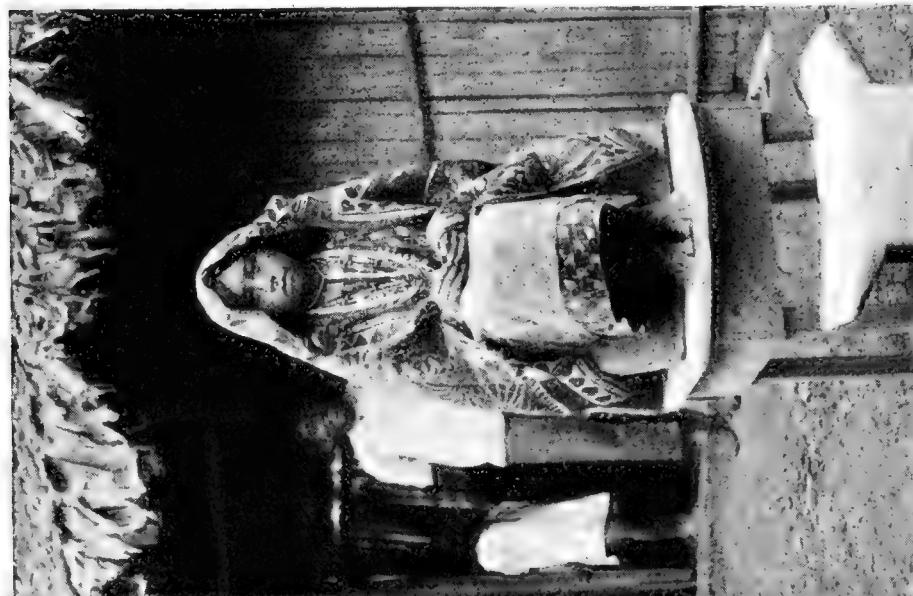


FIG. 90.—Chocó Indian man and woman.



3



2



1

Fig. 91.—1, Tule (San Blas) Indians; 2, Tule girl in native costume; 3, Tule loom.

immediately to the Coast, but the illness terminated fatally on May 28, the Institution being advised by the Navy Department of Mr. Baer's death.

The route followed was from Balboa to San Miguel Bay, through Darien Harbor and up the Tuyra River to the village of Real. There a change was made to smaller boats and the Rio Chucunaque



FIG. 92.—Tule Indian women in native dress.

ascended to Yavisa, near which a permanent camp was established. A visit was made to the Chocó Indians, who occupy the middle river valleys above tidewater, and to the Cuna, who live in the higher river valleys and mountain districts. The Chocó have a local government, live in large, well built community houses, and subsist on rice, bananas, plantains, corn, and yucca. They are expert fishermen, diving into

deep pools and catching certain kinds of rock fish in their hands. Their religion is a form of primitive belief in the influence of good and bad spirits. Mr. Marsh observes that they are a happy, careless, childlike people, friendly if well treated, very Polynesian-like, wearing breech-cloths, but decorated with beads, silver earrings, and wrist bands, and wreaths of gay flowers.



FIG. 93.—Tule Indian children.

The Cuna have a higher culture than the Chocó, are monogamous, have hereditary chiefs, families have separate houses, and large houses are used for tribal meetings and ceremonies. They raise long staple tree cotton, dye and weave cotton into cloth and hammocks, grow corn, plantains, bananas, yucca, coffee, chocolate and sugar cane. They are adepts with the bow and arrow and blowgun.



FIG. 94.—Chepu, Marguerite, Olo: Tule (San Blas) Indians.



FIG. 95.—Along the Caribbean coast. Tule (San Blas) Indian village and canoes.

The party proceeded up the Chucunaque River with great difficulty owing to barriers of drift logs, at last reaching the Cunas Bravos, who were regarded as hostile. The Cunas Bravos are agriculturists and exhibit a lower degree of culture than the Cunas of the lower river. The chief of the Cunas Bravos spoke good English, having as a young man shipped at Colon on an English vessel and in 12 years had sailed over half the world. It was at this point that John L. Baer became sick.

Activities were next transferred to the San Blas Indians, who inhabit a long stretch of the north coast of Panama. These Indians, who number approximately 40,000, have always kept aloof from the white man, realizing that contact with other races would work their undoing. Amicable relations were established with them and many interesting specimens of their arts and industries were collected for the National Museum. The San Blas Indians have an advanced social organization, with a ruler who could perhaps be properly classed as a king. Through the San Blas, Mr. Marsh came in contact with hundreds of "white Indians" whose presence in Panama has been known for a long time, but who have not been examined by scientific observers. Individuals brought by Mr. Marsh to the United States have been carefully examined and tentatively stated, before field studies go more fully into the matter, to present a form of albinism. Mr. Marsh states that light brown Indians having one white parent reproduce white, light brown, and dark brown children. The San Blas segregate the white children at the age of puberty, and from such information as was furnished it is estimated that one thousand individuals exist in the San Blas region. Mr. Marsh states that the San Blas Indians are capable of assimilating the essentials of modern civilization, and believes that these Indians should be given the chance to develop without contact with alien blood.

#### ARCHEOLOGICAL INVESTIGATIONS AT PUEBLO BONITO, NEW MEXICO

Throughout the summer months of 1924, Mr. Neil M. Judd, curator of American archeology, U. S. National Museum, continued his investigation<sup>1</sup> of Pueblo Bonito, a prehistoric Indian village in northwestern New Mexico, under the auspices of the National Geographic Society. In these researches there were employed ten white men, six of whom were technical assistants to Mr. Judd, and thirty-seven

<sup>1</sup> Smithsonian Misc. Coll., Vol. 72, Nos. 6 and 15; Vol. 74, No. 5; Vol. 76, No. 10.



FIG. 96.—Upon conclusion of the 1924 excavations, Pueblo Bonito with its 350 ground-floor rooms, its 30 ceremonial chambers, its numerous alcoves, passageways and architectural vagaries presented a most fascinating panorama. Exposed for the first time since its abandonment 1,000 years or more ago, Pueblo Bonito seems almost alive at times, echoing the songs of its vanished builders. (Photograph by O. C. Havens. Courtesy of the National Geographic Society.)

Indian laborers. The explorations of 1924 mark the fourth season of the five-year Pueblo Bonito project, inaugurated in 1921 after a thorough reconnoissance of the entire Chaco Canyon region.

During the years 1921-1923 the Expedition completed the excavation of the eastern and northern portions of Pueblo Bonito. It is in the former section of the ruin that those dwellings last constructed are to be found; in the northern section are slightly earlier houses erected above the razed walls of part of that original settlement which preceded and formed a nucleus for the great communal structure now known as Pueblo Bonito. In 1924 the Expedition confined its principal activities to the western half of the ruin where rooms of both early and late construction exist. From these much new data were obtained.

As one result of the past season's explorations, it is now reasonably certain that no more than two major periods of occupancy are present in the ruins of Pueblo Bonito. These were contemporaneous throughout many successive generations and yet one was pioneer to the other. During the second period, three separate types of masonry were evolved. The culture of the original Bonitians appears to have been quite distinct; the masonry of their dwellings, the form and furniture of their ceremonial rooms and perhaps even their daily life differed from that of their later associates.

In that portion of the pueblo recently excavated are to be seen rectangular dwellings whose walls were constructed both with hard, laminate sandstone and dressed blocks of similar but more friable material. These rooms adjoin and even encompass earlier habitations in which broad, thin slabs of sandstone were utilized with abundant quantities of adobe mud as the characteristic building material. The earlier dwellings were built on a much lower level of occupancy; the later structures are especially noteworthy for the perfection and symmetry of their masonry, the trueness of their corners and the uniform regularity of their dimensions. Kivas associated with these latter dwellings are, for the most part, of smaller diameter than those observed elsewhere in the ancient village.

Among the older habitations excavated last season were four rooms which had been utilized as burial chambers. A majority of the 71 bodies interred here had been placed upon burial mats and were accompanied by mortuary offerings, including basketry and earthenware vessels. Such personal ornaments as were worn by the deceased at the moment of death were not removed. Whether the burials represent the first or second period of occupancy is a question still undetermined. But a curious fact in connection with these interments

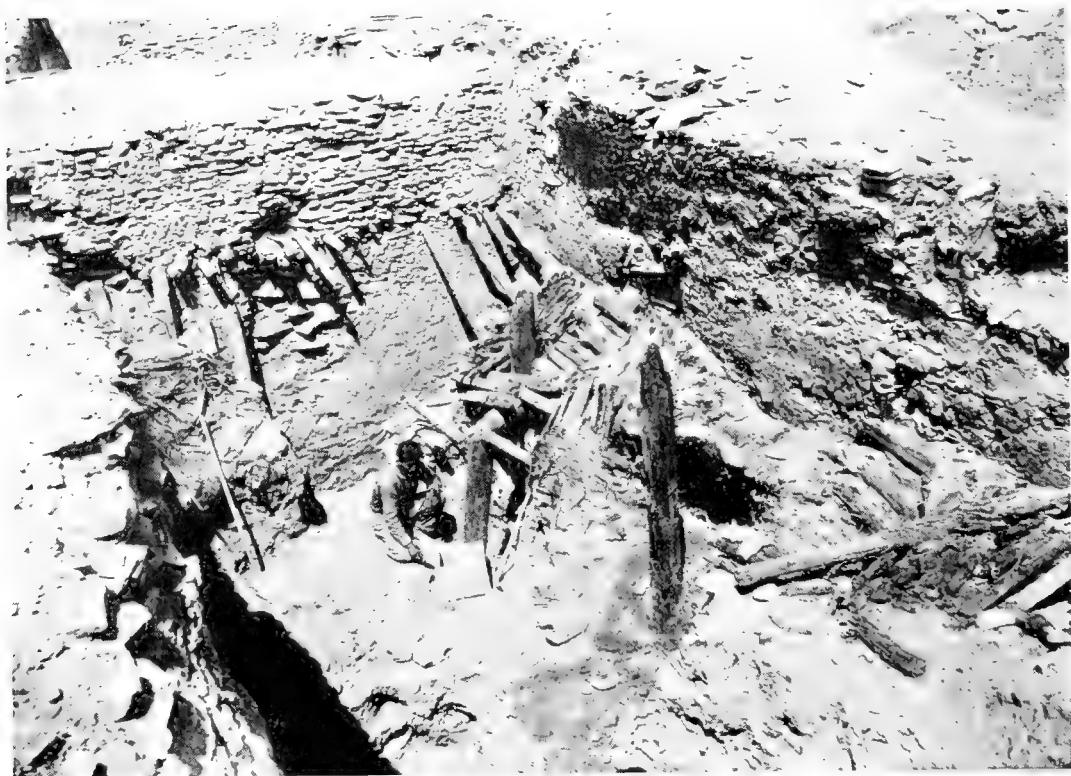


FIG. 97.—Dwellings of the older portion of Pueblo Bonito were characterized by rude masonry, heavily plastered with mud, and by secondary supports for the ceilings of first story rooms. (Photograph by O. C. Havens. Courtesy of the National Geographic Society.)



FIG. 98.—Disturbed burials and mortuary offerings on one of the older rooms of Pueblo Bonito. Prehistoric vandals had ravaged each of the burial chambers. (Photograph by O. C. Havens. Courtesy of the National Geographic Society.)

is that most of them were disturbed during prehistoric times. It is quite apparent that enemy peoples had entered the rooms and ruthlessly disarranged the bodies, perhaps in search of turquoise and other treasures highly prized by primitive peoples of the Southwest. With the cultural objects recovered by the Expedition are many jewels of such exquisite beauty and artistic merit as to have proven entirely irresistible to those aborigines not related to the former inhabitants of Pueblo Bonito.

In the large number of earthenware vessels collected from these four burial chambers and elsewhere two outstanding types of ornamentation appear. Although these types were frequently found directly associated with each other, one is thought to belong essentially to the original Bonitians while the other is believed more characteristic of their neighbors of the later period. Chronologic studies made in the two principal refuse mounds and about the outer wall of the pueblo illustrate a gradual development of local pottery technique throughout the entire period during which Pueblo Bonito was inhabited. But a certain perplexity still obtains in the evidence relating to this ceramic material. This doubt is due mainly to the fact that the later arrivals were obviously the first to abandon the village and that all serviceable utensils they left behind were subsequently salvaged by those families which still clung to their ancestral home, the older or pioneer section of Pueblo Bonito.

Several of the baskets recovered from the four burial rooms are of types rarely, if ever before, recovered from prehistoric ruins other than cliff-dwellings. Shallow, elongated trays of unusually fine weave and deep, cylindrical baskets of rather coarser fabric are included in the collection. In addition, there were obtained bifurcated baskets such as have been found heretofore only in cave villages of northeastern Arizona and southeastern Utah. Three of the earthenware vessels in the season's collection simulate the general form of these two-legged affairs of unknown import.

The Expedition of 1923 uncovered a puzzling network of foundation walls on the outer northeast side of the great ruin. This series was still further exposed during the past summer and it is expected that the remaining portion will be brought to light in 1925, the final year of the Pueblo Bonito project. The fact that these interlacing walls lie buried under many feet of blown sand makes their exposure a slow and arduous task. The studies already pursued in this area suggest that these foundations were prepared, but never utilized, for a contemplated and sizable addition to the village.



FIG. 99.—Pueblo Bonito kivas are always subterranean or surrounded by walls to simulate the subterranean position required by prehistoric religious conceptions. (Photograph by O. C. Havens. Courtesy of the National Geographic Society.)



FIG. 100.—Excavating one of the major kivas of Pueblo Bonito. The flat roof of the subterranean room, 44 feet in diameter, had been supported by four wooden pillars. (Photograph by O. C. Havens. Courtesy of the National Geographic Society.)

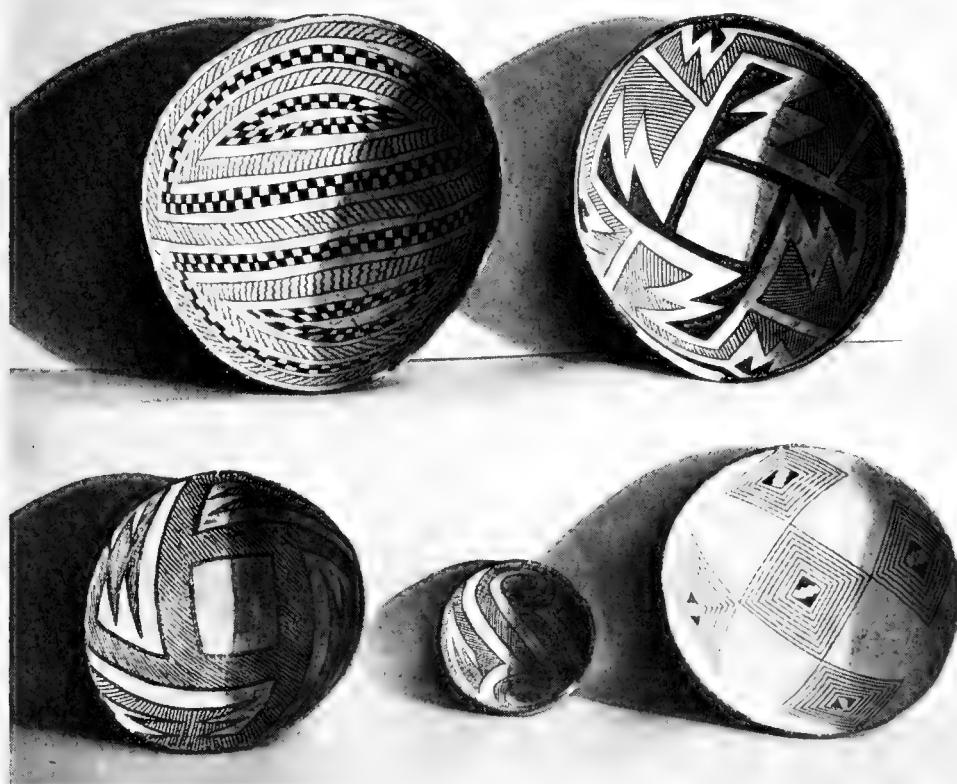


FIG. 101.—The ancient potters of Pueblo Bonito ornamented their food bowls with a wealth of geometric design. The vessel at the lower right is  $6\frac{1}{2}$  inches in diameter; others in the collection vary from 2 inches to 13 inches. (Photograph by Charles Martin. Courtesy of the National Geographic Society.)



FIG. 102.—Pitchers from prehistoric Pueblo Bonito. The duck-shaped vessel in the lower row is  $5\frac{1}{4}$  inches high. (Photograph by Charles Martin. Courtesy of the National Geographic Society.)



FIG. 103.—Cylindrical vessels bearing the hachured ornamentation characteristic of the later period of occupancy at Pueblo Bonito. The vase at the right is  $11\frac{1}{2}$  inches high. (Photograph by Charles Martin. Courtesy of the National Geographic Society.)



FIG. 104.—Water jars are among the rarest of Bonitan antiquities. These two vessels are probably related to the earlier period of occupancy for their ornamentation differs noticeably from that employed by potters of the later period. (Photograph by Charles Martin. Courtesy of the National Geographic Society.)

Among the many interesting discoveries made in 1924 is one which affords some conception of the community pride which prevailed during the heyday of Pueblo Bonito. The two principal refuse mounds, where floor sweepings and other trash was deposited, were each surrounded by stone walls. These were increased in height as the mounds grew in elevation. Their obvious purpose was to prevent scattering of ashes and light debris before the tireless canyon winds. Two flights of stone steps were later constructed over the northern wall of the east mound to facilitate access to its summit.

Other walls whose intended function remains unsolved were also exposed during the summer. One of these, at no point more than two feet high, extends in a northeasterly direction a distance of 500 feet from the outer southeast corner of the ruin.

Explorations in Pueblo Bonito were brought practically to completion by the 1924 Expedition. There remain for next year additional chronologic studies and minor excavations, the fundamental purpose of which will be to explain certain still doubtful matters of prime importance. It is already evident that Pueblo Bonito was occupied throughout a much longer period than was originally suspected. Amalgamation of the two distinct groups that comprised its later population resulted in a prehistoric village whose fame reached the remotest corner of the Southwest. During the period of its greatest affluence, Pueblo Bonito was undoubtedly a center at which representatives of many unrelated tribes met for barter and trade. Evidence has been obtained that the Bonitians engaged in commerce with primitive peoples of the Pacific Coast and even so far distant as the valley of Mexico; indeed, there seems to be no cultural area in the Southwest of comparable antiquity whose members were not attracted to Pueblo Bonito. The current explorations of the National Geographic Society, therefore, have a direct bearing upon the distribution of ancient Pueblo peoples. With a considerable portion of its unwritten history recorded; with the years of its construction determined with reasonable accuracy—a former hope that seems more and more within the realm of possibility—Pueblo Bonito is destined to become a yardstick, so to speak, by which the culture of other prehistoric southwestern ruins may be gauged. As Pueblo Bonito was the most influential village yet discovered in the Pueblo area of pre-Columbian times so is it today the most important ruin in that area—a ruin which holds the key to many secrets that have long puzzled American archeologists.

## PREHISTORIC ABORIGINAL CULTURE OF THE GULF STATES

Of the aboriginal culture areas within the boundaries of what is now the United States, there are two which, although related, are widely diverse. One of these lies in the four States, Colorado, Utah, New Mexico, and Arizona, the other formerly extended over portions of the Gulf States, Florida, Georgia, Alabama, Mississippi, Louisiana, or practically the Lower Mississippi Valley, Georgia, and Florida. In both these areas there was an aboriginal culture prehistoric and thoroughly Indian, which was on the decline when the region was first visited by white men. Each area was inhabited by Indians speaking different languages or dialects, but who had cranial similarities, like means of obtaining a food supply, related social customs, rites, and mythology. Ethnologists may have different opinions as to which culture reached the higher development, but they generally agree that we need more accurate knowledge of both to form a final judgment of their character.

The amount of scientific research that has been devoted to these two culture areas is quite unequal. The pueblo field has attracted so many investigators that they far outnumber those studying all other culture areas in the United States. Notwithstanding the fact that the archeology of the Gulf States is as attractive as that of the Pueblos, it has few votaries, possibly because the Pueblo culture has survived less changed into modern times. The prehistoric culture of the Gulf States may be termed Muskhogean, from the dominant tribe of the Creek confederacy, though it is not limited to people speaking any one language.

The southwest area has long been a favorite subject of study for members of the Bureau of American Ethnology. The Smithsonian was not only a pioneer worker in this area, but also for many years the sole investigator. Of late, however, this field has attracted many field workers and is now in good hands, producing annually many discoveries.

The southeastern area, although not wholly neglected since the epoch making work of Clarence B. Moore, is now making strong appeals for archeological investigation which have attracted members of the Bureau of American Ethnology. The Chief has inaugurated a new plan of work in this area, the first step being a determination of the aboriginal culture of Florida and an adequate diagnosis of its character and horizon. On the south and east, boundaries of the Muskhogean culture are limited by the Gulf of Mexico and the Atlantic Ocean; its extension northward and westward is more difficult to discover.

## WORK IN FLORIDA

Archeological work in Florida was begun at St. Petersburg, Tampa Bay, in the winter of 1923-1924. It was discovered that the prehistoric



FIG. 105.—View of a road on Weeden Island, St. Petersburg, Florida, showing semi-tropical vegetation. (Photograph by Beck.)

inhabitants of the Everglade region and the Florida Keys showed scant evidences of a relationship to the Muskhogean culture, but from Tampa Bay north into the other Gulf States, archeological data supported linguistic evidences of Muskhogean influences.

Following the above-mentioned plan, Weeden Mound, near St. Petersburg, was excavated by the Chief, assisted by Mr. M. W. Stirling, through the kindness of Mr. E. M. Elliott and the Boulevard and Bay Land and Development Company. These investigations, preliminary results of which were published last fall,<sup>1</sup> reveal that the culture of northern Florida was in prehistoric times different from that of southern Florida.

The character of the objects obtained from Weeden Mound, as shown in the above-mentioned pamphlet, indicates that the former inhabitants of this site were allied to the so-called Lower Creeks who once lived on the Chattahoochee and Flint rivers in Georgia. These were of the same race as the Upper Creeks, denizens of the Tallapoosa and Coosa valleys in Alabama, and as the Creeks were the most numerous representatives of Muskhogean culture they may be regarded as typical of it. The archeological relation is mainly determined by the designs on the pottery, which in the case of the ceramic objects from the Lower Creeks collected on the Chattahoochee and Flint, figured and described by Mr. Clarence B. Moore, and those from Weeden Mound are practically identical. In both localities pottery designs are outlined by pitted or perforated lines, which designs and technique occur also on pottery found at Tarpon Springs, Crystal Springs, and at various other localities northward on the west and northwest coast of Florida.

There is a similarity in mortuary practices throughout the greater part of the Muskhogean culture area which occurs also in the Weeden Mound. The actual method of burying the dead among the Upper Creeks, as shown by the Graves collection at Montgomery where the skeletons were placed in urns (figs. 112, 113), is unlike that at Weeden Island, where they were free or placed in baskets. Urn burial has not been recorded among the Lower Creeks but a secondary interment or burial of skeletons in urns after the flesh had been removed has been found in the islands on the Georgian coast. Bunched burials occur throughout the whole Muskhogean area. So far as we at present know, urn burial (fig. 114) is a localized development found in different localities in the Gulf States but the bunched secondary burial of skeletons is a general feature in this culture.

The cluster of mounds on Weeden Island near St. Petersburg is easily distinguished and its site has been lately designated Narvaez Park from the Spanish leader of the expedition in the sixteenth century that ended so disastrously. On the largest mounds of this

<sup>1</sup> Smithsonian Misc., Coll., Vol. 76, No. 13, 1924.

cluster formerly stood Mr. Weeden's house, but earlier the Indians used it as an eating place to which they brought their canoeloads of shellfish, cooked the mollusks and ate the soft parts, throwing away the shells. Mr. Weeden's old home has now been torn down and a pavilion erected on its site. Previously a trench was run into this mound but it revealed little besides shells alternating with layers of black sand, discolored by decomposed vegetable soil. A few fragments of pottery rewarded excavation in this mound but it was singularly poor in artifacts of any kind.



FIG. 106.—Flexed burial, lower layer, Weeden Island, Florida.  
(Photograph by Beck.)

The conclusions arrived at by studies of this large mound were that, while its top may have served as an observatory or even the site of a building like a chief's house, it was essentially a kitchen midden composed of rejected shells or whatever human artifacts may have been lost in it by the aborigines. Almost every village site in the Gulf States culture area has a mound larger than the rest and dominating it, which was used as the foundation of the houses of the chief or of the temple in which, in some cases, the fire was kept continually burning. Such mounds were Cahokia in East St. Louis, Mo.,

and Etowah, near Cartersville, Georgia. This dominating mound is here designated the Acropolis.

Dr. Fewkes made trial pits in various other mounds of the Weeden cluster and among other elevations found a low mound of sand in which grew a few trees and scanty plants but showed no considerable number of shells. It gave promise of a much greater reward and to it the main work was devoted through the winter and early spring of 1923-24. It was found to be a burial mound concealing numerous human skulls, much pottery, and other objects of various kinds. The most striking specimens were secondary burials of human bones, of which 440 bunches were found.

These remains followed the almost universal aboriginal burial customs among people of the Gulf States. After death the bodies were allowed to decay and the flesh removed from the skeleton by "bone pickers" after which the large bones and crania, done up in bundles, were in due time placed in heaps and covered with earth, forming a mound over a dune of coral sand.

According to contemporary writers, one custom of the ancients in preparing the "bundles" for burial after flesh had been removed was to paint the skulls with vermillion. Dr. Fewkes verified this custom at Weeden Mound, for he found the paint, now in some instances dry dust, and readily removed from the bones with a brush. The skeletal material was in a very fragile condition and fell to pieces almost at the least touch.

It was noticed that a cross section of the mound exposed by a trench through it, revealed a stratification composed of two marked layers of finest sand through which are darker narrow seams of black or dark brown color. The difference between these layers is mainly indicated not by the color but by the contained pottery. The upper layer is capped by a thin superficial covering of sand which represents the modern deposit. Below it is the thick upper stratum in which were found specimens of decorated pottery, either in fragments or whole pieces, the latter in one or two instances cached. Two views of a fine bowl are shown in figure 108, *a* and *b*. The whole pieces are invariably artificially pierced by an irregular opening in the bottom by which the bowl or jar was "killed," evidently to allow the escape of the breath body or life of the bowl. In a lower layer, the pottery is coarse, undecorated, and scattered. It contained also a few implements and utensils made of shell. It would appear that the lower layer was used as the burial place of the archaic Floridian

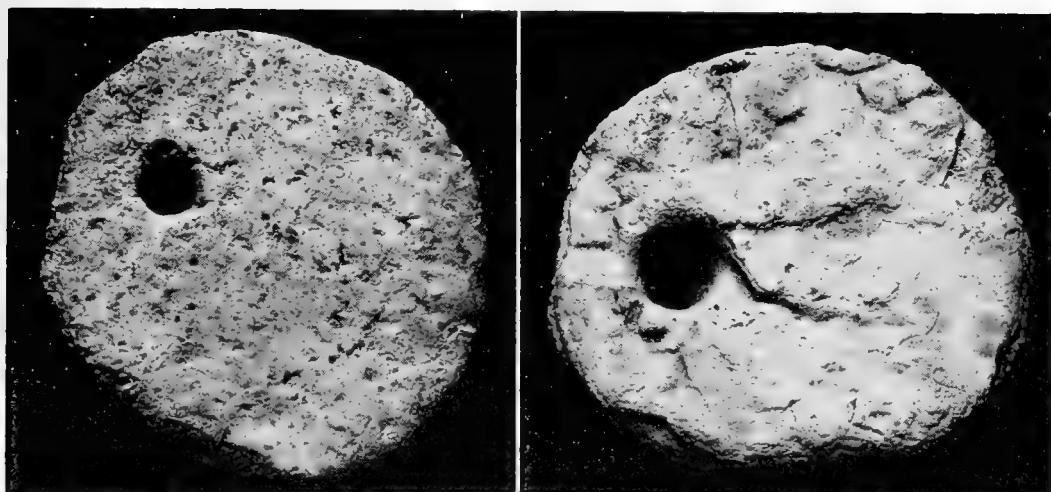


FIG. 107.—Circular stone disk with eccentric perforation, popularly called an anchor, presented by Mr. and Mrs. Griner, Caxambas, Florida.



FIG. 108.—Two views of bowl with incised and relief decoration, from Weeden Island, St. Petersburg, Florida. Restored from fragments.

(a) Shows conventionalized figure of a bird.  
(b) Figure on side at right angles to a.

people and from its general facies Dr. Fewkes allies it with the lower layer that has been recorded in Cuban and other West Indian Islands.

Only in rare instances is the pottery of the upper stratum painted, but almost every fragment is decorated with designs whose outlines consist mostly of rows of pits, in rare instances accompanied with relief decorations (fig. 108). Little resemblance appears in the designs on the decorated pottery from Weeden Island to those on the pottery of the Tainan inhabitants of the West Indies, but the likeness of utensils from the lower layers on these islands and on the peninsula of Florida is striking.

Dr. Fewkes found no specimens of European provenience in the Florida mound half excavated by him at St. Petersburg, which indicates that the village sites were pre-Columbian. A food bowl of coarse, undecorated black ware was found on top of the lower layer and probably is a survival of the archaic population.

From the designs depicted on the pottery in the upper layer at Weeden Mound and comparison with that described from mounds on the Chattahoochee and Flint rivers of Georgia and other Gulf States, Dr. Fewkes regards this pottery as not only characteristic but as belonging to the highest type of ceramics in the Muskhogean culture area.

#### WORK IN ALABAMA AND TENNESSEE

When the Wilson dam over Tennessee River at Muscle Shoals, northern Alabama, is finished, the back water of the river will flood a considerable section of its banks, covering several prehistoric mounds and permanently concealing them. In order to rescue a typical collection from these mounds before their submergence, the Bureau allotted to Mr. Gerard Fowke a small sum of money for the excavation of a kitchen midden and sand mound at the mouth of Town Creek, a few miles from Courtland. In the sand mound Mr. Fowke found human burials and accompanying mortuary objects. The most important discovery at this mound consisted of three rare copper reel gorgets, only a few of which have thus far been found.

On his trip to Muscle Shoals to inspect the work, Dr. Fewkes found several typical mounds higher up on the river banks which would well repay excavation. The largest of these (fig. 110), which is here called the Acropolis, was the foundation of a sun-fire temple. It lies in full sight of the Florence-Sheffield road and has long been a landmark, as it is probably one of the highest mounds in the Valley of the Tennessee. The present owner of this mound is thoroughly

alive to its value as an asset to the two cities, Florence and Sheffield, and has opposed efforts to cart it away for roads. Its value as a

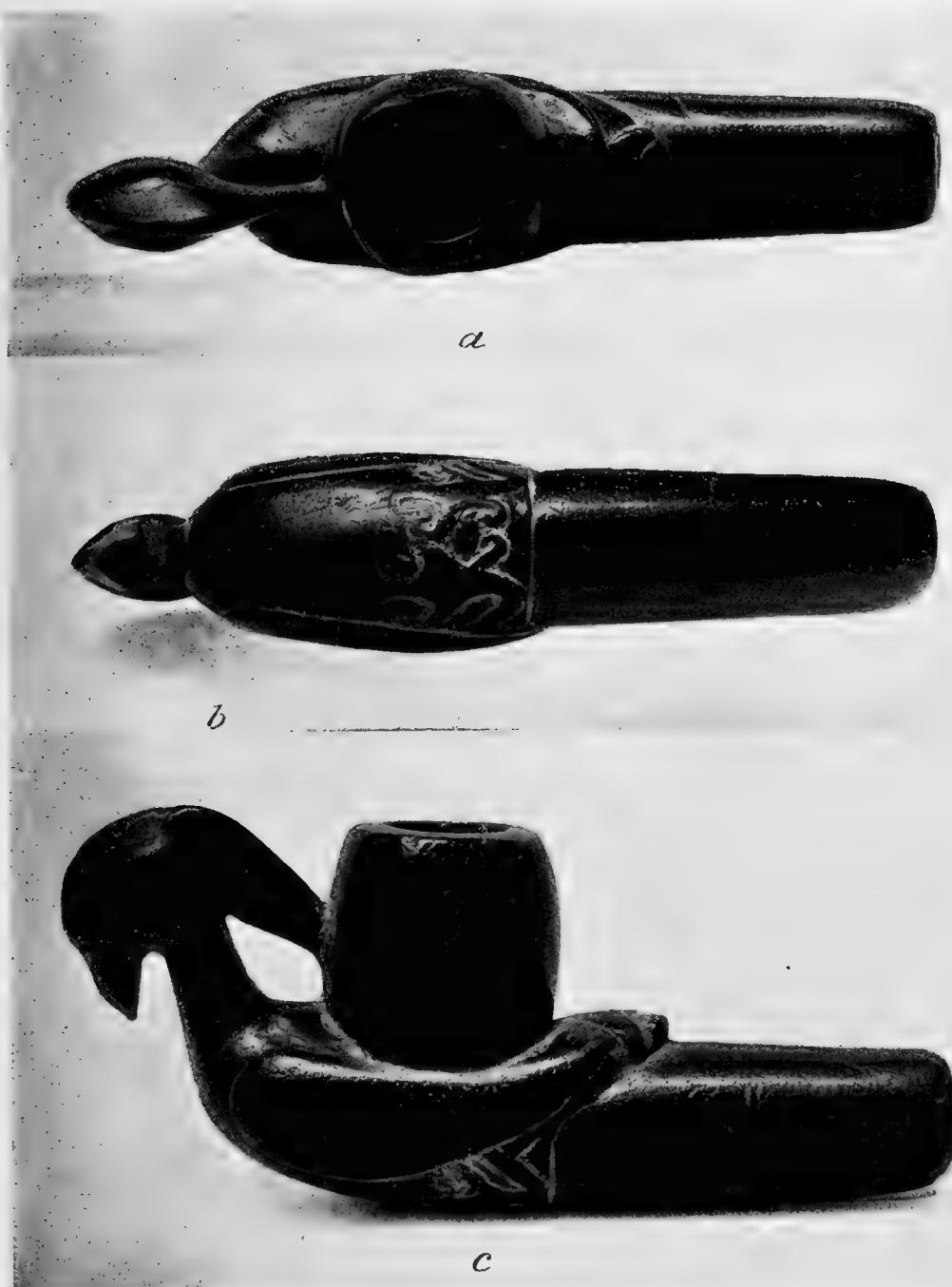


FIG. 109.—Steatite pipe, found by Weil Harris near Hyde's Ferry, on Cumberland River, about seven miles below Nashville.

- (a) From above. Length 10".
- (b) From below. Width  $2\frac{1}{4}$ ".
- (c) Side view. Height  $2\frac{1}{4}$ ".

landmark is much greater than the value of the contents for building causeways or roads.



FIG. 110.—Large mound on side of road between Sheffield and Florence, Alabama.

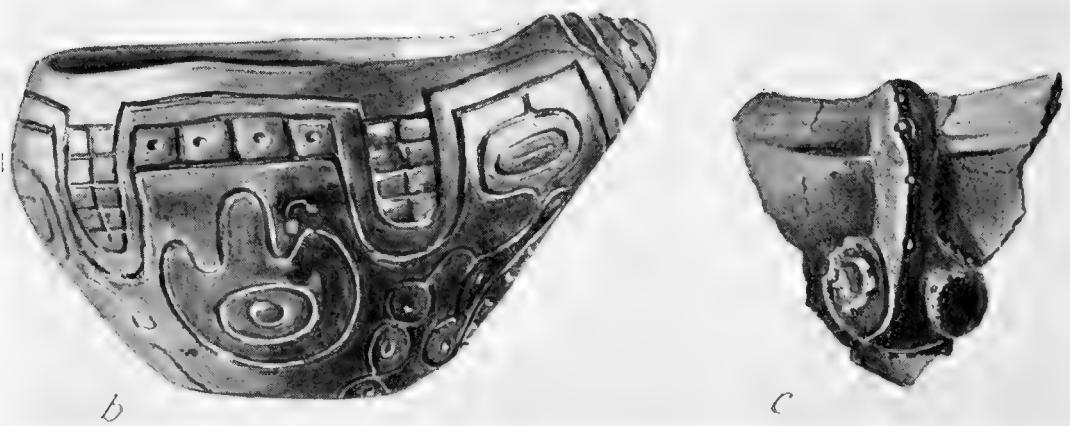


FIG. 111.—(b) From photograph of a Catawba bowl in collection of Wm. T. Thackston, Greenville, S. C. Published by permission of owner. (c) Raised figure on pottery fragment from Weeden Island, Florida.

Dr. Fewkes visited the battlefield at Shiloh and inspected the remains of an aboriginal village now indicated by mounds. The beautiful pipe excavated years ago from one of these elevations he regards as the finest art product of the old Muskhogean culture. Four life size illustrations of this pipe, from *Records of the Past*, July, 1902, represent a kneeling human figure, black in color, whereas the original color is brown.

The shell mound at Town Creek yielded many specimens but they indicate a lower cultural condition than the village cluster on the Shiloh battlefield, as might be inferred from the character of the food supply.

In November Dr. Fewkes made a trip to Montgomery, Alabama, in order to locate prehistoric mounds and study the collections made near that city. He also desired to familiarize himself with the energetic work of the Alabama Anthropological Society. The visit was brief but he enjoyed the privilege of inspecting several collections of antiquities and was guided to several mounds by Mr. Peter A. Brannon, President of the Society, and other members, to whom he owes many thanks.

Montgomery is situated near the heart of the Upper Creek country and the collections of aboriginal objects made in the neighborhood of that city contain several unique Indian objects not yet described. Among these may be mentioned the burial urns of the Graves collection. Figures 112-114, published by permission of Mr. Graves, show a number of these bowls, vases, and jars used in urn burial. After death the flesh was allowed to decay and, having been removed, the bones were put in a deep vase and covered with a flat food bowl that was ultimately inhumated. The cemetery where these urns occur was situated in a corn field in which was a circular saucer like depression called by the negroes an "Indian talk house," evidently an ancient council house. An excavation of this subterranean room would probably yield what is much needed, a knowledge of architectural details as well as archeological treasures. While several of these urn burial vessels are rude undecorated pottery, there are others whose surface was incised with ornamental designs of a geometrical form. As a rule this pottery is inferior to that found at Weeden Island or on the Black Warrior River. Mr. Graves' collection also contains several unpublished shell disks decorated with finely incised naturalistic designs which are characteristic of early Creek symbolism.

On his visit in Montgomery, Dr. Fewkes was enabled to make several excursions to numerous prehistoric village sites. Among the

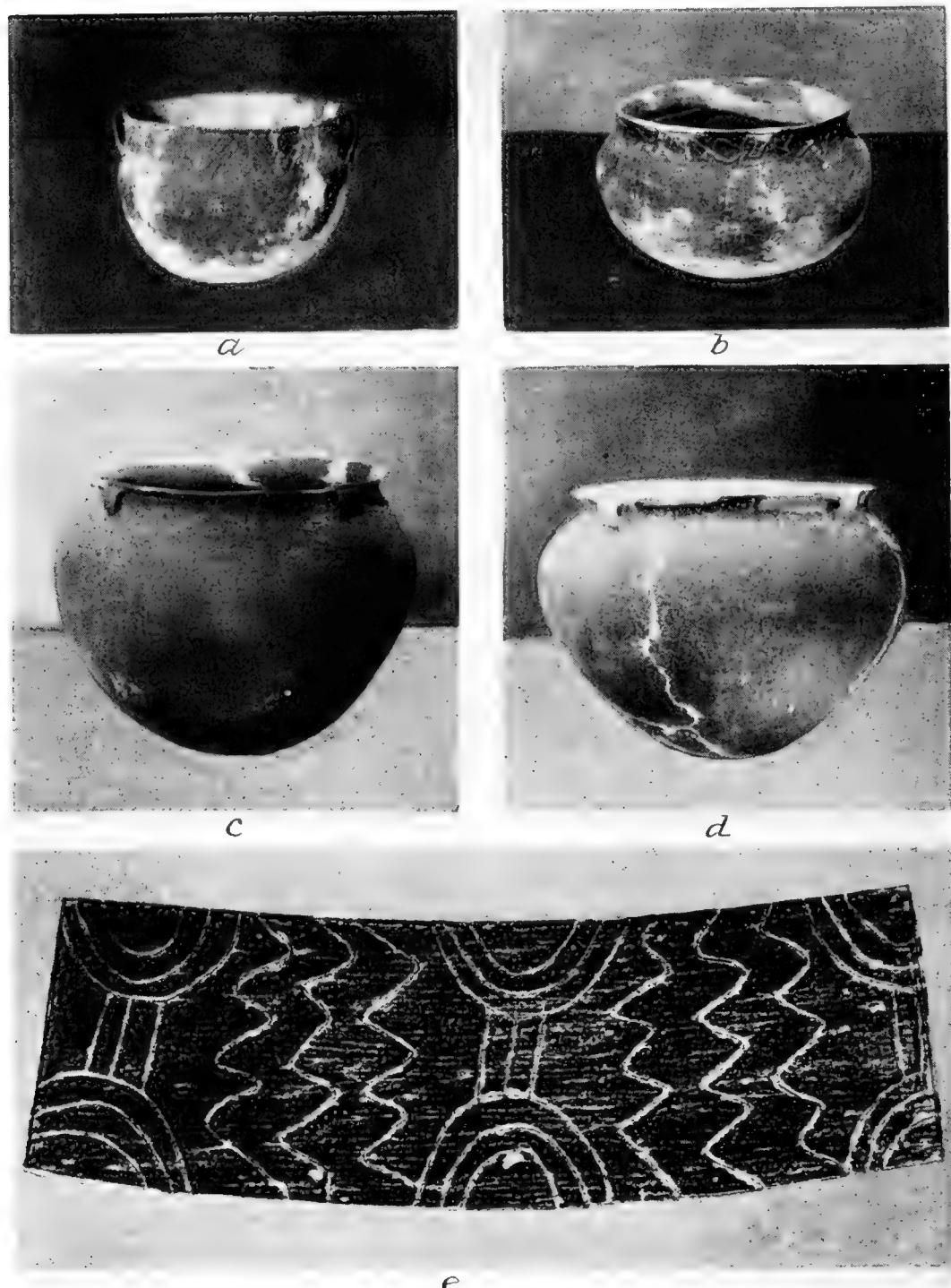


FIG. 112.—Burial urns from Pintlala Cemetery, Lowndes County, Alabama.

- (a) From Cemetery, Cowles Lake, Elmore Co., Ala. Tuckbathie Bend, Tallapoosa River. Diam. 12" x 8". Inverted over chest of human skeleton. Graves collection.
- (b) Collected by E. M. Graves and Dr. R. P. Burke. Diam. 12" x 7". Found 30" below surface, inverted over knees of human skeleton.
- (c) Collected by E. M. Graves and Dr. R. P. Burke. Urn 18 $\frac{3}{4}$ " x 13". Inverted when found; full of ashes and bones showing influence of fire. Side of jawbone of carnivorous animal. Possibly cremation. Buried 36" under surface. Graves Collection.
- (d) Urn from Graves Collection.
- (e) Design on cover rim.

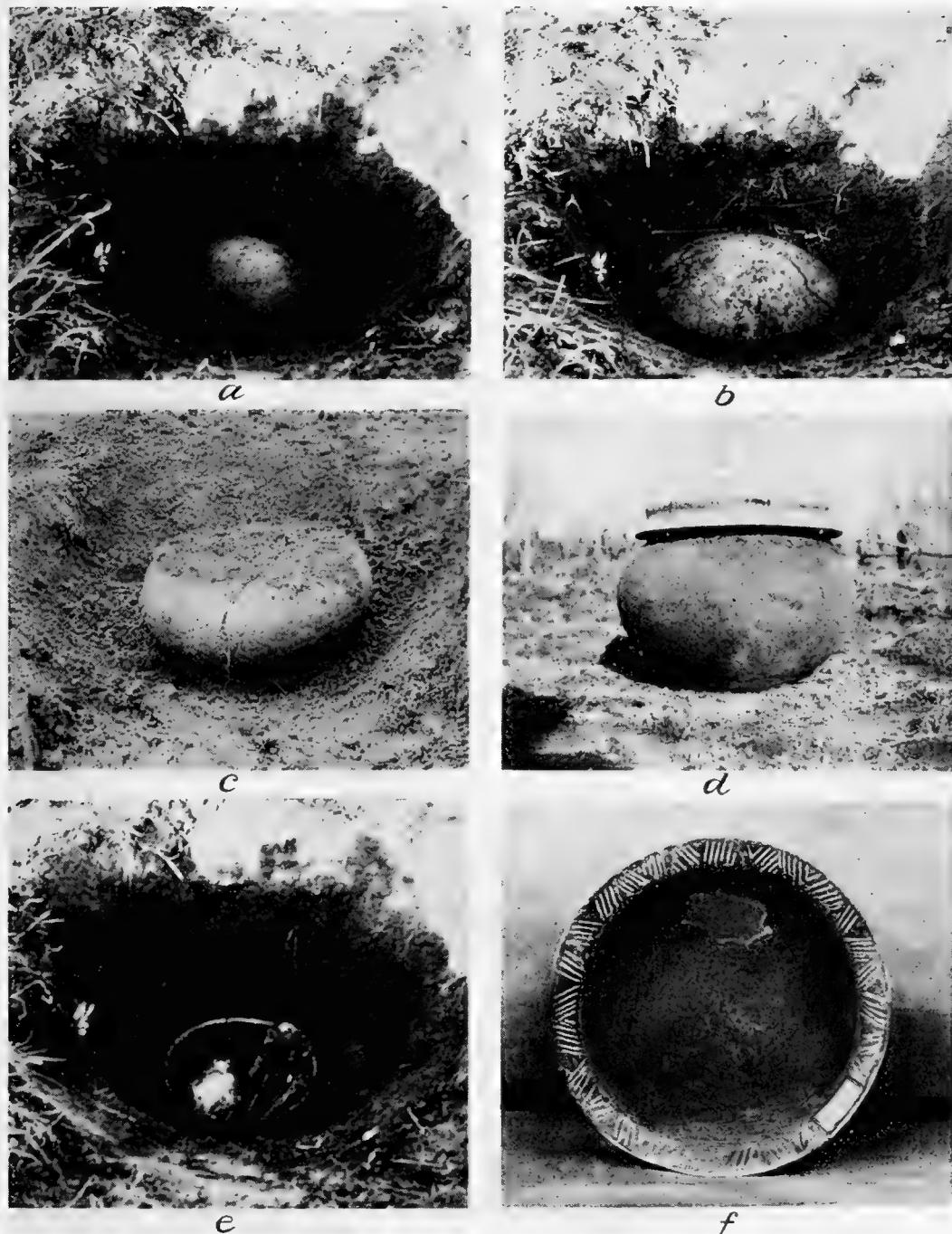


FIG. 113.—Burial urns from Pintlala Cemetery, Lowndes County, Alabama.

- (a) Diameter 20" x 14". Contents, two adults and one adolescent. Buried 36" to 40" deep. Double cover. Eagerton Collection.
- (b) Same as (a).
- (c) Collected by E. M. Graves and Dr. R. P. Burke. Diameter of urn 24" x 14"; covered by broken fragments of pottery. Contents, traces of child's skeleton, charcoal and ashes. Brannon Collection.
- (d) Collected by E. M. Graves and Dr. R. P. Burke. Diameter of urn 18" x 6"; diameter of cover 15". Contains fragments of child's skeleton and 12 beads. Burke Collection.
- (e) Burial urn with bones.
- (f) Cover of urn (fig. d) with incised decoration on rim.

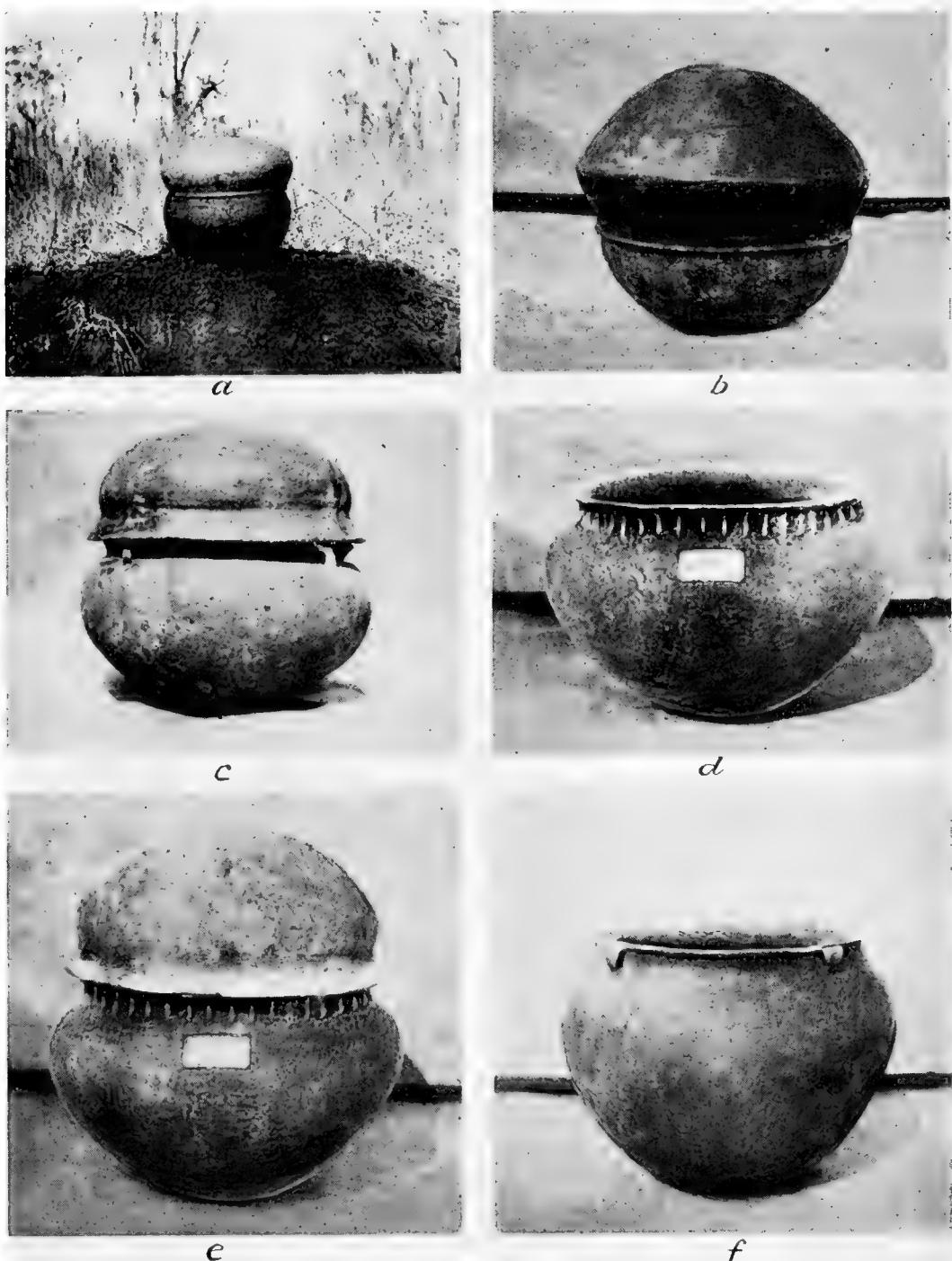


FIG. 114.—Burial urns from Pintlala Cemetery, Lowndes County, Alabama. (a) and (c) collected by E. M. Graves and R. P. Eagerton, Graves' collection; (b) and (d) collected by E. M. Graves and Dr. R. P. Burke, Burke collection.

- (a) Diameter 14" x 10"; cover 14 $\frac{1}{4}$ " x 6". Contents, fragments of child's skeleton.
- (b) Diameter 12" x 7"; cover 14 $\frac{1}{4}$ " x 6". Contents, remains of small infant. Buried two feet deep.
- (c) Diameter of urn 15" x 10"; cover 14" x 6". Contents, child's skeleton; associated with it, shell gorget and clay image of a woman 5 $\frac{1}{2}$ " high.
- (d) Diameter 14" x 10"; cover 14" x 6". Contents, part of skeleton of adult. Lower vessel has columnar ridges on neck.
- (e) Plowed up by Dock Groves, who gave it to Chas. and Ed. Hinderer, who later presented it to E. M. Graves. Contents, remains of two adults, one child.
- (f) Urn with four handles.

most interesting was to the site of old Tuskegee and Fort Toulouse where William Weatherford surrendered to General Jackson at the close of the Creek war. The Indian settlement, Tuskegee, was most picturesquely situated at the junction of the Coosa and Tallapoosa rivers, together forming the Alabama River. Several other mounds situated near Montgomery were visited, including one at the ford where it is claimed De Soto crossed the Tallapoosa.

Dr. Fewkes examined several Indian sites and mounds of size near Nashville and Lebanon under guidance of Mr. P. E. Cox, State Archeologist of Tennessee. The most instructive were large mounds near which are stone walled graves that had never been opened. The excavation of one of these is now being made by the Bureau under supervision of the Chief. At Lebanon a rare form of bird-pipe made of steatite shown in the accompanying figure (fig. 109) was purchased for the Museum. The large mound at Lebanon is situated in a corn field and surrounded by a low embankment of earth and accompanying moat, indicating a fortification. The most remarkable object seen on the visit to this mound is the stone idol shown in figure 116. This idol was ploughed up a short distance from the base of the mound, suggesting that the elevation was formerly a temple or house of a chief, upon which it once stood.

In a determination of the Muskhogean culture area as fixed by the archeologist, we find traces of it in South Carolina, somewhat modified on account of the peripheral situation. Although little is known of the prehistoric pottery of South Carolina, Dr. Fewkes has obtained a photograph of a bowl (fig. 111) owned by Mr. Wm. J. Thackston, Jr., which is supposed to be ancient Catawba ware and shows Muskhogean influence. Dr. Fewkes examined several fine bowls of this ware decorated with figures of the sun and winged or plumed serpent, often conventionalized into incised geometric designs. These clearly indicate sun worship, a pronounced feature of the Muskhogean culture. The design on this Catawba bowl suggests parts of a highly conventionalized serpent.

A most instructive excursion near Montgomery was a visit to the Pintlala Creek cemetery in Lowndes County, Alabama, where the burial urns collection was found. These urns have been figured and described by Mr. Graves in *Arrow Points*, Vol. 6, No. 8. Additional figures of burial urns from islands off the Georgia coast and elsewhere have been given by Mr. C. B. Moore who has treated the subject of urn burials in a special article.

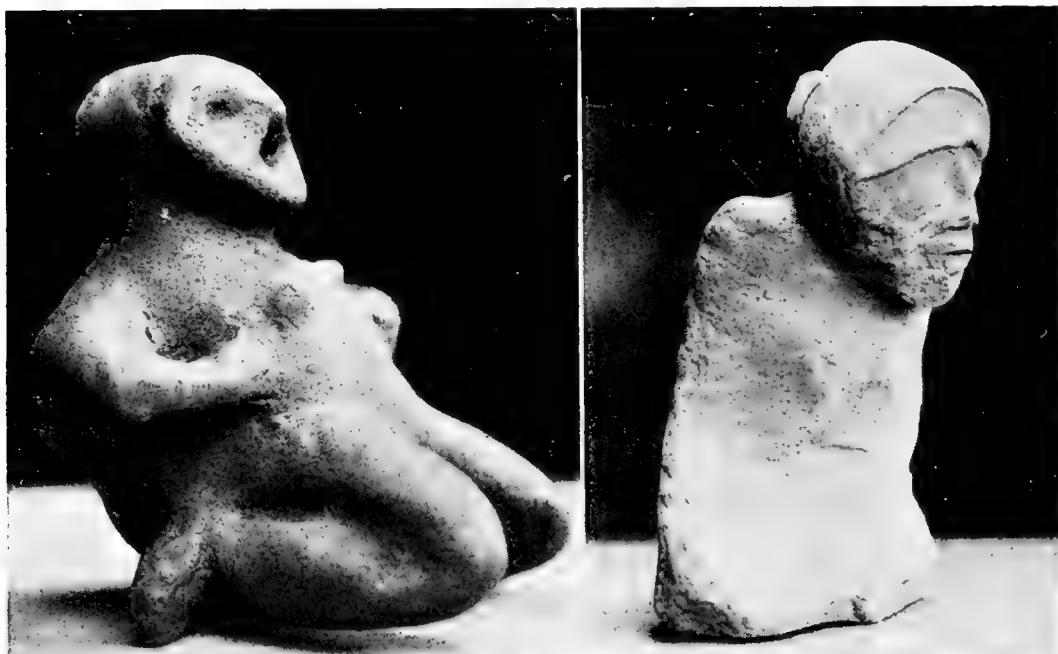


FIG. 115.—Pottery idol found with urn (c), fig. 114. Collection E. M. Graves, Montgomery, Alabama. Height,  $5\frac{1}{2}$  inches.

FIG. 116.—Stone idol found at the base of a large mound near Lebanon, Tennessee, by Mr. Ray Sellars. A photograph of the specimen published by permission of owner.



FIG. 117.—Excavators at work on shell mound at mouth of Town Creek, near Muscle Shoals, Colbert County, Alabama.

Although the visits of Dr. Fewkes to Tennessee and Alabama were much limited in time they have called attention to one or two instructive problems which await new observations for solution. Urn burial appears not to have been mentioned in the extended accounts of mortuary customs found in early documentary and historical descrip-



FIG. 118.—Prehistoric objects from Kittitas County, Washington.

- (a) Pipe. Length  $1\frac{7}{8}$ "; diameter  $\frac{3}{4}$ ".
- (b) Enlarged incised decoration of pipe (a).
- (c) Stone pipe. Length  $4\frac{1}{2}$ "; diam.  $\frac{3}{4}$ ". Diam. of ferrule at one end  $1\frac{1}{8}$ ".
- (d) Carved bone ornament or implement. Length  $6\frac{1}{2}$ ". Diam. at wide end 1".

tion of the Creeks. We know the bunched skeletons were placed in baskets for the bone house and later removed and buried in mounds, and may readily suppose the urn took the place of the basket, but are we justified in this supposition? Furthermore, as urn burial is not the common method of disposal of the dead, this exceptional custom

may have been used only for chiefs or priests. If so we have an explanation of its occurrence around the council houses. A large number of infants were buried in urns.

It seems evident that there were local differences in artifacts, especially ceramic symbols, in different localities or areas dominated by the Muskhogean culture which may be a parallelism with what occurs in the pueblo region, but this means renewed field-work to discover the ceramic facies of each area of population in the Gulf States.

The relation of the Muskhogean and Pueblo areas calls for archeological work west of the Mississippi along the Red River where many mounds have been reported. Until knowledge of the archeology of this area is more exact, theories of the relationship of these two culture areas to each other and of both to Old Mexico are futile.

During the past year Dr. Fewkes has received from the State of Washington two characteristic straight tube pipes of a variety which is interesting in a comparative way in studying the large steatite pipe collected by him at Lebanon, Tennessee. With the same collection came also an engraved bone object of unknown use. These objects are shown in figure 118.

#### REPAIR OF MUMMY CAVE TOWER IN THE CANYON DEL MUERTO, ARIZONA

During the past year, Mr. Earl H. Morris, at the request of the Chief of the Bureau, did some necessary repair work on the famous Tower of the Mummy Cave House in the Canyon del Muerto. This tower is approximately 30 feet high, and 11 feet 3 inches wide, and once contained three rooms. All woodwork on the first ceiling has been torn out, only the haggled ends of a few of the supports remaining embedded in the walls.

The cleanly peeled poles which supported the second ceiling are in place, and the third ceiling—or roof—is intact, presumably because of the difficulty which would have attended its removal.

Covering the supporting poles, there is a closely-laid layer of peeled willows. Probably it is one of the most handsome ceilings remaining in any ruin in the Southwest, its only rivals being the coverings of one or two rooms in the north side of Pueblo Bonito.

For an unknown length of time the Tower has been in a dangerous condition, due principally to its undermining by the elements. Originally there was a retaining wall rising from the very brink of the

ledge in front which held in place the fill of loose rock and refuse upon which the House of the Tower stands. Eventually all but the eastern end of this wall collapsed—probably because of the insecure foundation afforded by the abruptly sloping rock, and much of the material behind it poured down over the cliff. As time went on, the not infrequent winds which sweep past the cave with unbelievable



FIG. 119.—Tower from the west. New retaining wall at lower right-hand.

force whipped out the dust and smaller particles of rock until the southwest corner of the Tower was undermined more than three feet and the wall thence eastward almost to the opposite corner to a lesser degree.

As the Tower stood in the fall of 1924, the east wall was firm and secure, being bedded on the ledge to within  $1\frac{1}{2}$  feet of its outer end.

The west wall had settled considerably, more toward the outer end than near the cliff, and at the top the wall had leaned away from the latter fully eight inches. The front wall had split away from the west wall, and the entire southeast corner had fallen except for a short distance at the very top. Evidently the upper half of this corner had come down since Mindeleff made his report of the site (16th Annual Report, Bur. Am. Ethn., p. 114).

As for the cracks in the west wall, they were noticeably wider in November, 1924, than they were a year previous. The condition of the unconsolidated mass beneath the front wall was such that the removal of half a dozen shovelfuls of earth would have loosened the large block just beyond its western end, the temporary wedging of which, alone, had prevented the entire collapse of the masonry. In addition to the periodic action of the wind, each visitor who passed from the eastern to the western part of the cave detached a portion of the loose mass below the wall farther down the slope, and sent clods and pebbles rattling over the cliff. Thus before many years it was inevitable that the block would have been loosened, and the Tower would have gone down to its destruction. Hence it was considered that the first remedial effort should be centered upon providing a secure foundation for the ancient masonry.

To this end Mr. Morris and his party devoted November 11 to 14, inclusive. The force consisted of three white men and six Indians, with a seventh on the last day. There was no difficulty in obtaining stone, as plenty of it from fallen walls was strewn down the slope at the west end of the eastern section of the cave. Satisfactory adobe was found only in the stream bed several hundred yards away. Owing to the arduous climb, the Indians were scarcely able to provide enough material to keep the masons busy. During the five days, buttresses were built beneath and enclosing the large blocks under the west end of the Tower, and under the undermined portion of the latter, continuing back to the limit of undermining, and extending well forward of the masonry. At the junction of the two, wedges were driven to knit the new work firmly to the old. From the east end of the buttress a retaining wall was built to connect with the remnant of the old one on the brink of the ledge, and the space behind it was filled, thus providing a platform instead of the former steep slope at the southeast corner of the Tower.

The total length of walls built was  $26\frac{1}{2}$  feet, and their average height was  $4\frac{1}{2}$  feet. The thickness of the buttresses varied with the space they were to occupy. From a minimum of  $1\frac{1}{2}$  feet, they ranged to a



FIG. 120.—Looking west along the Tower at the beginning of repair.

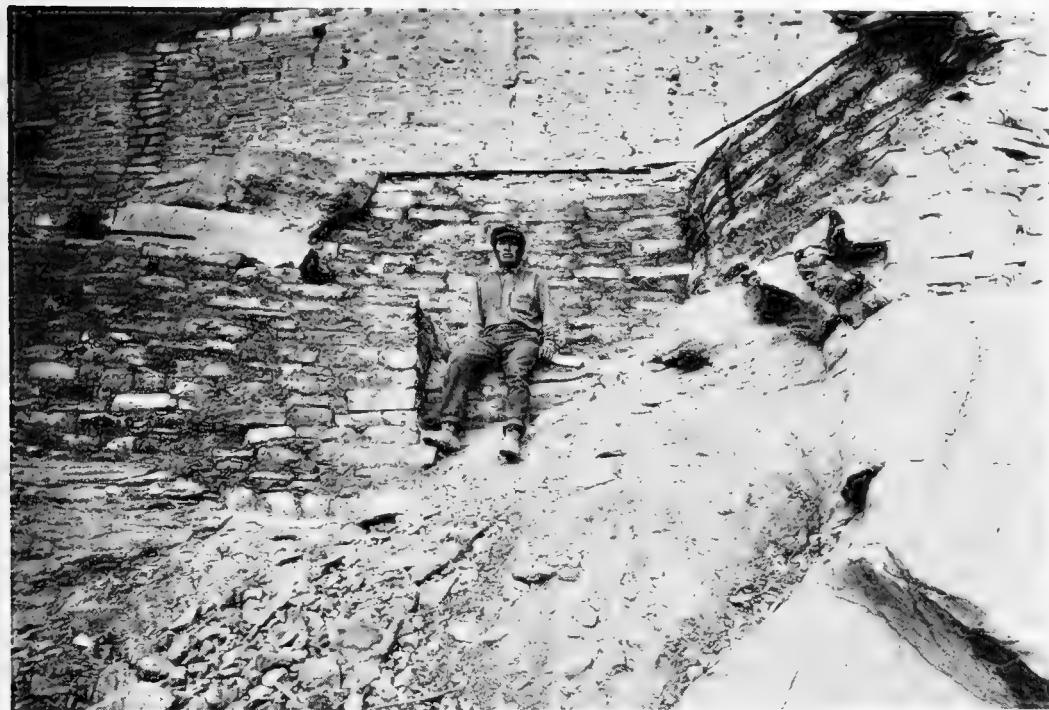


FIG. 121.—New foundation of Tower from in front. All masonry below dark lines is portion of repair work.

maximum thickness of 5 feet at the point where the wall was most deeply undermined. In bedding the masonry, the ledge was swept free from dust, and where it sloped abruptly it was chipped away to provide a secure attachment of wall to cliff.

It was Mr. Morris' original idea to use cement instead of adobe for mortar. However, it was found possible to obtain the same quality of clay used by the original builders, which is as hard as brick when dry, and it was decided to use this material, thus avoiding the expense of freighting cement from Gallup, New Mexico, 100 miles distant.

Although the foundation placed beneath the Tower should remove all danger from settling, other protective measures would be highly desirable. The front wall was not perpendicular when constructed. Up to the level of the second ceiling it sloped slightly outward, and thence upward leaned toward the cliff. Since it has parted from both side walls, the maximum strain falls at the point of greatest protuberance. Gravity, augmented by the tendency of high winds to produce a swaying motion, might cause the wall to buckle at the point of greatest stress and to topple outward. Rods with turnbuckles, anchored in the cliff with expansion belts and passing through plates on the outer side of the masonry, would prevent failure of this nature. It was hoped that these could be installed within the limits of the amount expended for protection in 1924, but this was not possible. In addition to the placing of the rods, the Tower should be further strengthened by the rebuilding of the southeast corner and its careful bonding to both the front and east walls. It is to be hoped that provision for this work can be made in the near future; for the Tower, which is one of the finest gems of aboriginal architecture in the entire Southwest, thus treated, would be preserved beyond doubt or question for centuries to come.

Besides the partial repair of the Tower, a breach was filled farther along the wall which continues westward therefrom, and a foundation was built beneath the high front wall of a room near the western end of the east cave.

#### STUDIES ON THE TULE INDIANS OF PANAMA ETHNOLOGICAL AND LINGUISTIC STUDIES

The bringing of a party of eight Tule Indians from Panama to Washington in the middle of October by R. O. Marsh, mining engineer and explorer, has afforded J. P. Harrington, ethnologist of the Bureau of American Ethnology, the opportunity to make an

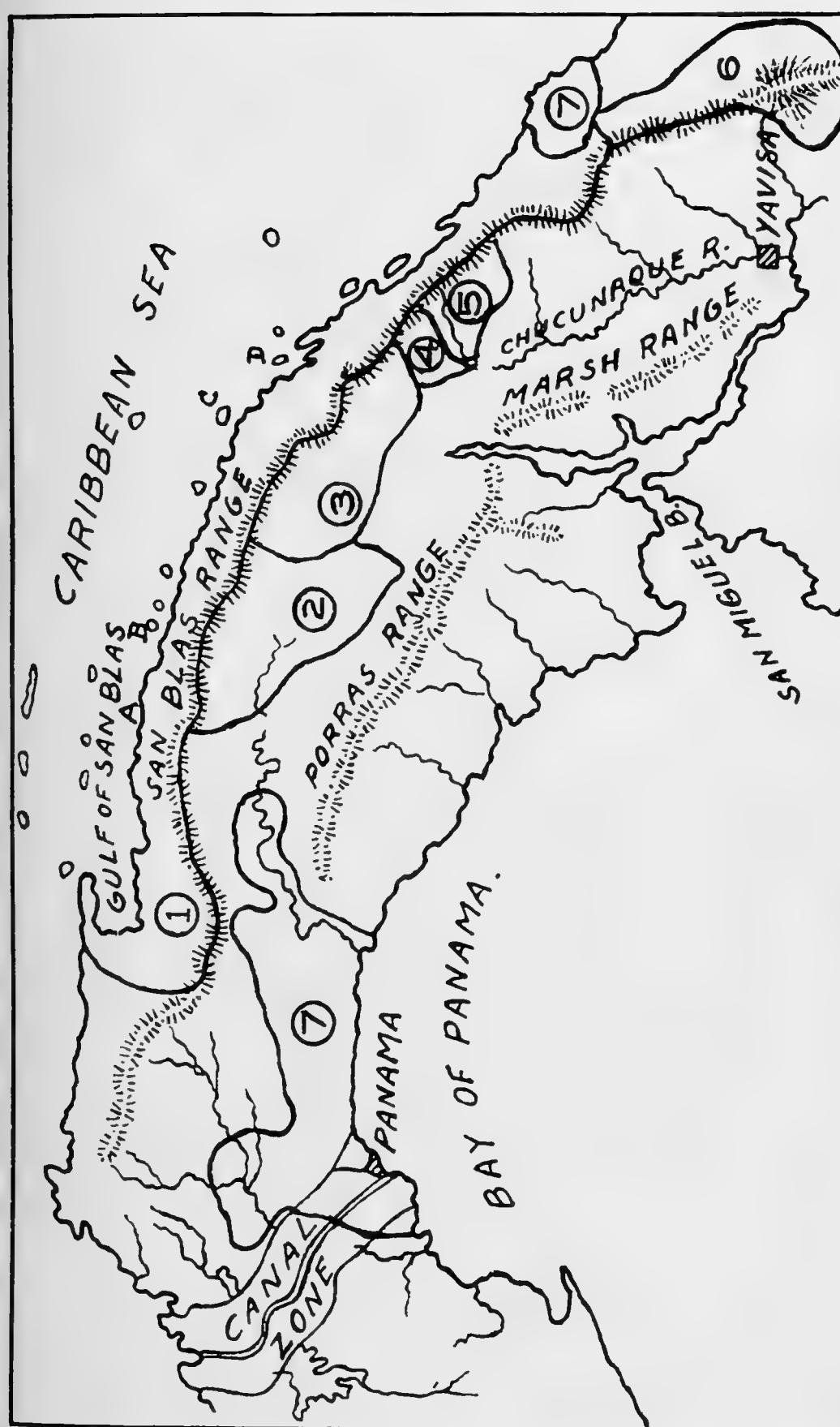


FIG. 122.—Map showing the tribal divisions of the Tule Indians of Panama. (1) Costeño, or Coast Tule. (2) Madungandidola, headwaters of Rio Bayano. (3) Wala. (4) Mardidola, headwaters of Rio Chucunaque. (5) Inakunahile, or Mountain Cuna. (6) Agridola, about Tacarcuna Mountain and at headwaters of Rio Tanela and Rio Arquia. (7) Negroid population. A. Yantuppu island. B. Tigandikki island. C. Agligandi island. D. Ustuppu Island.

extensive study of the ethnology and language of this little known tribe, said to number some 50,000 souls.

The Tule Indians, also known as Cunas, Comogres, and San Blaseños, live along the Caribbean coast of Panama from Murru (San Blas Point) to Armila (Port Obaldia), a distance of 120 miles. They still have their own tribal government from Kwibgandi to Cacardía, a strip of coast 30 miles in length. They formerly held the coast from the region of Eskarban (Port Escribanos), 15 miles west of San Blas Point, to include the delta region of the Rio Atrato, a strip of coast 220 miles long. The tribe also holds the San Blas range, which parallels the coast at a distance varying from 5 to 20 miles, from San Blas Point to the region about Tacarcuna Mountain, including portions of the Pacific slope of the range. The linguistically related Coiba held the isthmus to the west, including Colon and Panama. The linguistic stock to the south was the Chocó Indians, who now inhabit much of the Savana, Chucunaque and Tuira river drainages.

The tribe, according to the informants, is divided into six sections as shown on the accompanying map (fig. 122.) The Negroid population is closing in on the Indians and will soon work their extinction.

The Tule language has, with the Chocó, the distinction of being the most southerly Indian language of North America, and with the Huaimi of Panama that of extending from the Atlantic to the Pacific coast.

The informants are: (1) James Perry, Alice Perry and Margarita Campos from Yantuppu (A of map), a small island in front of Nargana, 22 miles east of San Blas Point; (2) Niga (Felipe) from Tigandikki island (B of map), 31 miles east of San Blas Point; (3) Igwa Nigdibippi, who is chief over 20 islands, and Olo Piniginya from Agligandi island (C of map), 64 miles east of San Blas Point; (4) Alfred Robinson and Tcippu from Ustuppu island (D of map), 71 miles east of San Blas Point. Alfred's father is Nele, chief of the island.

Three of the party, Margarita, Olo and Tcippu, are examples of Ibegwa or White Indians, of whom Wafer writes in 1699: "There is one complexion so singular among a sort of people of this country, that I never saw or heard of any like them in any part of the world. They are white and there are of them of both sexes. Their skins are not of such a white as those of fair people among Europeans, but 'tis of a milk white, lighter than the color of any Europeans, and much like that of a white horse. For there is this further remarkable

in them, that their bodies are beset all over with a fine short milkwhite down, which adds to the whiteness of their skins. They are not a distinct race by themselves but now and then one is bred of the coppercolored father and mother." The little island of Ustuppu has ten of these White Indians on it.

The Tule say that their ancestors used to live around the base of Tacarcuna Mountain, west of the mouth of the Rio Atrato, the highest peak in their territory, and that they spread from there up the San Blas range and coast. It was at that mountain that God, Olokkuppilele, created the Indians.

The language exceeds in softness and beauty the melodious Castilian. It has no sounds that do not occur in English. Its sounds are only 17 in number, a e i o u g ñ d c s l r n b m w y. These occur single or double, as in Finnish, thus securing the required number of syllables for the formation of words; *e. g.*, kwālu, potato, but kwallu, grease.

The Indians know hundreds of place-names of the coast and mountains. Chief Igwa has prepared a large map showing these places.

The large collection presented by Mr. Marsh to the National Museum has afforded unusual opportunity for investigation of material culture. The sociology and religion of the Indians have formed fruitful fields of study. To assist the work the Dictaphone Corporation has installed machines for recording texts and songs.

The vocabulary comprises names of places, persons, parts of the body, sociological terms and other data. Dictaphone records of extended discourse have been made which will serve as the basis for further study of the language.

In 1914 Mr. Harrington made a six weeks study of this language at the Southwest Museum in Los Angeles, California, the informant being a Tule boy who was brought from Panama Harbor to San Pedro on a private yacht. This work was conducted through the kind interest of Dr. Hector Alliot, then director of the museum.

#### STUDY OF THE TULE INDIAN MUSIC

A remarkable opportunity for the study of primitive music was afforded by the presence in Washington of a group of Tule Indians from the Province of Colon, in Panama. This study was made by Miss Frances Densmore. The Indians were brought to the United States by Mr. R. O. Marsh and became known as "white Indians" because of the fair skin of certain individuals. A frequent occurrence

of fair-skinned individuals in this tribe was noted by Wafer, who wrote concerning them in 1699. It is not unusual for parents of normal Indian coloring to have children with skin of a peculiar milky whiteness, blue eyes and pale yellow hair, the skin, in many instances, showing irregular blotches of light brown. A family may contain both dark and fair children. The group brought by Mr. Marsh comprised five adults, all of whom were dark in color, and three children who were fair. The study of their music was carried on entirely with the adult members of the group during November and December, 1924, and was made possible by the courtesy of Mr. Marsh.

#### VOCAL MUSIC

Among the Tule Indians brought to the United States was a chief named Igwa Nigdibippi who had made a special study of the tribal songs. If he were a member of our own race he would be termed a man of practical intelligence and artistic culture. The head chief of the Tule is an old man, and on his death Igwa may be elected as his successor. In view of this possibility Igwa is cultivating his knowledge of the geography of the region with its irregular coast line and hundreds of islands and "keys." He draws maps which show the location of the villages, indicating the approximate number of inhabitants in each. His care and ability in this work added weight to his statements concerning the music of his people, who do not adopt any songs from neighboring tribes but maintain their own musical customs. Associated with him in giving information were James Perry and his wife, Alice Perry, and Alfred Robinson who acted as interpreter. These three did not give the Indian names by which they are known at home, and the names here presented have been recently acquired. The recording of the songs was done entirely by the chief, a dictaphone being used for that purpose.

The singing tone used by the Tule chief was somewhat different from that used by the Indians of North America. It was even more artificial, with a "pinched," forced quality not particularly pleasing to the ear and impossible to describe in an accurate manner. The Tule songs are without instrumental accompaniment in our use of that term. The flute and rattle are sometimes played while the people sing and dance, and the singers sometimes clap their hands, but the flute and rattle do not seem to have either a melodic or a rhythmic relation to the song. No form of accompaniment was desired when the songs were being recorded and it was said that the voice was entirely alone in the "songs with stories." The flute was played dur-

ing the prolonged tones of the wedding music which occurred at regular intervals.

In this, as in all Indian tribes, it was impossible to obtain a verbal description of the music. It was necessary to record songs, study the records, and question the people concerning them. The first song recorded was about seven minutes in duration. When it was finished the chief was asked to explain the words. These words were highly poetic and contained an entire narrative, working up to a climax and

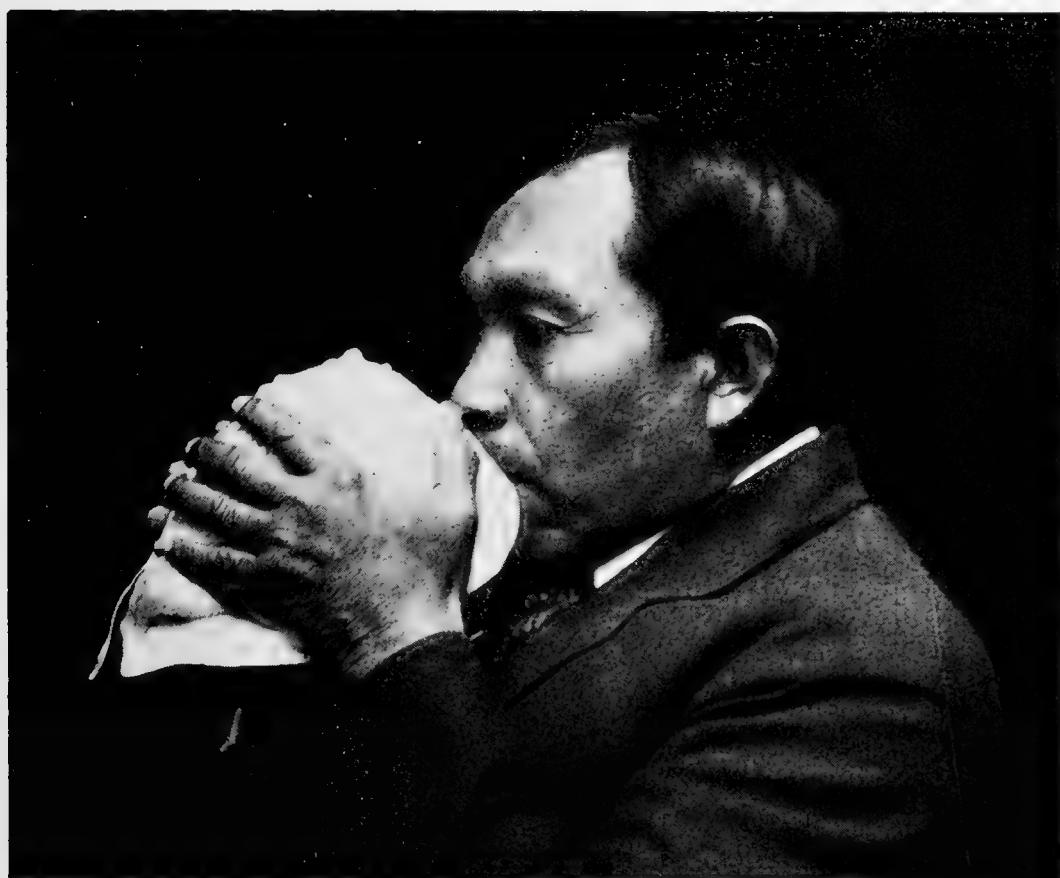


FIG. 123.—James Perry blowing conch shell trumpet.

ending in a conclusive manner. The song related that a group of young girls walked among the bright flowers, a young man appeared, and later was shot by a jealous rival. Another song was requested and the chief sang of a race between several canoes (dugouts) equipped with sails. In this song a storm arose, followed by a calm and a favoring breeze, the song ending with the wedding of the captain who won the race, while the sailors danced at the wedding. From these examples it was evident that the words of Tule songs afforded as much pleasure as the melody.

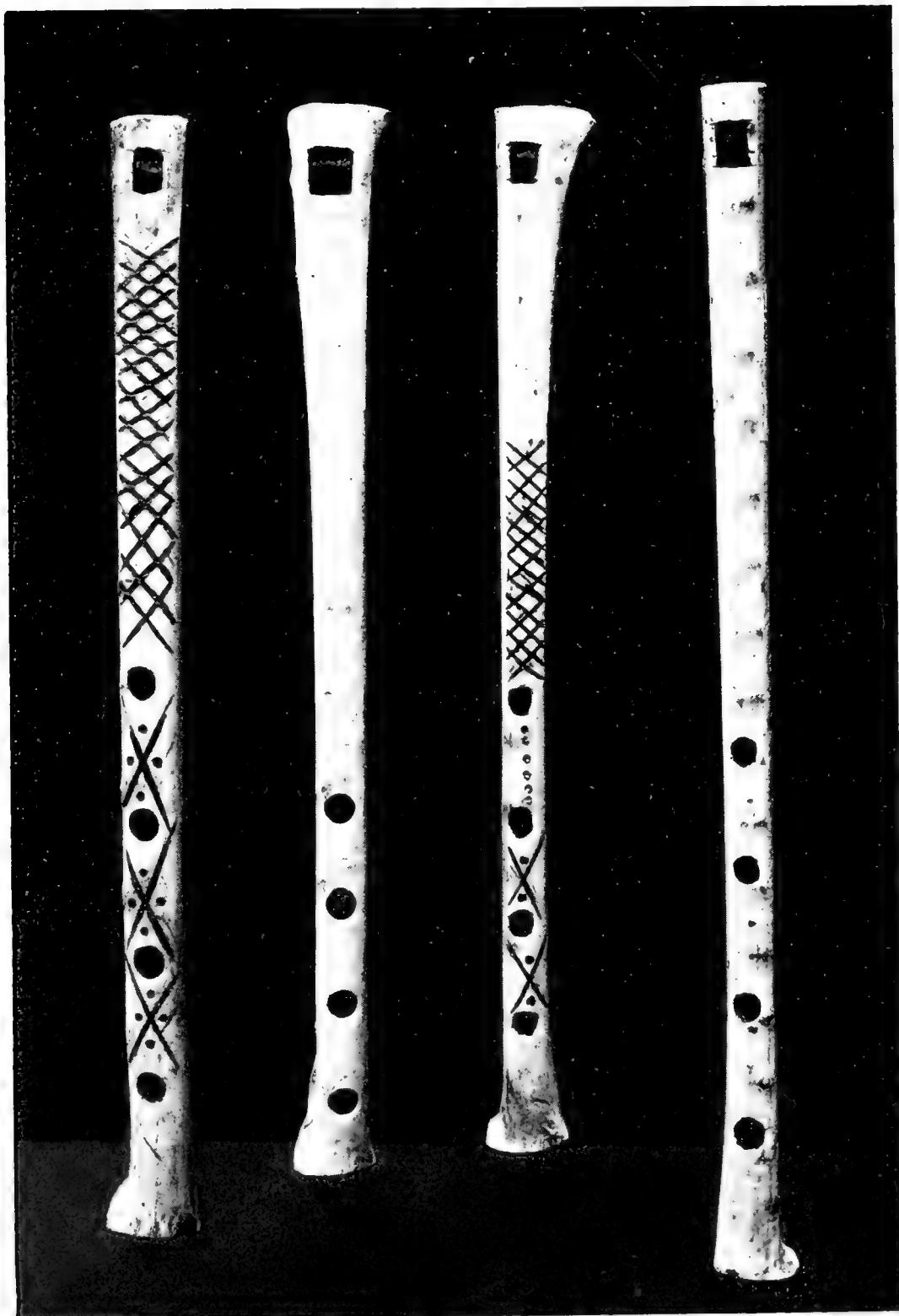


FIG. 124.—Whistles made of wing-bones of pelican and buzzard.

The chief was asked whether his people used music in the treatment of the sick, and he responded with a song for the cure of headache, containing the following words:

I bring sweet-smelling flowers and put them in water,  
I dip a cloth in the water and put it around your head,  
Then I bring a comb, part your hair smoothly and make it pretty.  
Everyone comes to see you get better,  
And I tell you that you will never be cold again.  
Go to sleep and dream of many animals, mountain-lions and sea-lions,  
You will talk with them and understand what they say,  
When you wake you will be a doctor, like me.

It was said that a doctor "received his songs in dreams," and sang when preparing his most difficult remedies. He did not shake a rattle, nor make any commotion when treating a sick person, as is frequently done by the Indians of North America. The chief expressed the opinion this would increase the illness of the patient.

Certain songs were sung after the death of a man, and in these songs the man's spirit was directed on its way to a "happy place." Such a song was recorded and may be summarized as follows; in this portion of the song the sick man speaks to his wife.

The fever returns. I drink the medicine and throw it on my body.  
The fever grows worse. I am going to die.  
My breath grows difficult, my face is pale.  
The medicine does not help me. I am going' to die.  
Talk to my two children about me, after I am gone.  
I leave the cocoanut farm for my children.  
After I die you will go to the cocoanut farm and take the children with you,  
There you will think of me.  
If people go to our cocoanut farm and cut the trees  
You must track them and find who did it.  
I am leaving the plantain farm.  
There will be plenty of property for the children.  
I leave the small fruits, the mangoes, the bananas and other fruits,  
Think of me when you gather them.

The song then mentions his skill in hunting and fishing, enumerating the results as he had named the fruits on his farms. He tells his wife to marry again in a short time, then dies, and the remainder of the song concerns the directing of his spirit on its way.

The principal social event of the Tule is a wedding, to which the people come from all the villages. They dance and sing for several days, according to the wealth of the bride's father who provides the entertainment. The writer first obtained a full and detailed account of the wedding customs, and then asked for a wedding song. When this had been recorded she asked for a translation of the words.

The reply was: "He sang just what we *told* you . He sang how the father gets the presents ready, the chief tells the people, the chief musician makes a new flute to play at the wedding, and everybody sings and dances just like we told you. He *sings* that in the *song*."

The custom of singing to secure success in games is common among the North American Indians but absent in the Tule. Descriptions of five games were obtained but it was said that games were played only by young boys. The Tule are a hard-working people, living on the islands, or keys, and cultivating ground on the main land, going thither in the early morning and returning at night. A man's wealth depends on his efforts to push back the jungle and keep it back, thus enabling trees to grow from which he can sell the fruit.

The test of a song, as recorded among the North American Indians, has been a comparison between records made at intervals by the same or other individuals. In accordance with that method of work the writer asked for a repetition of the song concerning the canoe race, after a period of a few days. On comparing the two renditions of the song there was found to be only a general resemblance in the melodies. It may be recalled that, among the North American Indians, the repetitions of a song by the same or another individual often are absolutely exact, instances having been noted in which renditions by one person at intervals of several months were identical even in pitch and tempo.

Tule songs are a form of primitive music that, it is believed, has not hitherto been described. Vocal proficiency, among the Tule, consists in improvising melodies instead of repeating them with exactness, yet songs are "learned," and each song recorded has a distinctive character. For instance, the song for relief of headache is a soothing melody, and a song concerning eight articles has a recurrent phrase when each, in turn, is mentioned. The general character of the songs is gentle and pleasing. They have a compass of three to six tones, though the melody is usually within a compass of five tones. Nine songs have been transcribed, either wholly or in part. They contain measures of two, three, five or seven beats, occurring in irregular order and probably determined by the accented syllables of the words. The songs bear no resemblance to chants but consist of short melodic phrases of equal length, each concluding with a prolonged tone. The substance of the words is established but it seems probable that the identical words are not repeated. This would be exceedingly difficult in songs of such length, and, if done, would

tend to create a rhythmic pattern in the melody, causing it also to be repeated with exactness.

The chief said that he began the study of songs when he was ten years old. The first song he learned was the first he recorded for the writer. He gave the name of the man who taught him, saying it took him a long time to learn that first song. Seven years later, this man having gone away, he went to another from whom he learned about 30 songs. First he learned miscellaneous songs, and later learned those sung when preparing medicines and treating the sick, though he is not a doctor. Recognized standards of music were further shown by the statement that certain persons were "good singers" while others "could not sing."

#### INSTRUMENTAL MUSIC

No drum is used by the Tule, neither do they pound upon a pole or other object. In this respect they are unique among primitive people. A neighboring tribe uses a tall wooden drum with a hide stretched across one end, but the Tule have never adopted this instrument. The statement concerning the absence of a drum was confirmed by Major H. B. Johnson, formerly a Lieutenant of the Black Watch, B. E. F., whose acquaintance with these people extends over three years. Major Johnson went to Panama with a British expedition in 1921 and became especially interested in the Tule. He was also a member of the Marsh Expedition in 1924.

The musical instruments used by the Tule are the conch-shell trumpet, bone whistle, pan-pipes, flute and gourd rattle. The first named is made by piercing a mouth-hole in the tip of the shell. The only variety used in this manner is the *Cassis cameo* Stm. (fig. 123). This instrument, with its far reaching tone, appears to have been used only as a signal.

Whistles are made of the wing-bone of the pelican and king buzzard. They have four finger-holes and are decorated with lines burned with a hot iron (figs. 124, 125). These, as well as the other instruments illustrated, are in the Marsh Collection at the U. S. National Museum.

The pan-pipes are made of a different, smaller reed than the flutes. A set consists of two parts, each of which has three or four reeds bound together with a cord, and the two parts are connected by a cord nine or more inches long. In the two sets under observation the shortest reed is  $4\frac{1}{2}$  inches, and the longest  $14\frac{1}{2}$  inches, in length. It was said that pan-pipes in the native villages frequently contain reeds



FIG. 125.—Igwa Nigdibippi playing bone whistle.



FIG. 126.—Igwa Nigdibippi and Alfred Robinson playing pan-pipes.

two or three feet long. Such reeds would give a deep, resonant tone. The instrument has a surprisingly loud tone, resembling that of a steam calliope, though it can be played with a moderate tone. It is



FIG. 127.—Igwa Nigdibippi playing flute and rattle.

played for dancing and for "serenading the girls." Two sets are usually played together (fig. 126), one player sounding one tone and the other the next tone, alternating in this manner throughout the

performance, and improvising the melody. Only one of the Indians present in Washington was an expert player on this instrument. In order to show the full capacity of the pan-pipes he played alone, giving a performance marked by a rapid succession of high and low tones



FIG. 128.—Gourd rattles used by Tule Indians.

suggesting that on a concertina, he also gave interesting rhythms on a single tone—rhythms that might be indicated by “dots and dashes.” It is probable that two expert players, at home, would show this skill and variety when playing the alternating-tone melodies above described.

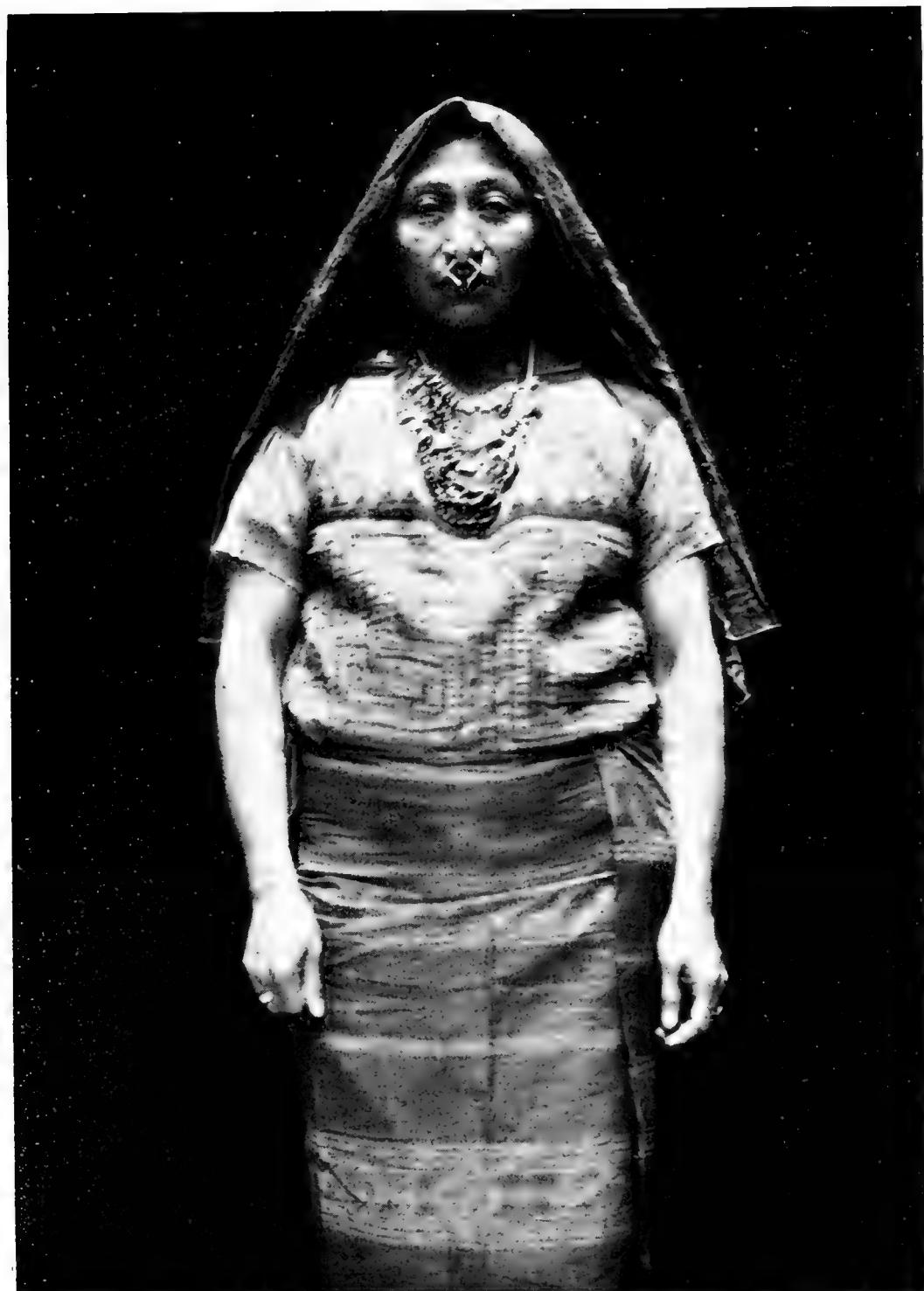


FIG. 129.—Alice Perry in native costume.

The Tule flute is of a type which, it is believed, has not been observed elsewhere. It has two finger-holes but no "whistle opening" and is held inside the cavity of the mouth, possibly touching the roof



FIG. 130.—Tule women at home.

of the mouth. For this reason the term "mouth flute" seems applicable to it (fig. 127). The specimen under observation is  $24\frac{1}{2}$  inches long and the finger-holes are respectively 5 and 6 inches from the lower end. The pith is removed from the reed and the opening

flushed with water to remove all shreds, after which the holes are burned with a heated iron and shaped with a sharp knife. The implement used in removing the pith is the stiff quill of a tail feather of the wild turkey.

The player usually shakes a gourd rattle with his right hand, fingering the flute with his left hand. The music at weddings is provided chiefly by two flute players, each with a gourd rattle, one being the Chief Musician who is accorded great honor, while the other is his assistant. The melodies played on the flute were simple and pleasing. Dictaphone records of the music of the flute and pan-pipes were made and transcribed in musical notation. The former instrument produced the tones of the minor triad on E flat, and the latter had a compass of seven tones. In one instance the melody played on the pan-pipe was based on G flat, and in another it was based on G.

The gourd rattle of the Tule is of the usual type, a round gourd being pierced by a stick which forms the handle, but differs from the rattle of North American tribes in that the gourd is often fastened to the handle by a cord that passes through it (fig. 128). Two types of gourd rattle are in use, one by the men and the other by the women. The former, used in connection with the flute, is not large in size but contains rather heavy pebbles. The latter is of two sorts, one being used by the women when dancing and the other "to put the babies to sleep." Information concerning these rattles was given by Alice Perry (fig. 129). The woman's dancing rattle contains many small pebbles, one being shown as the large, decorated rattle in the accompanying illustration. The second named is a smaller rattle (in the illustration) and contains numerous small pebbles and one rather large pebble. When this rattle is shaken the first resultant sound is that of the small pebbles, this is followed by the rolling of the larger stone which, continued steadily, has a peculiarly soothing effect. The Tule, like other tribes, have songs which are sung by mothers to put the children to sleep, but this is the first instance known to the writer in which Indians use instrumental music for this purpose.

The native dress of the women, with a glimpse of native environment, is shown in figure 130, a picture taken ten or more years ago. Attention is directed to the heavy necklaces of silver coins and the armlets and anklets of beads. The cotton tunics are decorated with appliquéd designs of material in a contrasting color, the work being done with neatness.

## RESEARCHES ON THE BURTON MOUND AND ON THE KIOWA INDIANS

The beginning of the year found Mr. John P. Harrington, ethnologist, engaged in the excavation of the principal village of the Santa Barbara Indians, known to them as Syujtun, to the early Spaniards as El Puerto de Santa Bárbara, and in more modern times as the Burton Mound. The great mound which marks the site is situated on the Santa Barbara waterfront, a block west of the principal wharf, on property now belonging to Mr. Ole Hanson and to Mr. Charles Frederick Eaton. The old village site has always been the most prominent feature of the Santa Barbara beach, and is most famous in Santa Barbara Indian and Spanish history, but had never been excavated to any extent previous to the present work.

The great village of Syujtun was mentioned four times in the Cabrillo account of 1542. Father Crespi writing in 1769 mentions its population as comprising 500 souls. With the establishment of the Santa Barbara Mission in 1782 the inhabitants were removed to the adobe cuarteles provided for them at the mission. The mound became the "beach ranch" of the Franciscans, later the site of the ranch house of Joseph Chapman, and more recently the property of Lewis T. Burton. In 1901 Mr. Milo M. Potter built a large hotel on the mound. In 1921 the hotel, which had been purchased by the Ambassador Hotel Corporation, burnt, thus releasing the site again for scientific study. Through the kind offices of Mr. George G. Heye, director of the Museum of the American Indian, money was raised for excavation of the mound by joint arrangement with the Bureau of American Ethnology.

The results of the excavation of the Indian town of Santa Barbara proved rich and interesting beyond expectation. The collection, which comprises more than seven thousand specimens, includes many large and showy pieces, such as steatite ollas, mortars and metates. Some of the graves were lined with slabs trimmed from the bones of whales. Quantities of the mother-of-pearl pendants and ornaments of the Indians were obtained, as well as shell beads of many types. The bodies were mostly in crouched position with the head to the north. In addition to the cemetery, many old wigwam sites were explored and the outline of the whole settlement slowly and laboriously traced. In the reef rock or coquina layer of the lower levels of the mound were found embedded two skeletons which have been reported upon by Dr. Bruno Oetteking, Physical Anthropologist of the Museum of

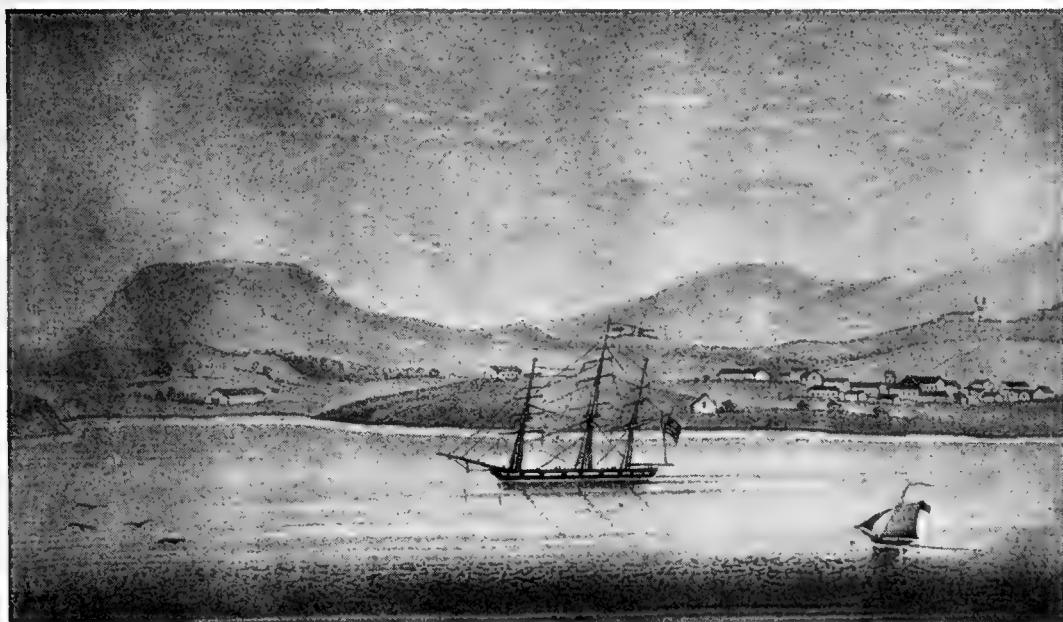


FIG. 131.—Santa Barbara, California, in 1828, showing the Burton Mound in the foreground (directly back of ship). Earliest extant picture of Santa Barbara.



FIG. 132.—The Burton Mound in 1897. (Painting by Alexander F. Harmer.)

the American Indian, and on which further studies are now in progress. The coast of California has undoubtedly been inhabited continuously for a long period, and the mound forms one of the best monuments for the study of a stable Indian culture. Associated with Mr. Harrington in this work are Professor D. B. Rogers, formerly of the University of Kansas, and Mr. G. W. Bayley.

At the beginning of February Mr. Harrington returned to Washington, D. C. On April 15 opportunity was afforded for further study of the Kiowa tribe by the coming to Washington of Eimhå'ä (Delos

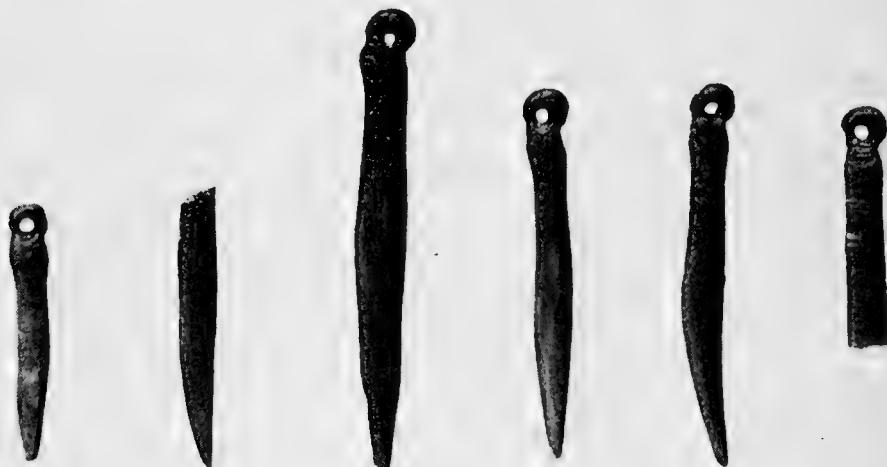


FIG. 133.—Metacarpal needles from Burton Mound. These occur ready-made, except for boring and rounding the head, in the fetlock of the California mule deer. One of the most unique discoveries among the artifacts.

K. Lonewolf), adopted son of the former head chief of the tribe, and Seitmånte<sup>n</sup> (George Hunt), one of the chief men of the tribe. Work with them was continued until May 21, yielding a great mass of ethnological and mythological material.

The true inner history of the suppression of the Kato or Sun Dance of the Kiowa was secured. The ethnological data of Mooney's Calendar History of the Kiowas were corrected. The myths obtained are without exception pretty and well told. They are as follows:

(1) The Seven Star Girls. This myth accounts for the huge pillar of rock known as the Devil's Tower, 20 miles southeast of Sun Dance,



FIG. 134.—Eimhåä, “Rescuer” (Delos K. Lonewolf), Kiowa informant.



FIG. 135.—Seitmante<sup>n</sup>, "Bear Paw" (George Hunt), Kiowa informant.

Wyoming, and takes us back to the ancient period when the Kiowa held the Black Hills. The girls became the Pleiades. (2) Seindei (the culture hero) Jumps across the Missouri River. (3) Seindei and the Bear. (4) Seindei and the Quails. (5) Seindei and the Four Pemmican Brothers. (6) Seindei Meets Whirlwind Girl. (7) Seindei Invites the Woodpeckers. (8) How Crow Became Black. (9) The Loosing of the Buffaloes. A remarkable story of how Seindei visits the keeper of the buffaloes. (10) Seindei and the Prairie Dogs. (11) Seindei and Coyote. (12) Seindei and the Rabbit. (13) Seindei and the Turkey. (14) Seindei and the Mountain Ghosts. Seindei induced the Mountain Ghosts to take out their hearts and to lay them in a pile when they visited a place where they were likely to become scared. In this way he eliminated these powerful demons from the earth.

Old hunting and fighting stories were also obtained, including a long account of a raid in Mexico.

#### ETHNOLOGICAL RESEARCHES AMONG THE FOX INDIANS, IOWA

Dr. Michelson left Washington towards the close of May and proceeded to Tama, Iowa, to renew his researches among the Fox (Meskwakie) Indians. He devoted especial attention to the various gens festivals, for example, the White Wolf Dance of the War Gens. Some texts on a number of sacred packs were translated. A good deal of general ethnology was obtained in both syllabary texts and translations. Some of this included the regulations of various gentes and societies. Additional information on the White Buffalo Dance and mortuary customs and beliefs was secured in time to be incorporated in the 40th Annual Report of the Bureau of American Ethnology (now in galley-proof). In his spare time Dr. Michelson gathered quite a little Winnebago and Potawatomi ethnological data from the small group of each of these tribes which habitually stays at Tama with the Fox. The data on the first largely corroborates that given by Dr. Radin in the 37th Annual Report of the Bureau of American Ethnology, and in some instances supplements it. The data on the Potawatomi is important as showing that among this tribe there are close correspondents to the Fox gens festivals. Towards the close of June Dr. Michelson returned to Washington.

A brief explanation of some of the ethnological data in the preceding paragraph may not be inappropriate. The Foxes are organized in a number of exogamic totemic groups. These groups are named after animals for the most part. *e. g.*, Bear, Wolf, Eagle. Male

members of these groups had a special hair-cut, appropriate only to their own groups. Personal names showed to which group the owner belonged; however, occasionally a person might be named



FIG. 136.—Fox mat of rushes, used for exterior of wigwams, etc., being made by Mrs. Charley Keyosatuck. (Photograph by Michelson.)

by another than his or her father; in this case the person would have a personal name appropriate to the gens of the namer, but would belong to the gens of his or her father unless it had been stipulated at the time that the person should belong to the gens of the namer.

These various gentes owned one or more sacred packs (not to be confused with individual personal packs) connected with an appropriate ritual and dance; also they had special songs to be sung the night



FIG. 137.—Fox bag made of bass-wood, in the process of construction  
(Photograph by Michelson.)

preceding the burial of the dead, and one or two special features in burial customs. At least two possessed definite paints appropriate to themselves (Bear gens, green paint; War gens, red paint). Some of these gentes had subdivisions, and in such cases one of the sub-

divisions ranked higher than the other or others. Thus the Bear gens is composed of the Black Bears and Yellow (Brown) Bears; the tribal chieftainship was in the Black Bear division of Bear gens. This is why some Fox Indians objected to Pushitonqua (the last chief recognized by the federal government), because he was of the wrong division of the Bear gens. The sacred packs were used especially in war. With appropriate songs and rituals one could become invisible; the bullets of the foe would not hit their mark; wide rivers would become narrow so one could retreat if hard pressed by the foe; etc. The packs are supposed to be acquired by fasting in the wilderness when various manitous would take pity on those fasting and bestow blessings.



FIG. 138.—Fox bark-house of elm. Harry Lincoln is standing at the door-way. (Photograph by Michelson.)





SMITHSONIAN MISCELLANEOUS COLLECTIONS  
VOLUME 78, NUMBER 1

EXPLORATIONS AND FIELD-WORK OF THE  
SMITHSONIAN INSTITUTION  
IN 1925



(PUBLICATION 2865)

CITY OF WASHINGTON  
PUBLISHED BY THE SMITHSONIAN INSTITUTION

*Harriet E.*, 1926



SMITHSONIAN MISCELLANEOUS COLLECTIONS  
VOLUME 78, NUMBER 1

EXPLORATIONS AND FIELD-WORK OF THE  
SMITHSONIAN INSTITUTION  
IN 1925



(PUBLICATION 2865)

CITY OF WASHINGTON  
PUBLISHED BY THE SMITHSONIAN INSTITUTION  
1926

The Lord Baltimore Press  
BALTIMORE, MD., U. S. A.

## CONTENTS

	PAGE
Introduction .....	I
Geological Explorations in the Canadian Rockies (Dr. Charles D. Walcott) .....	I
Field-Work in Structural Geology in Tennessee (Dr. R. S. Bassler).....	9
Geological Field-Work in Central New York (Mr. Erwin R. Pohl).....	13
Geological Field-Work in Europe (Dr. Charles E. Resser).....	16
Collecting Fossil Footprints in Arizona (Mr. Charles W. Gilmore).....	20
Investigation of Glacial Deposits near Des Moines, Iowa (Dr. James W. Gidley) .....	23
Investigation of Evidences of Early Man at Melbourne and Vero, Florida (Dr. James W. Gidley) .....	23
Exploration of a Pleistocene Spring-deposit in Oklahoma (Dr. James W. Gidley) .....	27
Field-Work in Astrophysics (Dr. Charles G. Abbot).....	28
Biological Explorations in Western China (Rev. David C. Graham).....	31
Exploration of Haitian Caves (Dr. Gerrit S. Miller, Jr.).....	36
Marine Invertebrate Studies at the Tortugas (Dr. Waldo L. Schmitt).....	40
Study of the Crustaceans of South America (Dr. Waldo L. Schmitt)....	40
Experiments in Cerion-breeding at the Tortugas (Dr. Paul Bartsch).....	44
Botanical Expedition to Brazil (Mrs. Agnes Chase).....	48
Botanical Investigations at European Museums (Mr. E. P. Killip).....	53
Anthropological Studies in Southern Asia, Java, Australia, and South Africa (Dr. Aleš Hrdlička).....	59
Archeological Investigations at Pueblo Bonito and Pueblo Del Arroyo, New Mexico (Mr. Neil M. Judd).....	80
Archeological and Anthropometrical Work in Mississippi (Mr. Henry B. Collins) .....	89
Archeological Studies of the Wupatki National Monument (Dr. J. Walter Fewkes) .....	96
Researches on the Archeology of Southern California (Mr. J. P. Harrington) .....	106
Studies of the Fox and Ojibwa Indians (Dr. Truman Michelson).....	111
Ethnological Researches among the Iroquois and Chippewa (Mr. J. N. B. Hewitt) .....	114
Ethnological Work among the Osage of Oklahoma (Mr. Francis La Flesche) .....	117
Studies of Indian Music among the Menominee of Wisconsin (Miss Frances Densmore) .....	119
Investigation of Shell and Sand Mounds on Pinellas Peninsula, Florida (Mr. David I. Bushnell, Jr.).....	125









Skoki Pass



FIG. 1.—Panoramic view from the north slope o  
to the canyon of Little Pipestone River. Then the b  
bedded, Middle Cambrian limestones. (C. D. Walco

## EXPLORATIONS AND FIELD-WORK OF THE SMITHSONIAN INSTITUTION IN 1925

### INTRODUCTION

The functions of the Smithsonian Institution as stipulated by the will of the founder, James Smithson, are "the increase and diffusion of knowledge among men." In its endeavor to increase the sum of human knowledge, the Institution conducts researches and explorations, the latter particularly in regions of the earth which have not yet been thoroughly investigated. As the founder's will did not discriminate in favor of any particular branch of science, the Institution endeavors to be partial to none, and its activities have covered geology, biology, and anthropology, with all of their various subdivisions; astrophysics, aeronautics, physics, and chemistry. The present pamphlet is intended to present in brief form, illustrated, the purpose and results of the expeditions in the field during 1925. The very limited income of the Institution from its private endowment does not permit of a comprehensive, coordinated program of exploration, and it therefore takes whatever opportunity offers to cooperate with other agencies in sending out field expeditions. The accounts, although written in the third person, are prepared for the most part by the explorers themselves, and the pictures are taken by them in the field.

### GEOLOGICAL EXPLORATIONS IN THE CANADIAN ROCKIES

In continuation of geological field-work in the Canadian Rockies, Secretary Charles D. Walcott left Lake Louise Station, Alberta, on the Canadian Pacific Railway on July 9 with a camp outfit and pack horses. The field season was even more unfavorable than that of 1924. Smoke from extensive forest fires west and north of the mountain area north and east of Lake Louise interfered with photography during July and the first half of August. An eddy, or dead area in the atmosphere, hung over the mountains for several weeks, and then, after a severe gale of several days' duration, snow began falling on August 21, blanketing the canyon valleys with a depth of from 12 to 16 inches (fig. 9) and the mountain slopes with

Tilted Mt. Cirque



FIG. 2.—Panoramic view of Tilted Mountain and Cirque. Taken from a point on the southeast slope of Fossil Mountain above Baker Lake, at 8,000 feet (2,438 m.) elevation, eight miles (12.8 km.) northeast of Lake Louise Station on the Canadian Pacific Railway, Alberta, Canada. (C. D. Walcott, 1925.)

Brachiopod Mt.

Quartzite Mt.

Redoubt Mt.



FIG. 3.—From left to right, Brachiopod Mountain (Devonian limestones), Quartzite Mountain (Pre-Cambrian capped with Lower Cambrian quartizites), and Redoubt Mountain (Middle Cambrian limestones). (C. D. Walcott, 1925.)



FIG. 4.—Close up view of Tilted Mountain Cirque showing the limestones of the Middle Cambrian Eldon formation thrust against the Devonian limestones at the head of the Cirque. The locality is 8.5 miles (13.7 km.) in an air line northeast of Lake Louise Station on the Canadian Pacific Railway. (C. D. Walcott, 1925.)

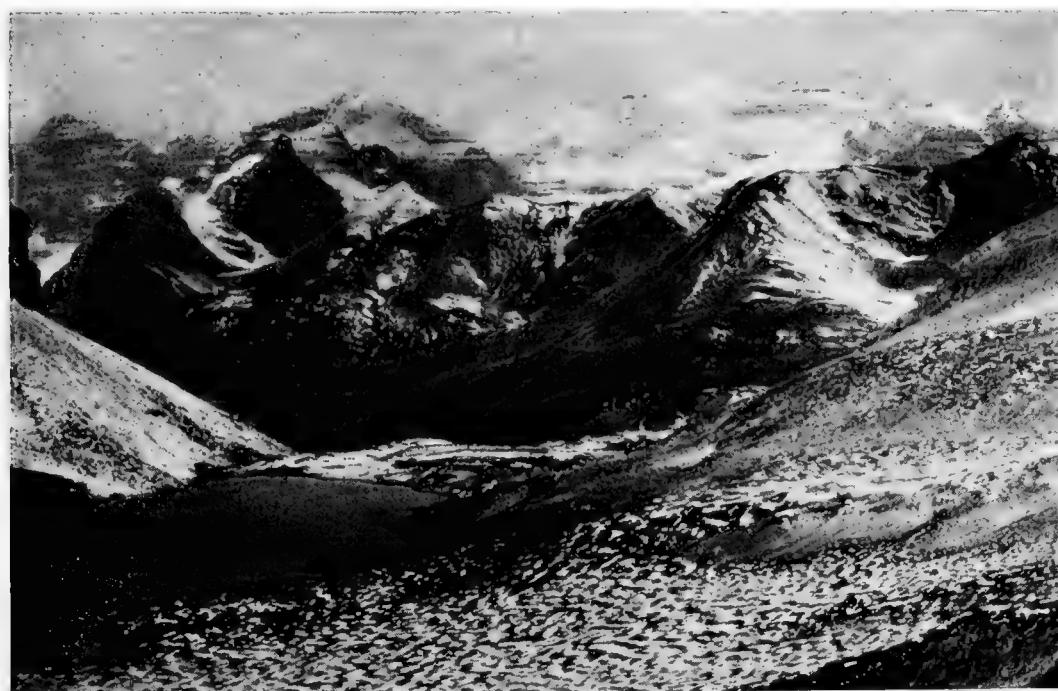


FIG. 5.—Looking over Ptarmigan Lake and Bow Valley to the Mt. Victoria massif, 12 miles (19.3 km.) southwest of Ptarmigan Lake. The mountains in the vicinity of Lake Louise are finely shown in this view, also the rounded hills and slopes of Pre-Cambrian rocks on the north side of Bow Valley. The view was taken from south side of Skoki Pass on the southeast slope of Fossil Mountain at 8,000 feet (2,438.4 m.) elevation and 8 miles (12.9 km.) in an air line northeast of Lake Louise Station on the Canadian Pacific Railway, Alberta, Canada. (C. D. Walcott, 1925.)



FIG. 6.—South side of Skoki Mountain from a point 8.5 miles (13.7 km.) in an air line northeast of Lake Louise Station on the Canadian Pacific Railway, Alberta, Canada.

The mountain is formed of fossiliferous Middle Devonian limestones to about half-way down the slope on the right side, where the subjacent Silurian and Lower Ordovician, Sarbach formation, is exposed. (C. D. Walcott, 1925.)



FIG. 7.—Mounts McBride and Douglas reflected in the Red Deer River at a point 1.4 miles (2.25 km.) in an air line northeast of Lake Louise Station on the Canadian Pacific Railway, Alberta, Canada. (Mary Vaux Walcott, 1925.)



FIG. 8.—A fine summer day in camp at south base of Skoki Mountain on afternoon of August 21, 1925 (see figure 9).

Skoki Mountain camp site is 9 miles (14.5 km.) in an air line northeast of Lake Louise Station on the Canadian Pacific Railway, Alberta, Canada. (C. D. Walcott, 1925.)



FIG. 9.—Skoki camp on morning of August 22 (see figure 8).

a gradually increasing depth up to 30 inches on the passes just above timber line.

Snow squalls followed nearly every afternoon until August 30, when camp was moved from between Fossil and Skoki Mountains to below the pass at the head of Johnston Creek Canyon. Snow came again on September 5, 9, and 18. Secretary and Mrs. Walcott returned to Lake Louise Station, packed their collections and left for Washington on September 21, which was the most beautiful day of



FIG. 10.—Looking south down Johnston Canyon from divide at its head, which is formed of limestones of the Ordovician Sarbach formation, in which the canyon has been largely eroded. See figure 2. (Mary Vaux Walcott, 1925.)

the season. Only eight camps were made while on the trail. It was more through good fortune than favorable conditions that a fine series of fossils from critical horizons in the great lower Paleozoic section north of Bow Valley was discovered and collected. These fossils increase our knowledge of the history and life of the Cordilleran Sea of this time and afford the data for comparison with life and conditions in the Appalachian Trough and the great upper Mississippi embayment of Upper Cambrian time.

In the interval between the snow storms of September 5 and 9 several new fossil zones were found in the Lower Ordovician rocks

of the Johnston-Wild Flower Canyon Pass section, and also in the Upper Cambrian west of Badger Pass. The latter find enabled Dr. Walcott to identify the Arctomys formation of the Glacier Lake section and to clear up the uncertainty as to the position of the strata hitherto referred to the lower portion of the Bosworth formation.



FIG. 11.—*Pedicularis contorta* Benth. Alpine lousewort.  
(Mary Vaux Walcott, 1925.)

Mrs. Walcott secured a few water-color sketches of wild flowers at the camp in the open area of the upper Ptarmigan Canyon, but the storm of August 21 killed all but a few hardy asters and paint-brushes.

Mountain sheep were seen on the mountains about the head of Johnston Creek, but the rain and snow storms made it difficult to secure fine specimens desired for a group in the National Museum. One fairly good ram and a badly damaged ewe were secured, as



FIG. 12.—*Saussurca densa* (Hooker) Rydberg. (Mary Vaux Walcott, 1925.)



FIG. 13.—*Linnaea americana* Forbes. Twin-flower.  
(Mary Vaux Walcott, 1925.)

well as a mule deer, which, when shot, rushed down the Canyon side and broke its fine horns in landing upon a mass of broken rock.

This year probably completes the field-work in the Canadian Rockies. A few of the problems encountered have been cleared up in the past nine years, but many remain to be studied by young, well-trained men with strong hearts, vigorous muscles, and the high purpose of the research student seeking to discover the truth regarding the development of the North American Continent and of the life of the waters in which the miles in thickness of sands, clay, and limey muds accumulated during a period of several million years of lower Paleozoic time.

Mrs. Walcott has sketched over 350 species of wild flowers during the past 20 seasons, and she and Dr. Walcott now wish to work in the mountains and valleys of southern Nevada and adjoining areas of California, where climatic and physical conditions and life, both animal and vegetable, are in strong contrast with those of the Canadian Rocky Mountains, but where the problems in which Dr. Walcott is interested in connection with the Cambrian formations of the Cordilleran area are essentially of the same order.

*Acknowledgments.*—Commissioner J. B. Harkin and the members of the Canadian National Parks Service gave their hearty cooperation. The effective assistance of the officers and employees of the Canadian Pacific Railway permitted a saving of time and conservation of energy, and grants from the O. C. Marsh and Joseph Henry endowment funds of the National Academy of Sciences were of great assistance. To all, sincere thanks are returned and appreciation is expressed for the cooperation that has been given over a period of years to make Dr. Walcott's work more successful than it would otherwise have been.

#### FIELD-WORK IN STRUCTURAL GEOLOGY IN TENNESSEE

During August and a part of September, 1925, Dr. R. S. Bassler, curator of paleontology, U. S. National Museum, continued his studies in the Central Basin and Highland Rim areas of Tennessee in cooperation, as in previous years, with the Tennessee Geological Survey. For several seasons past, he has been engaged in working out the detailed stratigraphy of these two physiographic provinces, in mapping certain areas of particular scientific and economic interest and in collecting the faunas of the various Paleozoic formations outcropping in this part of the state. By 1925, sufficient geologic knowledge had been accumulated to make possible the determina-



FIG. 14.—Outcrop of New Providence shale followed unconformably by Fort Payne chert, illustrating submarine erosion. Eagle Creek, northeast of Livingston, Tennessee. (Photograph by Bassler.)

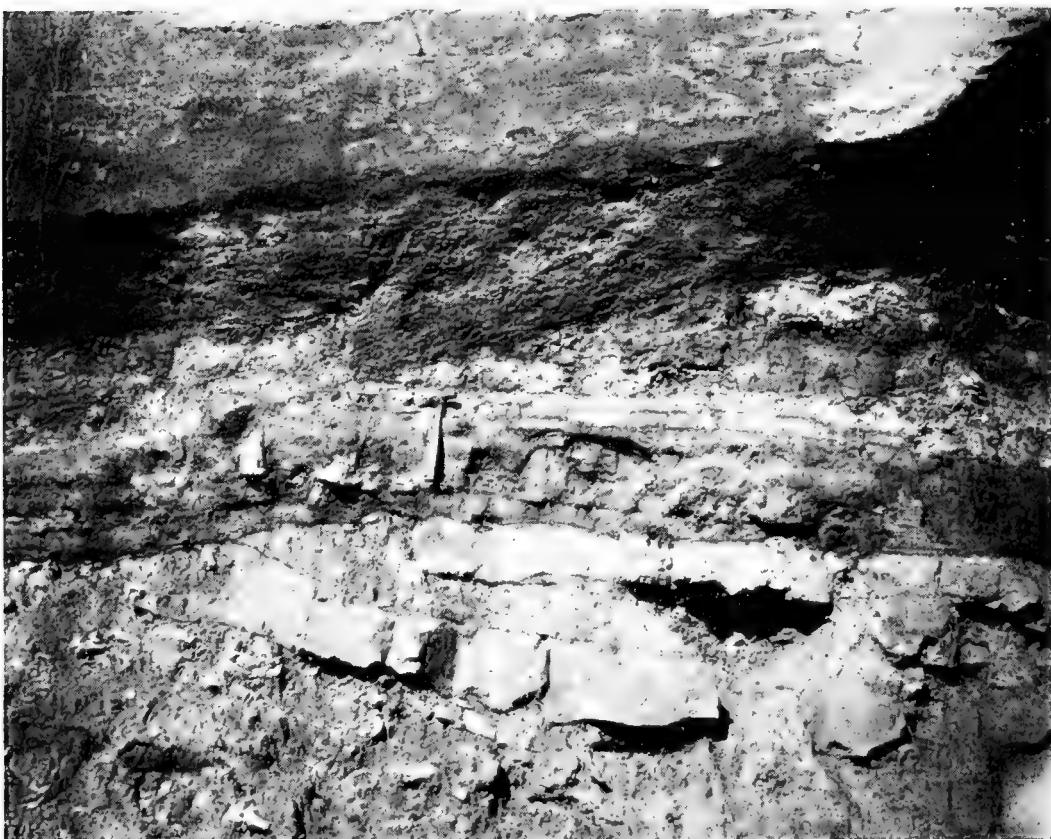


FIG. 15.—Fort Payne chert with overlying Warsaw formation, Tullahoma, Tennessee. (Photograph by Bassler.)

tion of interesting structural features indicating discordant relations and areal restrictions in rock formations which had hitherto been thought to be essentially horizontal, widespread, and conformable with each other.

At various times during the Paleozoic era, the area now termed the Central Basin was uplifted above the sea as a low dome—the Nashville Dome, as it is generally known—the rocks sloping gently away on all sides. At times this dome was submerged partially or entirely, the deposits remaining of those then formed showing the extent of such submergences. At other times, the sea invaded the area only in bay-like indentations in which rocks of various interesting types were laid down. The resulting rock deposits hold the story of these various invasions of the Nashville Dome, but the strata, mainly limestone and shale, are so much alike that detailed preliminary studies had to be undertaken before the formations and their extent could be satisfactorily discriminated and mapped. From such studies in previous seasons it was determined, for example, that the Bigby limestone of Middle Ordovician age, the source of much of the Tennessee brown phosphate, was deposited in an arm of the sea which covered only the southwestern and western parts of the Nashville Dome. The succeeding massive Cannon limestone was developed, on the contrary, in a broad embayment occupying the eastern two-thirds of the dome, in which it varies in thickness from an inch or two along the ancient western shore line to several hundred feet along the eastern side of the basin. The Early Silurian, Richmond formation, also proved to have been formed in similar but much narrower bays entering the dome on the northern, western, and southern sides. The relative narrowness of these embayments as contrasted with the preceding Bigby and Cannon limestone bays indicates decided warping or wrinkling of the surface during the transition from the Ordovician to the Silurian. These restricted Richmond areas are also notable for their iron ores and marble deposits. The later Silurian, Devonian, and Early Mississippian formations, in many cases, were deposited in similarly restricted areas.

The occurrence and thickness of an Early Mississippian formation accumulated in one of these ancient narrow bays is illustrated in figure 14, showing the New Providence shale, a celebrated crinoid-bearing formation. Here, however, another structural feature is shown in that the horizontal strata of the New Providence shale are obliquely cut across by rocks of the overlying formation of



FIG. 16.—Chattanooga black shale with channel occupied by Fort Payne chert, east of Woodbury, Tennessee. (Photograph by Bassler.)



FIG. 17.—Eastern Highland Rim viewed from top of Cumberland Plateau near Sewanee, Tennessee. (Photograph by Bassler.)

Fort Payne chert. The edges of the lower formation are clean cut and show no signs of weathered products due to subaerial decomposition, so that this seems a true case of submarine erosion.

Viewed in most exposures, the Fort Payne chert of Keokuk age appears to be conformable with the overlying Warsaw limestone but that there was an actual time break, locally indicated by an angular unconformity, is shown in figure 15. Here the lower formation has been tilted at a slight angle and the edges of the strata worn off before the rocks of the newer formation were laid down upon it. A still different structural type is illustrated in figure 16, which shows the Fort Payne chert resting directly on the Early Mississippian Chattanooga black shale, the unconformity between the two being recorded elsewhere by 500 feet or more of shales and limestones included in the Ridgetop and New Providence formations which were absent at this place. The particular interest of this exposure is that the Chattanooga shale developed a sharply defined channel in its top, either through fracturing or erosion, in which the Fort Payne chert was deposited normally. The structure of the Eastern Highland Rim near its junction with the Cumberland Plateau was also studied. The Highland Rim forms a rolling upland averaging 1,200 feet in altitude and the Cumberland Plateau, another marked upland area, 700 feet higher. In this part of the State, the Highland Rim is traversed as shown in figure 17, by low ridges which, as a rule, are due to structural features in the underlying formations. These ridges, in most cases, are capped by hard sandstone and indicate areas of slightly downfolded strata where the general level of erosion has not proceeded far enough to entirely remove the resistant rock.

Tennessee is uniquely situated for the study of stratigraphic geology, and the State has long been classic ground. Starting with the Blue Ridge system on the east and extending westward to the Mississippi flood plain, it comprises many physiographic provinces with the underlying strata embracing almost all the divisions of the geologic column. Most of these strata are highly fossiliferous and perhaps nowhere else can the development of life be studied to better advantage.

#### GEOLOGICAL FIELD-WORK IN CENTRAL NEW YORK

The division of paleontology of the U. S. National Museum contains great collections of Devonian fossils from the classic New York areas, obtained years ago when the present methods of record-

ing very exact data as to precise horizon and locality were not observed. To make these collections of scientific value, such detailed information must be supplied. Towards this end, Erwin R. Pohl, of the division, spent several weeks in the summer of 1925 at the noted section along Kashong Creek near Bellona, New York, where the shales and limestone formations of the Middle Devonian ranging from the Marcellus at the base of the Hamilton through the Ludlowville, the Tichenor and Moscow divisions and passing into the overlying Tully limestone and Genesee black shale of Upper Devonian age, are well developed in splendid outcrops. Most of these formations abound in fossils and, as a result of the trip, half



FIG. 18.—Contact between Tichenor limestone (T) and Moscow shale, Kashong Creek, New York. (Photograph by Pohl.)

a ton of carefully selected material was obtained. Photographs of these formations, illustrating the stratigraphy and the opportunities for collecting, are shown herewith (figs. 18 and 19).

The Kashong Creek section starts at the shore of Seneca Lake and outcrops in the steep winding banks of the creek for more than three miles upstream to Bellona, 300 feet above the level of the lake. At several intervals the harder sandstone and limestone layers form waterfalls of some beauty. Except in the stream gorge, the region is very heavily wooded so that the collector is confined to the creek bed to penetrate the country. The section is not continuous and as the strata are folded in broad undulations and many of the beds have a lithologic similarity, correlation of the rock is sometimes quite difficult.



FIG. 19.—First falls in Kashong Creek, New York, showing Tully limestone (T) overlying Moscow shale. (Photograph by Pohl.)



FIG. 20.—Genesee black shale overlying the Tully limestone (T). Kashong Creek, New York. (Photograph by Pohl.)

The black shales of the Ludlowville division of the Hamilton were found to contain often myriads of small brachiopods and pelecypods. The Tichenor limestone forming the base of the Hamilton is also extremely fossiliferous while the Moscow shales above, abounding in fossils, can be distinguished by their slightly grayer color. Then comes a gap in sedimentation, for the Tully limestone, forming the base of the Upper Devonian, is separated from the underlying Moscow shale by an unconformity. The very characteristic blocky Genesee shales follow the Tully limestone as shown in figure 20.

Abundant collections were made in all the fossiliferous zones and with their help, it has been found possible to accurately place in this section most of the many fossils in the Museum's series previously obtained from this area.

#### GEOLOGICAL FIELD-WORK IN EUROPE

Dr. Charles E. Resser, associate curator of paleontology, U. S. National Museum and Dr. E. O. Ulrich, associate in paleontology, were members of the Smithsonian-Princeton expedition to Europe during the summer of 1925 for the purpose of studying the more important outcrops of the lower Paleozoic beds. The other members of the party were Prof. R. M. Field and Mr. R. M. Fullé of Princeton University and Mr. R. J. Beede of Williams College. Prof. Field kindly offered the use of his automobile, which made it possible to get about readily and to reach many places off the usual travel routes. The route followed by the party covered more than 7,500 miles by automobile alone, through central England, Wales, and the extreme north coast of Scotland, the Scandinavian countries, Germany, Czechoslovakia, Austria, Switzerland, and France.

Work was begun in Shropshire, where Mr. Edgar Sterling Cobbold of Church Stretton conducted the party to the various localities at which he has done much valuable geological work. A few days later he was again the guide to the famous Stiper Stones region on the west side of the Longmynd. Some time was spent also in studying the sections along the Onny River, in company with Mr. B. B. Bancroft. In Wales, Prof. T. C. Nicholas of Cambridge and Prof. O. T. Jones of Manchester guided the party about the Harlech Dome, on St. Tudwals Peninsula and in Central Wales. At Durness, on the extreme northwest coast of Scotland, a large series

of limestone beds were next visited which have been of special interest for many years because their contained faunas are American rather than European.

The automobile was then transported across the North Sea to Oslo, whence the party was guided by Prof. Olaf Holtedahl to the famous localities on Christiania Bay. After the very brief stay in Norway, the party proceeded to Vänersborg, Sweden, where it was met by Dr. A. H. Westergaard, detailed by the Swedish Geological Survey to be the guide in that country. Several weeks were spent studying the outcrops in the hills of the region about Lake Vänern



FIG. 21.—Professors O. T. Jones and T. C. Nicholas discussing the geology along the Rhayder River in Wales, with Dr. Ulrich. (Photograph by Resser.)

and to the south in the ancient alum quarries of Andrarum. The whole of southern Sweden has been heavily glaciated, but prior to the coming of the ice it was eroded down to the fairly flat granite floor. At a few places some of the soft, black, flat-lying Cambrian shales with a little Ordovician limestone have been preserved in low, lava-capped hills. Lenses of black, ill-smelling limestone, usually highly fossiliferous, occur in the black shales. Many hundreds of years ago quarries were begun here for the sake of this lime. Prior to 1800 wood was used in its burning but since that date the shale itself has been used, for it contains so much carbonaceous matter and sulphur that it serves the purpose well.

There were no particular objectives between Sweden and the Bohemian Basin near Prague, and therefore the intervening regions



FIG. 22.—A portion of the cliff forming one face of the famous lava-capped hill Hunneberg near Vanersborg, Sweden. Dr. A. H. Westergaard is standing in foreground and Dr. Ulrich is indicating the contact between the Cambrian and Ozarkian strata. The dark hole is the opening of one of the hundreds of caves made by the quarrying



FIG. 23.—Dr. Christian Poulsen standing in front of a very fine outcrop of the Lower Cambrian beds in Bornholm. The character of this series is well shown here. (Photograph by Resser.)

were traversed rapidly. At Prague the geologists again offered every courtesy, and Dr. Jan Koliha of the famous Barrandeum Museum and Dr. Radim Kettner of the Geological Survey served as efficient guides to Barrande's classic sections. In the Museum one can see the first trilobite ever described, just 100 years ago. From Czechoslovakia the journey led to Zürich, where Dr. Ulrich remained. The rest of the party continued across the Jura Mountains and the Central Massif of France to Les Eyzies in the Dordogne country. Several days were spent in investigating the abris and caves in which remains of fossil man are preserved.



FIG. 24.—Crossing the ferry on the Beraun river near Skrej, Czechoslovakia. Dr. R. Kettner is just about to step onto the ferry. (Photograph by Resser.)

As it was necessary for the Princeton members to return at the end of August, the party was finally disbanded at Paris and Prof. Field returned with the automobile to Liverpool. Dr. Resser then proceeded to Frankfurt-am-Main, in Germany, to visit Dr. and Mrs. Rudolf Richter who have been active workers in paleontology during the last ten years, producing much excellent work.

From Frankfurt he then returned to Copenhagen and in company with Dr. Christian Poulsen of the Mineralogical Museum, made a visit to the island of Bornholm in the Baltic Sea. The island consists of a granitic mass with younger and softer rocks on the southern margin, the whole having been very heavily glaciated.

Several hundred pounds of selected fossils were collected and sent to the National Museum, a number of valuable gifts were secured, and exchanges were arranged.

## COLLECTING FOSSIL FOOTPRINTS IN ARIZONA

Mr. Charles W. Gilmore, curator of the division of vertebrate paleontology, U. S. National Museum, by arrangement with the National Park Service and through the generosity of some of its friends, was enabled to visit the Grand Canyon for the purpose of making a collection of fossil footprints, and at the same time to prepare a permanent exhibit of these footprints *in situ* by the side of the famous Hermit Trail. Both of these undertakings were successfully carried out.

A series of slabs, some 1,700 pounds in weight, carrying good examples of the various kinds of imprints occurring there, were collected and shipped to the Museum. The tracks occur in the Coconino sandstone in Hermit Basin, on the trail down to Hermit Camp and from 900 to 1,080 feet below the rim of the Canyon. Their excellent preservation and variety of kind, coupled with their great antiquity, make this collection of more than usual interest. Preliminary study of the tracks has demonstrated that they represent not only a new Ichnite fauna, but probably the best preserved and most extensive series of Permian footprints known anywhere in the world.

It was found that the natural conditions were most favorable for the preparation of an exhibit of fossil tracks *in situ*. The rather steep slope of the sandstone on whose surfaces the tracks are impressed stands at an inclination of 30° facing toward the Hermit trail, over which in the course of the year hundreds of tourists travel on mule back in making their pilgrimage to the bottom of the Grand Canyon. The upper layers of the sandstone cleared off in large sheets, thus uncovering whatever tracks and trails there were to be found beneath. The work of preparing this exhibit consisted, therefore, of removing the overburden of loose dirt and broken rock, then quarrying off the loose upper laminae until a solid and continuous face covered with footprints was reached. This was done, and a smooth surface 8 feet wide and 25 feet long was carefully uncovered as shown in figure 25.

At the side of the slab leading up from the trail, a series of stone steps was laid in order to facilitate examination by those interested in the footprints covering its surface. Although this slab constituted the main exhibit, other large surfaces were similarly uncovered, so that in all there are several hundred square feet of rock surface showing imprints of feet, thus forming a permanent exhibit of the various tracks and trails to be found here.

The great antiquity of these footprints is clearly demonstrated at this locality, for it is evident that since the day when those animals impressed their feet in what at that time was moist sand, more than 1,000 feet of rock-making materials were piled up in successive



FIG. 25.—Slab of fossil footprints *in situ* on the Hermit Trail, Grand Canyon National Park. (Photograph by Gilmore.)

strata above them and this does not take into account many hundreds of feet more that have been eroded off the present top of the canyon wall.

The great length of time necessary for the cutting away or erosion of the rock to form the deep canyon and the even longer time necessary for the original deposition of this great vertical mass of



FIG. 26.—*Barobezia cakini*, new species of fossil footprints. Crossed diagonally by track of *Laoporus nobeli* Lull.

stone when translated into terms of years, if that were possible, would be so stupendous as to be almost beyond human comprehension.

This unique exhibit gives a very definite impression of the great antiquity of the animal life that made these tracks, and it is hoped that as an example it will stimulate the preparation and preservation of other natural phenomena in our government controlled parks, monuments, and reservations.

#### INVESTIGATION OF GLACIAL DEPOSITS NEAR DES MOINES, IOWA

In April, 1925, Dr. James W. Gidley, assistant curator, division of fossil vertebrates, U. S. National Museum, was detailed under the auspices of the Bureau of American Ethnology to investigate an alleged discovery of artifacts at Adel, Iowa. At Des Moines, Dr. Gidley was joined by Dr. James H. Lees, assistant state geologist of Iowa, who aided in the investigation at Adel.

After a study of the locality, the general conclusion reached by Dr. Lees and Dr. Gidley was that although the artifacts (if such they are) were found at a level of 24 feet below the original surface and much below the level of Wisconsin (Upper Pleistocene) drift deposits abundantly exposed at this locality, the beds in which they were originally deposited are post-Wisconsin in age and represent a more recently filled stream channel formed perhaps by the abundant glacial waters coming from the last retreating glacial ice sheet. As the artifacts were found in a bed of coarse sand and gravel near the bottom of this ancient stream-channel fill, however, the time of their burial must have been several thousand years ago.

#### INVESTIGATION OF EVIDENCES OF EARLY MAN AT MELBOURNE AND VERO, FLORIDA

The discovery at Vero, Florida, a few years ago of human remains associated with those of an extinct fauna aroused considerable interest at the time, and since the first publication of the occurrence by Dr. E. H. Sellards in 1916, there has been much discussion as to the age of these remains and the manner of their occurrence. Several prominent men of science have expressed widely divergent opinions both as to the age of the deposit in which the human bones were found and as to their normal association with the extinct

animal bones with which they were found. More recently a discovery, similar to that at Vero, was made near Melbourne, about 40 miles north of that place. The importance of this new discovery was recognized, and accordingly Dr. Gidley, under the auspices of the Bureau of American Ethnology, was detailed to Melbourne, where with the aid of Mr. C. P. Singleton, a local amateur collector and the first discoverer of fossil bones in that vicinity, a preliminary investigation was made.

For this investigation, Dr. Gidley left Washington, December 15, 1924, and returned January 4, 1925. This trip resulted in locating



FIG. 27.—North bank of drainage canal about three miles west of Melbourne, Florida. Showing exposures of No. 2 and No. 3 beds and top of No. 1 bed. (Photograph by Gidley.)

several good prospects and in procuring by gift from Mr. Singleton, a fine specimen of the Florida mastodon which included a nearly complete skull and lower jaws. While in Melbourne, Dr. Gidley met Prof. F. B. Loomis of Amherst College, who also had come there to look over these fossil deposits. There followed the formulation of a tentative plan, afterwards approved by the authorities of Amherst College and the Smithsonian Institution, for a joint field expedition to more thoroughly explore the localities in the vicinity of Melbourne and to re-examine the fossil beds at Vero. This joint expedition, which left Washington on June 21 and returned August 7, met with gratifying success in the way of adding considerable new evidence to be considered in working out the problem of early man in Florida.

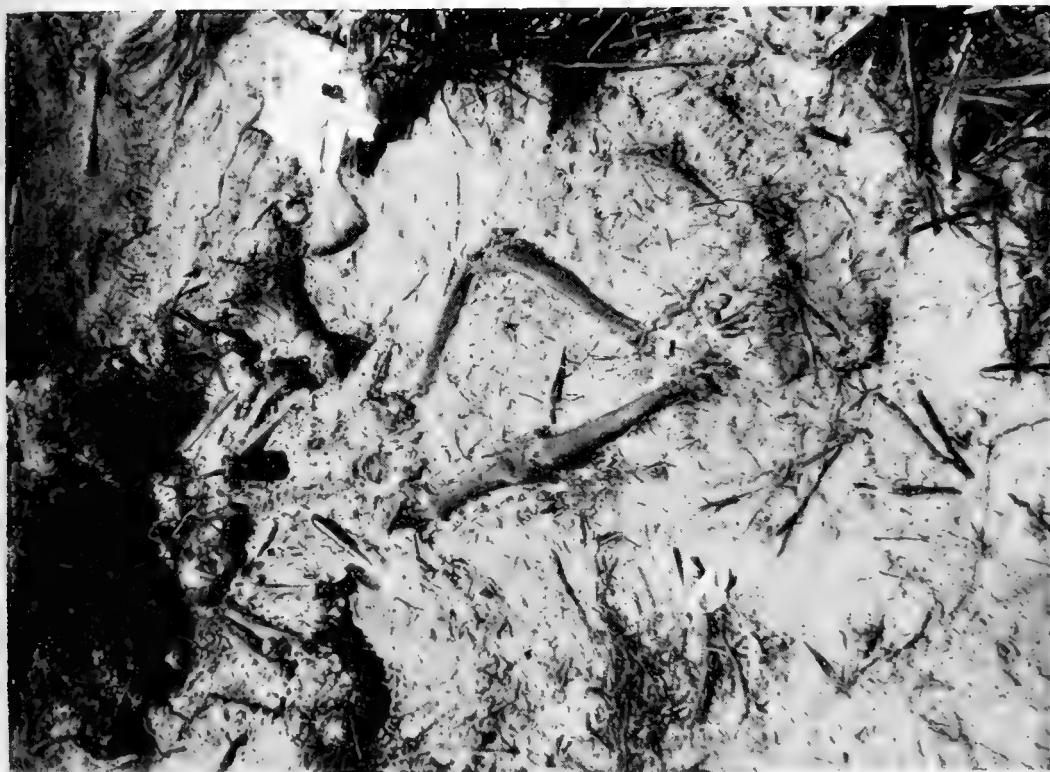


FIG. 29.—Indian burial mound at "Sunny Beach," Florida, an estate owned by Mrs. S. Thurston Ballard. Showing skeleton *in situ*. (Photograph by Gidley.)

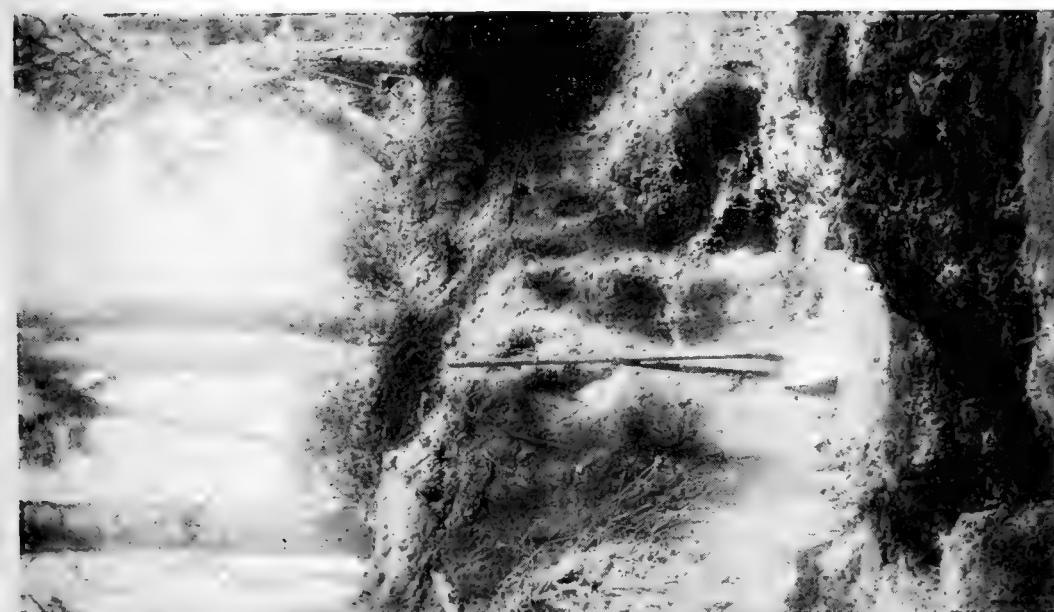


FIG. 28.—Locality about  $2\frac{1}{2}$  miles southwest of Melbourne, Florida, where human artifacts and remains of extinct animals were found associated. Showing top of No. 2 bed and No. 3 bed above, with irregular contact plane. (Photograph by Gidley.)

On studying the fossil-bearing deposits at both localities, it was found that the general conditions of deposition in the vicinity of Melbourne were almost identical with those at Vero, so there was no difficulty in recognizing over a wide area at Melbourne the three principal geologic horizons designated by Sellards at Vero as Nos. 1, 2, and 3. This made the correlation of the beds of the two localities comparatively easy. It was found that at both localities, all the fossil bones taken from Sellards "No. 2" layer were primarily deposited and were definitely of Pleistocene age. Many of the bones of the lower part of No. 3 were also of this age but were often mixed with bones of more modern species. Also that "No. 3" layer usually lies unconformably upon the somewhat unevenly eroded surface of "No. 2." "No. 3" layer throughout contained numerous evidences of man, apparently of no great antiquity, while no remains of this character were found in the lower portion at least of "No. 2." However, at Melbourne there were found, at three relatively widely separated areas, human bones or artifacts associated with undisturbed, and not redeposited, fossil bones of the Pleistocene fauna. These finds were all near the top of "No. 2" level, just below the contact plane. As no human remains or artifacts were found below the top layer of "No. 2," it is assumed that man arrived in Florida about the close of the time marked by the finished deposition of "No. 2" or during the erosian interval between it and "No. 3," and that he seems to have found there a late survival of the Pleistocene fauna, certain species of which may have persisted in the south later than did their relatives in the north country. To verify these conclusions, a more extensive and carefully worked out geologic investigation of both localities should be made, especially along the contact plane between beds "Nos. 2 and 3."

This expedition also spent some time in exploring certain of the ancient Indian shell mounds and burial places of the vicinity. From these a good collection of well-preserved skulls and skeletons were obtained. There are many of these ancient Indian mounds in this part of Florida, but unfortunately the present white inhabitants of the region are digging them up as fast as located in the hope of finding buried treasures. Thus is being destroyed what historic and scientific value these mounds have for the archeologist. At the present rate it will be only a few years until these burial places of an interesting ancient people will almost wholly vanish as have the people who made them.

EXPLORATION OF A PLEISTOCENE SPRING-DEPOSIT IN  
OKLAHOMA

In October, Dr. Gidley was detailed under the auspices of the Bureau of American Ethnology to examine a spring deposit in southwestern Oklahoma. This spring is situated at the base of Long Horn Mountain, on its southwesterly slope. It is about 14 miles south of Mountain View, and about 40 miles northwest of Fort Sill, Oklahoma.

The fossil bones had been discovered here in August by an Indian, Mr. Carl J. Reid Dussomé, while cleaning out the spring



FIG. 30.—Long Horn Spring, about 14 miles south of Mountain View, Oklahoma, on ranch owned by Miss Reid Dussomé, great granddaughter of Satanta, a former chief of the Kiowa Indians. Showing excavation above spring where a "banner" stone was found associated with remains of Pleistocene animals. (Photograph by Gidley.)

preparatory to enclosing it with concrete in order to get a better and cleaner flow of water for domestic purposes. Thus, an area of about 150 square feet was exposed to the bottom of the deposit which here is only 6 or 7 feet in depth. Additional excavations were made under the direction of Dr. Gidley in October, which added about 300 square feet to the area explored. The fossil bones were confined entirely to the lower 18 inches of the stratum which consists mostly of a black, sticky mud, or clay. The general results of this exploration seem to be important, although not a great amount of material was obtained. A small collection of Pleistocene fossils were procured, part being donated by Mr. Reid and

part collected by Dr. Gidley. Most important was the finding of a broken bannerstone, near the bottom of the fossil bone-bearing layer and in apparently normal immediate association with remains of an extinct horse, while remains of the mammoth, mastodon, and mylodon were recovered at the same level a few feet away. The shallowness of the fossil bone layer, the general character and disposition of the deposits, the little altered condition of the fossil bones and the aspect of the immediate surroundings, all suggest, however, a not remote antiquity for the origin of this material, and again raises the question of whether or not a remnant of the American Pleistocene fauna may not have survived to a much later date in the southern border of the United States than has hitherto been supposed.

#### FIELD-WORK IN ASTROPHYSICS

With the unanimous endorsement of the National Academy of Sciences, the Chiefs of the United States and British Weather Services, and of several other eminent meteorologists, the Congress of the United States increased its appropriation for the Astrophysical Observatory sufficiently to enable the Smithsonian Institution to continue the solar radiation station at Montezuma, Chile, for the fiscal year 1926. Hitherto this station has been carried in part by the income of the Hodgkins fund of the Smithsonian Institution and in part by the grants of Mr. John A. Roebling, who has now discontinued his support, after expending a very large sum on this and related researches.

The Smithsonian has therefore been able to continue daily observations of the variation of the sun at two exceptionally cloudless desert stations. Daily telegrams have been received within 24 hours after the observations, which indicate the independent results of the two observatories. This information has been communicated immediately to Mr. H. H. Clayton, who has continued his studies of the relations of solar variation to weather. As a test of his results, he has sent daily solar forecasts to the Institution estimating the temperature of New York City 3, 4, and 5 days in advance. He has also sent (3 days before their commencements) forecasts of temperature departures at New York for each week and month.

These results will not be made public as forecasts. They are merely to enable the Smithsonian Institution to estimate Mr. Clayton's success in these experiments. However, the results hitherto show very



FIG. 31.—Cottage for observers at the new Table Mountain, California, station of the Smithsonian Astrophysical Observatory.



FIG. 32.—Concrete observing tunnel at Table Mountain, California.

certainly real prevision on Mr. Clayton's part, and a gradual increase in the accuracy of his forecasts. That the forecasts are not even more close to the event than they are is due to several causes, not least of which is the imperfect character of the Smithsonian solar radiation observations.

Our two stations in Arizona and Chile differed on the daily average by about 0.5 per cent during the past two years. Clayton's researches seem to demand a higher degree of accuracy than this. It can only be



FIG. 33.—Mt. North Baldy from the road to the Table Mountain observing station.

attained by small improvements in various parts of the observations, by the improvement, if possible, of the existing stations, and by adding new stations of the highest merit.

All three of these improvements are in progress. A complete critical revision of methods of observation and reduction of solar radiation observations is being made. Through Mr. Roebling's generosity, the station at Harqua Hala, Arizona, is being removed to Table Mountain, California, 2,000 feet higher. A year's observations at Table Mountain prove that the sky conditions there will be decidedly better and the living conditions for observers much more comfortable.

Mr. Moore, the field director, has worked hard and successfully to make the transfer to Table Mountain which involved buildings,

road, water and sewer arrangements, etc. Still, it could not have been accomplished without the cordial cooperation of the Commissioners of the Los Angeles County Park in which the new observatory lies.

Finally, the National Geographic Society, realizing that the relations of solar radiation to weather constitute a highly important world problem, has made to Dr. Abbot a grant of \$55,000 to enable him to locate a new station in the best possible site in the Eastern Hemisphere, and in cooperation with the Smithsonian Institution to purchase the outfit and carry on the observations for several years. There should be still a fourth station, and it is hoped that eventually means may be found to erect and maintain it.

Dr. Abbot, accompanied by Mrs. Abbot, is now making the reconnaissance in Algeria, Beluchistan and Southwest Africa which seem to be the most favorable locations, considering cloudlessness, high altitudes, stable government and convenient transportation.

Four important papers on these researches have been published during the year as Numbers 3, 5, 6, and 7 of Volume 77, Smithsonian Miscellaneous Collections. In addition Dr. Abbot has given a radio talk and contributed two papers to science and one to the National Geographic Magazine giving special aspects of the matter.

#### BIOLOGICAL EXPLORATIONS IN WESTERN CHINA

The Rev. David C. Graham continued his natural history explorations in the province of Szechwan, China, during the year 1925, collecting material locally in the vicinity of Suifu and occasionally sending his native hunters to points at some distance from his station. He had projected a trip to the region of Moupin, a place he was unable to visit the previous year, but again the presence of bandits in that vicinity caused him to alter his plans. In fact, his movements during the year were largely dependent upon civil war and bandit conditions.

After giving up the Moupin project, Mr. Graham decided to go to Mount Omei, southeast of Kiating, and had begun to pack his outfit for this trip, when his insect netter returned from a collecting foray with the information that a band of 80 armed robbers were operating on the Min River between Suifu and Mount Omei. While again undecided as to his summer's plans, Mr. Graham was notified about the middle of June that the local military authority requested all foreigners to go to Kiating together, with a heavy escort for safety. In his diary, Mr. Graham writes: "The General says that possibly 500 soldiers will have to be sent along with us. Conditions between here

and Kiating are the worst they have been for years." In preparing for the trip to Kiating, soldiers commandeered Graham's boat, but eventually he recovered it, and on June 27 the foreign party, consisting of five boat loads, with twenty cargo boats, started on the journey.

At Sin Shih Pien, the foreigners were delayed a day or two, and the officers in charge of the escort compelled them to pay \$900.00 for protection to Kiating. On June 29 they left Sin Shih Pien and at night camped at Nang Chang, on the north side of the stream, with a band of robbers just across the river. On June 30 they made further progress, reaching Si Chi, and on July 1 went 40 li to Mal-intsang, where they learned that the Eighth Regiment had come out and taken Chien Way. The escort was at war with the Eighth Regiment, and did not dare go any farther. Graham writes: "We therefore arranged to allow them to depart, and for us to go on with some militia escorting."

On July 3 the party reached Ho Keo, 20 li from Chien Way, where they found that civil war had suddenly come upon them again. The party secured permission to continue on its way, though progress was rendered difficult by heavy rains, which caused the river to rise several feet. On July 5 the party sent a messenger ahead to Kiating, as they were out of money and nearly out of bread and coolies. Mr. Graham writes: "I have travelled up the Min River many times, but this has been the slowest and worst trip I have ever made. This is due to the cargo boats, to high water, and to the brigands. . . . From Suifu it has been impossible to shoot birds because of brigands and military operations." The party reached Kiating on July 7, and having gone thus far, Mr. Graham decided to try for Washan Mountain, and had actually started, when on the 12th a messenger arrived with a letter saying conditions were getting worse down the river, that many British subjects were leaving Szechwan, and that all foreigners might be ordered to leave, also advising that he abandon his plan to visit Washan. He notes: "It is a keen disappointment, but it seems unwise to go on, so to-morrow I'll go back toward Mt. Omei and spend the summer as profitably as I can." On July 14 he received a letter stating that conditions were improving and that the foreign community withdrew its request that he should not attempt the trip to Washan. He thereupon again headed for that mountain, and on July 23 reached the summit, which he says is the highest point in central Szechwan. On every side "it is a sheer cliff several thousand feet high, with only one road to the top and back. . . . The road made a few circles, and soon I found myself walking along



FIG. 34.—An idol being carried in a sedan chair in an idol procession at Ngan Lin Chiao, near Suifu, Szechwan, China. (Photograph by D. C. Graham.)

the edge across the top of that cliff, with only a foot or more of dirt and some small bushes between me and the precipice. Later the road leads a long way on the edge of a narrow ridge, on each side a sheer precipice of thousands of feet. In one spot the path is about 3 feet wide, and I think a little less. It took all the grit I had to cross that place, and I'd hate to attempt it in rainy weather when the rocks are slippery. There is one place where there is no place to get a foot-hold, and the precipice is bridged by poles placed side by side, under the bridge is a chasm that one does not like to look at. To cap the climax, near the top are long ladders. It is practically perpendicu-

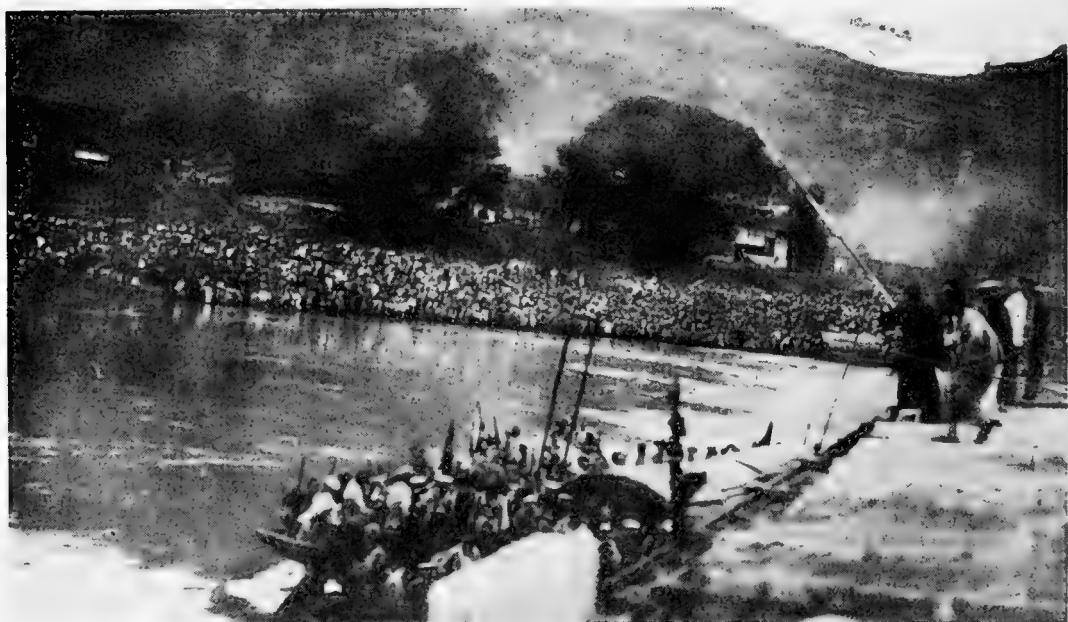


FIG. 35.—Part of a retreating army (the whole army numbered tens of thousands of soldiers), being ferried across the river at Chien Way, near Kiating, by a steamer to which small Chinese boats are tied. (Photograph by D. C. Graham.)

lar at these points, and without the ladders no one could reach the top." He writes further: "We are in the only building on Washan, a tumbled-down temple that will leak badly if it rains. There is no one living in this temple or anywhere on the mountain."

After spending some time at the summit of the mountain in pursuit of specimens, Mr. Graham retraced his steps to the lower levels, and finding conditions further improved, turned his attention to Mt. Omei, which is a few hundred feet less in height than Washan, and is within sight of it on clear days. Mt. Omei is one of the four great sacred mountains of China, there being many smaller sacred ones, but Omei is one of the important Buddhist centers, with many temples between the top and Kiating. After beginning work on

Omei, he received a Chinese letter stating that the Buddhist society in charge of this sacred mountain had heard that he was collecting specimens here, and had sent instructions to order him to discontinue all shooting above Wan Nien Si. He met all of the priests in the temple and carefully explained his purpose in securing the specimens, but they were obdurate and there was no alternative but to comply. He says: "Instructions were definitely given for me to discontinue shooting on this holy mountain, as it would cause some to believe that the Buddhist priests were insincere, and the Buddhist society controlling the mountain would make trouble with the priests of the local temple. I therefore plan to go down the mountain to-morrow as far



FIG. 36.—Steamboat at Chien Way. Foreigners can be seen on the upper deck. The native soldiers are part of the retreating army. This is just before the great retreat began, when over 30,000 soldiers were ferried across the river by this steamboat. (Photograph by D. C. Graham.)

as possible." He adds: "the top of Mt. Omei is a rich place for collecting, and the above order is much to be regretted."

In preparing for his return journey, Mr. Graham decided to pack his summer's accumulation of specimens and mail them from the village of Shin Kai Si, to reduce the danger of loss from robbers. Over seventy parcels were packed and mailed from this place, after which he set out for Kiating, where he was to try and arrange for the safe transport of the Suifu foreigners from Kiating to Suifu.

Mr. Graham's return from Kiating to Suifu was filled with exciting incidents, due to war, brigands, and lack of food. He writes: "With over one hundred thousand troops engaged in civil war in the Province, with bands of robbers everywhere, and with the serious complications between China and the foreign powers, it may be con-

sidered a victory to have carried through the collecting trip and to have secured more specimens than were collected in any previous year."

Mr. Graham explains that there are two Washan mountains in Szechwan, one to the west and north of Mt. Omei, near Yachow, and the other south of Mt. Omei. The last Washan has precipitous sides, and is the one where his collections were made.

The illustrations show views between Kiating and Suifu, made on the last part of his journey, the negatives for the earlier parts of his expeditions not having been received in time for reproduction in this notice.



FIG. 37.—North edge of the central plain of Haiti, with the low, scrub-covered limestone mountains which bound it. Most of the caves occur at about the level of the streak of nearly bare rock seen near the middle of the mountain mass.

#### EXPLORATION OF HAITIAN CAVES

During March and April, 1925, I spent about six weeks in Haiti with the principal object of exploring the caves near San Michel which were visited by members of the U. S. Geological Survey in March, 1921. Soundings made in the floors of these caves in 1921 had shown the presence of rich deposits of bones of extinct vertebrates, and two short papers had been published in which some of these animals were described. The problem in hand was to determine the richness and true nature of this fauna, and to correlate it with the faunas which have been found in the cave deposits of Porto Rico, Cuba and Jamaica.

Arriving in Port-au-Prince March 3, 1925, I spent 10 days at a point about 6 miles west of the city on the coast of the southern



FIG. 38.—Artibonite River, the largest stream in Haiti, as seen from road between St. Marc and Gonaïves.



FIG. 39.—Roadside cotton buyer between Gonaïves and St. Marc. The merchant is seated under the shelter behind the pile of cotton. Peasants bring their cotton in small quantities for sale. It is weighed on the scales at the right.

peninsula near Point Lamentin. Here general collections were made chiefly of plants, reptiles, and batrachians.

Four weeks were then given to the real object of the expedition. The caves visited by the Geological Survey party in 1921 are situated in the southward facing slopes of the low mountains which border the northwestern extremity of the central plain of Haiti. The plantation of l'Atalaye, now owned and operated by the United West



FIG. 40.—*Adansonia* tree on plain east of San Michel. This African tree, supposed to live to an age of several thousand years, is probably a relic from the days of the slave trade.

Indies Corporation, proved to be a very convenient base from which to work. The soundings made by the Geological Survey party were enlarged and fully explored. Four untouched caves in the same neighborhood were also examined. The floors of all of these caves contained rich deposits of bones of mammals, birds, reptiles, and batrachians, occurring from practically at the surface downward for about 3 feet. Beyond a depth of 4 or 5 feet bones were not found. The material collected has not yet been critically studied, but a superficial examination shows that it consists very largely of the



FIG. 42.—Few Haitian towns lack the open square with the church at one side, and, in the middle, the symbolic palm trees and the rostrum for out-of-door speaking. Usually there is a flag pole, but it was absent here.



FIG. 41.—Characteristic scrub near the plantation, San Michel. Here occurs one of the few remaining stands of the almost exterminated native juniper. One of these trees is outlined against the sky at the right of the man.

remains of animals now extinct. The fact that most of the extinct species occur in the superficial layers of the cave floor, and that practically all of them were found in one or the other of the caves closely associated with human remains and artifacts which appeared to have been interred by the same natural agencies which have effected the covering of the animal bones, makes it appear probable that the dying out of this indigenous fauna is an event of no great geological antiquity.

The ease and success with which this investigation was carried on is chiefly due to the kindness of Brigadier General Ben H. Fuller, who cordially placed the transportation facilities of the Marine Corps at the disposal of the Smithsonian Institution, and of Mr. G. G. Burlingame, president of the United West Indies Corporation, who similarly extended the hospitality of the Atalaye plantation. In Mr. E. J. Sieger, manager of the plantation, I found an invaluable aid owing to his intimate knowledge of the country and the people, and above all to the intelligent interest with which he assisted me in my work.

GERRIT S. MILLER, JR.

#### MARINE INVERTEBRATE STUDIES AT THE TORTUGAS

Dr. Waldo L. Schmitt, curator of marine invertebrates, U. S. National Museum, spent the month of June, 1925, at the Carnegie Marine Biological Station, Tortugas, supplementing his last year's investigation of the Crustacea of the region. In collaboration with Dr. Longley, extensive studies of the food of fishes were pursued, Dr. Schmitt giving particular attention to the crustacean element of the problem. He examined about 750 fish stomachs and by this means added several species to his previous list of Crustacea. He writes, "We can already see specific feeding differences in closely related species; of the two snappers, the one feeds on the sand-dwelling Crustacea, and the other on the rock and eel-grass inhabiting forms. And these are fishes that during the day largely school together; in fact, we take them with the same shot of dynamite." About two thousand specimens of marine invertebrates were obtained through Dr. Schmitt's efforts, consisting chiefly of Crustacea, Sponges, Coelenterates, Bryozoa, Echinoderms, and marine Annelids.

#### STUDY OF THE CRUSTACEANS OF SOUTH AMERICA

Dr. Waldo L. Schmitt, curator of marine invertebrates, U. S. National Museum, was awarded the Walter Rathbone Bacon Scholar-



FIG. 43.—The wharf of the Carnegie Marine Biological Station, Tortugas, showing some of the laboratory buildings.



FIG. 44.—One of the collecting launches belonging to the Carnegie Marine Biological Station, Tortugas.

ship of the Smithsonian Institution for the purpose of making a study of the crustacean fauna of South America. He hoped to spend the last six months of this year investigating the fauna of the east coast of the continent, and left New York August 1, arriving at Rio de Janeiro on the 13th, where he was accorded every courtesy, both by the Brazilian officials and the American Ambassador. Much collecting was done in the Bay of Rio de Janeiro, and valuable material obtained at Paqueta Island.

Dr. Schmitt visited the Museu Nacional, examined the collections, and received much valuable information from Dr. Carlos Moreira, the Brazilian carcinologist, who was for a long time attached to the



FIG. 45.—Museum at São Paulo, Brazil.

Museum, in regard to the local marine fauna and the best collecting grounds.

Heavy rains and unavoidable delays prolonged his sojourn at Rio de Janeiro until September 7, when he left for Santos, arriving there the following day. The nearby Museu Paulista at São Paulo was visited and here he met Dr. H. Luderwaldt, Custodian, who for many years has been a correspondent of the U. S. National Museum. The collections of the Museum were examined and greatly admired by Dr. Schmitt. He was very much gratified at receiving from the Museu Paulista permission to work up its collection of unidentified crustacea, and for the privilege of making exchanges. The fishing grounds of Santos were visited and some material obtained from the seine hauls of the fishermen.

On September 17, accompanied by Dr. Luderwaldt, he started for São Sebastiao, arriving the next morning after a most uncomfortable night on a small boat. The collecting here was good and many varieties of crustacea were obtained. Night collecting yielded valuable tow-net hauls. Upon this island several species of fresh-water shrimps were obtained. Dr. Schmitt is of the impression that these shrimps can travel considerable distances over land through the woods should their parent stream go dry. He states that tiny Euphausids produce a magnificent phosphorescence at night in the waters around the island.



FIG. 46.—House in Blumenau similar to the one which formed the early home of Fritz Müller.

He returned to Santos September 28, where several cases of specimens were prepared for shipment to Washington.

Passing down the coast, collections were made at São Francisco Island, then at Castro where several fresh-water streams were visited. Here, amongst other things, two species of an anomuran crab of the genus *Aeglea* were obtained. These Dr. Schmitt considered a great find, as they are rather rare in collections and there has been some uncertainty as to their status.

He left Castro October 21, and traveled by auto over the mountains to Blumenau. Here he met Fritz Schmitt, son-in-law of Fritz Müller, the celebrated naturalist, visited Müller's former home and saw the very simple microscopes with which he did such excellent work.

He returned to São Francisco October 27, when several cases of specimens were packed for shipment to Washington. The weather and tides being favorable, some excellent collections of shrimps and amphipods were made at this station, and he says "I've extended the ranges of a number of species, and surely found a couple of new ones here."

He arrived off Itajahy at 8 p. m., November 2, after a cold, rainy trip, and early the next morning anchored off Florianopolis. Some tow-net hauls and shore collecting here produced excellent results.

Owing to the many unavoidable delays, Dr. Schmitt has not been able to progress as rapidly as he had hoped, but the ground has been as thoroughly worked as possible, and several cases of specimens have already been received at the Museum. His collections at this time comprise several thousand specimens and consist chiefly of Crustacea, Coelenterates, Porifera, Echinoderms, Annelids, Bryozoa, and Fishes.

#### EXPERIMENTS IN CERION-BREEDING AT THE TORTUGAS

Dr. Paul Bartsch, curator of mollusks, U. S. National Museum, spent the period between the last call of the "Anton Dohrn" at Key West and the closing of the laboratory of the Carnegie Marine Biological Station, August 12-24, 1925, at the Tortugas, largely upon work on his Cerion colonies.

The part of the Cerion breeding work about which the greatest interest centers, were the little islets made last year by placing concrete trenches filled with water around four  $6 \times 6$  feet areas and eight  $3 \times 3$  feet spaces. In the first of the larger of these areas were placed last year 25 *Cerion incanum* and 25 Cerions of a new species. Of these, 22 *Cerion incanum* and 18 of the new species were found dead in the inclosure this year. But, in spite of the great mortality, very small young individuals were present. It is to be hoped that some of these may reach maturity and may show crossing.

In the second inclosure had been placed 25 *Cerion incanum* and 25 *Cerion chrysalis*. Eleven of the *Cerion incanum* and 12 of the *Cerion chysalis* were found dead, but here, too, young were in evidence.

In the third inclosure had been placed 25 *Cerion incanum* and 25 *Cerion mummia*. Of the *Cerion incanum*, 16 were found dead, and of the *Cerion mummia*, 17. Here, too, young were in evidence.

In the fourth inclosure had been placed 25 *Cerion incanum* and 25 *Cerion tridentatum*. Of the *Cerion incanum*, 13, and of the *Cerion tridentatum*, 10, were found dead. Young also were present in the inclosure.

In the eight smaller inclosures in which had been placed a young specimen of each, *Cerion incanum* and *Cerion viaregis*, it was deemed wise not to disturb the vegetation or sand to discover their fate. In some, living individuals were seen; in others, dead specimens were in evidence. Next year these islets will be examined in detail.



FIG. 47.—The west shore line of Loggerhead Key, looking from the Marine Biological Laboratory towards the lighthouse. Here many of the marine shells found in the region were gathered.

The colonies which were introduced on the top of Fort Jefferson last year also showed considerable mortality, but a number of living specimens remained. Here too it was deemed best not to disturb the ground, for very young forms have a way of burrowing just beneath the surface of the sand, and exposing them to sunlight frequently results in killing them.

This year Dr. Bartsch cut down the large cages made two years ago to the mere four-inch base boards and tops. These were buried a bit around the edge, then a narrow strip of monel wire screening was tacked to the upper edge, allowing about one and one-half inches to project inward. Seventy-five of these inclosures were made, 3×3 feet in size. They were provided with the usual plants, and in each

of them was placed a specimen of *Cerion incanum* and of *Cerion viaregis*. It is hoped that these plantings will at last furnish the much desired cross of individual pairs.

All the colonies of Bahama Cerions are doing well and spreading rapidly beyond their original areas, excepting the one from San Salvador, planted two years ago, in which considerable mortality has occurred. The colony of *Cerion uva* from Curacao, however, is about gone and *Cerion crassilabre* from Porto Rico will probably not survive.



FIG. 48.—A photograph of the north end of Loggerhead Key from the lighthouse, showing the location of many Cerion colonies.

On August 25 Dr. Bartsch visited Newfound Harbor Key, where he found the hybrid colony of *Cerion incanum* and *Cerion viaregis* doing well. One hundred specimens, showing great diversity in size, sculpture, and coloring, were gathered for dissection at Washington, and it is to be hoped that the dissection of 70 more of these hybrids may soon be finished, 30 having already been completed, so that a report based on 100 dissections may be published. The 30 specimens already dissected show an enormous diversity and modification of the internal anatomy from the types planted, produced by hybridization.

During his stay at the Tortugas, Dr. Bartsch kept a record of the birds from day to day. This was also done on the other Keys visited. He likewise exposed sixteen hundred feet of moving picture film under sea, which he hopes will show some of the faunal associations found on the coral reefs at the Tortugas.



FIG. 49.—Young sooty and noddy terns seeking the shade of the Warden's cabin on Bird Key.



FIG. 50.—Young sooty and noddy terns in the shade of the landing slip on Bird Key.

## BOTANICAL EXPEDITION TO BRAZIL

The flora of eastern Brazil is of especial interest to the student of tropical North American plants. Only a few botanical collections were made in the tropics of North America until after an important scientific expedition to Brazil had made known much of the flora of eastern Brazil and part of the valley of the Amazon. Brazil, the West Indies, and Panama have many species of plants in common.

The Brazilian expedition referred to was sent, under the leadership of Von Martius, by Francis I of Austria as an honorary escort to his daughter, Leopoldina, on her voyage to Brazil to marry the crown prince of Portugal and Brazil, the man later known as the "Liberator," Pedro I of Brazil. Martius and Spix, after a few months about Rio de Janeiro, went to São Paulo and from there made their way northward through Minas Geraes and Bahia to Piauhy and Maranhão on the north coast, crossing Rio São Francisco at Joazeiro. They then traveled up the Amazon to some distance beyond Teffe (or Ega).

The Amazon and other parts of Brazil have since been explored and the U. S. National Herbarium has, by exchange, come in for a share of the plants collected, but there was no U. S. National Herbarium at the time of Martius and but little has since been collected, at least of grasses, in the region he traversed in the interior. For this reason, it seemed important to collect material from this region, and late in 1924, Mrs. Agnes Chase, assistant agrostologist of the National Herbarium, was detailed for this purpose.

Arriving in Rio de Janeiro on November 1, Mrs. Chase first collected on Corcovado, here procuring many of the species first described from this mountain by Raddi. In spite of the dense population in the lowlands, the mountains about Rio de Janeiro have not been spoiled for the botanist. Except for the invasion in places of *Melinis minutiflora*, called "capim gordura" (molasses grass, by us), an African species early introduced into Brazil, the steep jungly slopes are probably not greatly changed from what they were a hundred years ago.

Four days after landing, Mrs. Chase left for Pernambuco in order to reach that region before the dry season was much advanced. Pernambuco, or Recife, as the city is commonly called, lies on flat ground built up by coral reefs and mangroves. The surrounding region is densely populated. Wooded hills which at a distance showed no signs of being inhabited turned out to be full of huts and goats and children. In little clearings were patches of maize and beans, and a few bananas and sometimes oranges. *Vetiveria* was planted about many of the



FIG. 51.—Mangrove marshes north of Recife. The coast of Pernambuco is built up by coral reefs and mangroves. In the distance are seen the ruins of an old fort and lighthouse.



FIG. 52.—Part of Paulo Affonso Falls. These falls are so broken that they form a stupendous cascade. There is no one point from which the entire falls can be seen. The canyon walls are devoid of vegetation except in a few spots watered by the spray.

huts. This is one of the oil grasses, introduced from the East Indies. In the West Indies, the roots are used to scent clothing and to keep moths away, but here it is used to thatch huts. The caju (cashew) is everywhere, a beautiful wide-spreading tree, bearing multitudes of fragrant small maroon flowers and fruit in all stages of development. The wet meadows and stream borders offered the best botanizing. Here were great Paspalums and Panicums, tangled with aroids, ferns, and brush. A quaking bog yielded some little-known grasses.

A trip was made to Bello Jardim, 186 kilometers to the west in the Serra da Genipapo, at an altitude of 600 to 650 meters. The hills are covered with scrub or low trees, the "caatinga," consisting of mimosas, acacias, and thorny shrubs and semi-arborescent cactuses, except where it has been cleared for planting. Ground is cleared by burning, and cotton, sugarcane, castor plants, mandiocca, and tobacco are planted, sometimes here and there among the shrubs or tussocks of sedge that refused to burn. There seemed to be little or no cultivation. When a field becomes overgrown with weeds or brush it is abandoned and a new place is burned, land being very cheap. The result is that cultivated spots are scattered hit or miss through the scrub, which is overgrazed by cattle, horses, donkeys, sheep, and goats till only inedible shrubs and herbs, *Jatropha*, *Capparis*, and the like, flourish. No forage crops are grown in the sertão (the interior arid region) except for little patches of Pará grass here and there along a stream. In November the dry season had only begun, yet every edible plant in the sertão seemed to have been consumed, and there were still some eight months to endure before the rains.

A second journey was made to Garanhuns, 850 meters high, in the sertão to the southwest. The country here is much less barren, and more progressive, with fairly good sugarcane fields, and with bullock carts in common use.

With two women missionaries, Mrs. Chase visited Paulo Affonso Falls in Rio São Francisco, about 150 miles from Garanhuns. These falls are 610 feet in height, higher than Niagara and of greater volume. The region had not before been visited by a botanist and much was expected of it, but the desert extends to the vast river, even the canyon walls being almost devoid of vegetation.

The period from December 7 to January 5 was spent about Bahia, in the sandy savannas and marshes to the north and in the hill country across the bay, about Cachoeiro and Feira Santa Anna. A trip across the state to Joazeiro on Rio São Francisco was disappointing,



FIG. 53.—View from the summit of Agulhas Negras. This high region, Alta de Serra, is rich in grasses.



FIG. 54.—A cornfield in a palm grove, foothills of Serra de Cipó. Land is commonly cleared by burning, the trees that withstand the fire being allowed to stand.

the country here having been devastated by long-continued over-grazing. A stop at Itumerin in the Serra da Espinhaço, to the south of Joazeiro, was productive of a good collection.

Rio de Janeiro was reached a second time January 9, midsummer. Several days were spent on Corcovado, Pão de Assucar, and the other hills of the coast range; then with a party from the Jardim Botanico of Rio de Janeiro, Mrs. Chase visited Itatiaia, one of the two disputed highest points in Brazil. From the railroad the party traveled on horseback, with pack animals. A night was spent, going and returning, at the Florestal, a station where the Jardim Botanico is carrying on work on Monte Serrat, affording opportunity for collecting in this typically tropical forest country. From Monte Serrat to the summit of the mountain and for some miles beyond on the Minas Geraes side the country is a Federal reserve under the charge of the Jardim Botanico. One day was spent making the ascent from Monte Serrat to a rest house just below timber line, at an altitude of about 2,100 meters. The third day the party ascended the Agulhas Negras ("Black Needles"), the culminating point of Itatiaia. This was long known as the highest point in Brazil and was said to be 2,994 meters in altitude. Recent measurements, however, give about 2,830 meters. From the summit the three days return journey was made on foot, collecting the grasses. The high campos above timber line were covered with grasses, large and small. The trail borders and mountain slopes also yielded abundant collections.

From the end of the rainy season in early February to the end of the fall in May was spent in the State of Minas Geraes. The flora here is very different from that of the regions earlier visited. The high hills are covered to a certain extent with open or brushy campos. From about Bello Horizonte northward and eastward this campos type was seen at its best and was the richest grass country anywhere observed. Agriculture in Minas is far in advance of that in Pernambuco and Bahia. There are good roads in some parts far in the interior, and one sees clean cultivation and good-looking animals.

A few days each were spent at Lavras, Oliveira, Lagoa Santa, and Vaccaria in the Serra de Cipó, and a day each was spent in the mountains about Ouro Preto (formerly called Villa Rica) and Itacolumí. On April 10, Mrs. Chase left the Zona de Campos for Viçosa in the Zona de Matto, to the east. Here Dr. P. H. Rolfs, formerly director of the experiment station at Gainesville, Florida, is establishing a school of agriculture for the State of Minas Geraes. Of special interest was a row of thrifty little chaulmoogra trees. There is much leprosy in Brazil, hence the importance of these trees.



FIG. 55.—Ouro Preto, formerly called Villa Rica, the old capital of Minas Geraes in the days when there were important gold workings in the vicinity.



FIG. 56.—A colony of *Panicum rivulare* along Rio Casca, Serra da Gramma.

With Doctor Rolfs and his daughter, Mrs. Chase visited Serra da Gramma, and with Miss Rolfs, Serra do Caparaó, high mountains in the eastern part of the State. Pico da Bandeira, the culminating point of Serra do Caparaó, is now said to be the highest point in Brazil, 2,884 meters. Owing to bad weather and a guide who did not know the way, they climbed Pontão Crystal, 2,798 meters high, instead of Pico da Bandeira. A large collection of interesting grasses was obtained.



FIG. 57.—Dr. Rolfs, Mrs. Chase, and outfit in the foothills of Serra da Gramma.

A last trip into campo country was made to Campos do Jordão, São Paulo, a region of high grassy hills divided by ravines full of *Araucaria brasiliensis*.

#### BOTANICAL INVESTIGATIONS AT EUROPEAN MUSEUMS

The growing interest in the botany of South America and the dispatch of several expeditions from this country to little-known parts of that continent in recent years have resulted in the accumulation of a large amount of unidentified material. In general, the work of naming these specimens is made difficult by the fact that a great proportion of the species peculiar to South America are known to botanists of this country only by description, the original specimens being deposited in European herbaria. Obviously, therefore, it is important that the new material be compared with specimens in European collections, and that the original types be sketched or photo-

graphed and thus made available for comparative studies in this country.

In view of this situation, Mr. E. P. Killip, of the division of plants, U. S. National Museum, went to Europe in the summer of 1925, taking with him some 500 specimens of South American plants. Among the groups which it was planned to study were *Passiflora*, *Pilea*, *Bomarea*, *Valeriana*, *Cordia*, *Tournefortia*, *Begonia*, and *Saurauja*. As it would not be possible in the short time at his disposal



FIG. 58.—Botany and Geology Building, Jardin des Plantes, Paris. In this building are contained the extensive botanical collections of the Muséum d'Histoire Naturelle.

to study all these groups with thoroughness, Mr. Killip planned to concentrate his studies upon a few genera, and to name by comparison as many specimens of the other groups as possible.

The Muséum d'Histoire Naturelle, at Paris, was first visited. Here are deposited the Humboldt herbarium, containing the types of a very great number of Andean plants, the Jussieu herbarium, and the Lamarck herbarium, to mention only a few of the collections of interest to the student of South American botany. These special collections are segregated from the general herbarium, and are in an excellent state of preservation. In the general herbarium are the Funck and Schlim, the Goudot, and the Triana plants from Colombia, the Ruiz and Pavon plants from Peru, Glaziou's Brazilian collection, and Richard's from the Guianas. Special interest attaches to the specimens of the Nettle family, for here Weddell conducted his critical studies. Ten days were spent in Paris, and about 85 specimens were photographed.

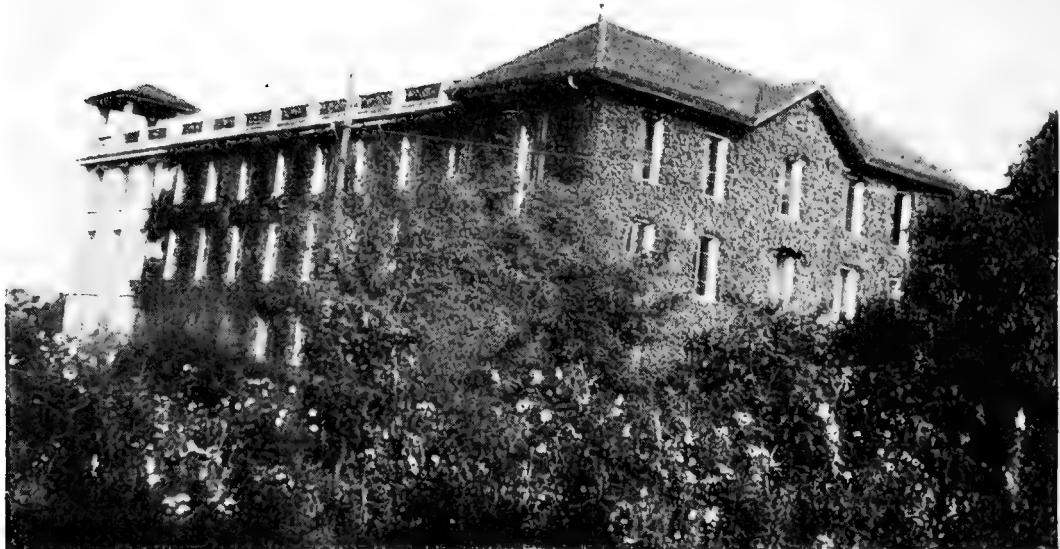


FIG. 59.—Herbarium building of the Jardin Botanique, Geneva, Switzerland.



FIG. 60.—Glacier on Mont Blanc.

In Geneva the work of incorporating the De Candolle herbarium with the Delessert herbarium at the Jardin Botanique is being carried on. An addition to the museum building has recently been constructed, affording ample room for the large collection and adequate working facilities for visiting botanists. The original De Candolle herbarium, that is, the part containing specimens cited in the *Prodromus* and the *Monographiae Phanerogamarum*, is maintained as a separate unit. These early collections have been supplemented in recent years



FIG. 61.—British Museum (Natural History), South Kensington. (End view.)

by much South American material, particularly from Paraguay, Argentina, and southern Brazil.

Twice during his ten days' stay in Geneva, Mr. Killip had an opportunity to do field-work. An afternoon on the Seléve Mountains, overlooking the city, and a day on Mont Blanc netted interesting Alpine plants.

The Botanical Museum at Berlin is an almost ideal place at which to work, particularly for one engaged in studying South American plants. The presence of a large staff of botanists, many of them specializing in plant groups extensively represented in South America, has resulted in the naming and classifying of the specimens in accor-

dance with the most recent monographic treatments. To provide room for the rapidly growing collection and adequate office and laboratory space for members of the staff, a large building was erected a few years ago. The phanerogamic herbarium occupies three floors of one of the wings, and there is also a well-equipped photographic laboratory which is generously placed at the disposal of visiting botanists.

The Berlin herbarium contains a number of recent South American collections which are only scantily represented elsewhere. Among these are the large collections of Weberbauer in Peru, Stübel in Colombia and Ecuador, Hieronymus and Lorentz in Argentina, Fiebrig in Bolivia and Paraguay, and Stuckert and Ule in Brazil. Here also are excellent sets of the Humboldt, Lehmann, Karsten, and Sellow collections.

In the brief time that Mr. Killip was able to spend at the British Museum (Natural History) and the Royal Botanic Gardens, at Kew, England, critical study of *Passiflora* and *Bomarea* alone was attempted. These two genera are represented in both of the London collections by exceedingly rich material, which has formed the basis of important monographs. Approximately 70 specimens in various groups were photographed.

Returning from London to Paris by airplane, a single day was spent at the Muséum d'Histoire Naturelle in reexamining certain specimens.

For the privilege of going over these European collections, thanks are due Directors Le Comte, Briquet, Diels, Rendle, and Hill, of the institutions visited. This work was greatly facilitated by the aid generously given by members of the various staffs.

#### ANTHROPOLOGICAL STUDIES IN SOUTHERN ASIA, JAVA, AUSTRALIA, AND SOUTH AFRICA<sup>1</sup>

In October, 1925, Dr. Aleš Hrdlička finished a seven-months' journey of some 50,000 miles in the interests of Physical Anthro-

<sup>1</sup> Thanks for effective aid, financial and otherwise, which made this expedition feasible are due to Dr. Hermon C. Bumpus, Consulting Director, and to Mr. Seymour H. Knox, one of the Trustees, of the Buffalo Society of Natural Sciences. A grateful acknowledgment for valuable aid with introductions or in the work itself is due to the Hon. Robert Lansing, former Secretary of State; to the British Government of India, to other official authorities, scientific men and Museum officials of India, Java, Australia, and South Africa; to the United States Consulates in these countries, and to many scientific and personal friends, the list of whom would be too long to be enumerated.

pology, extending through France to India, Ceylon, Java, Australia and South Africa, with a brief final stop in England, under the joint auspices of the Smithsonian Institution and the Buffalo Society of Natural Sciences. Its objects were essentially a survey of what has been and what is being done in those far-off lands in the field of ancient man and fossil apes; to look into a number of important racial questions; to meet men previously known only by correspondence and establish closer relations; and if conditions proved propitious, to lay a foundation for future work.

In the journey through France, it was learned that no skeletal remains of great age have recently been encountered.

At Port Said and especially at Aden, it was possible to observe numerous Arabs. There is more or less of negro admixture, but evidently pure types are not infrequent and are very interesting. The pure Arab shows a lively, intelligent, white-man's (Mediterranean type) physiognomy, straight to wavy black hair, a fine black or mostly gray wavy beard if one is worn, dark brown eyes, and a body as richly brown as that of an average full-blooded American Indian. These are the workers. A higher class Arab man or woman, who has always worn protection against the sun and lives much indoors, may be nearly as light in color as many a southern European.

In India, the problems to be studied were first, the occurrence of fossil anthropoid apes in the Siwalik Hills; second, the distribution, numbers, and nature of Indian paleoliths and possible other traces of ancient man; third, the question of the racial affinity of the "Aryans"; fourth, the occurrence of American Indian-like types among the mongolic peoples of the Himalayas; and fifth, traces on the Indian mainland of the Negrito.

Bombay<sup>1</sup> in its living population presents a rich pasture for the anthropologist. Moreover, the city now possesses a handsome new museum which includes a hall of Prehistory. In this hall are several cases of Indian "paleoliths," most of them from Madras.

The Siwalik Hills of Northern India, it is known, have for some time past been giving us fossil remains of anthropoid apes. It was learned that the hills extend for about 600 miles along the base of the Himalayas, from Kashmir and Punjab to near Burma. In these hills have been found, within the last two years, five or six new varieties, if not species, of fossil anthropoid apes of the *Dryopithecus*

<sup>1</sup> For aid in this city, Dr. Hrdlička is especially grateful to Mr. A. H. Dracup, Under-Secretary of the Government, and to the local U. S. Consulate.

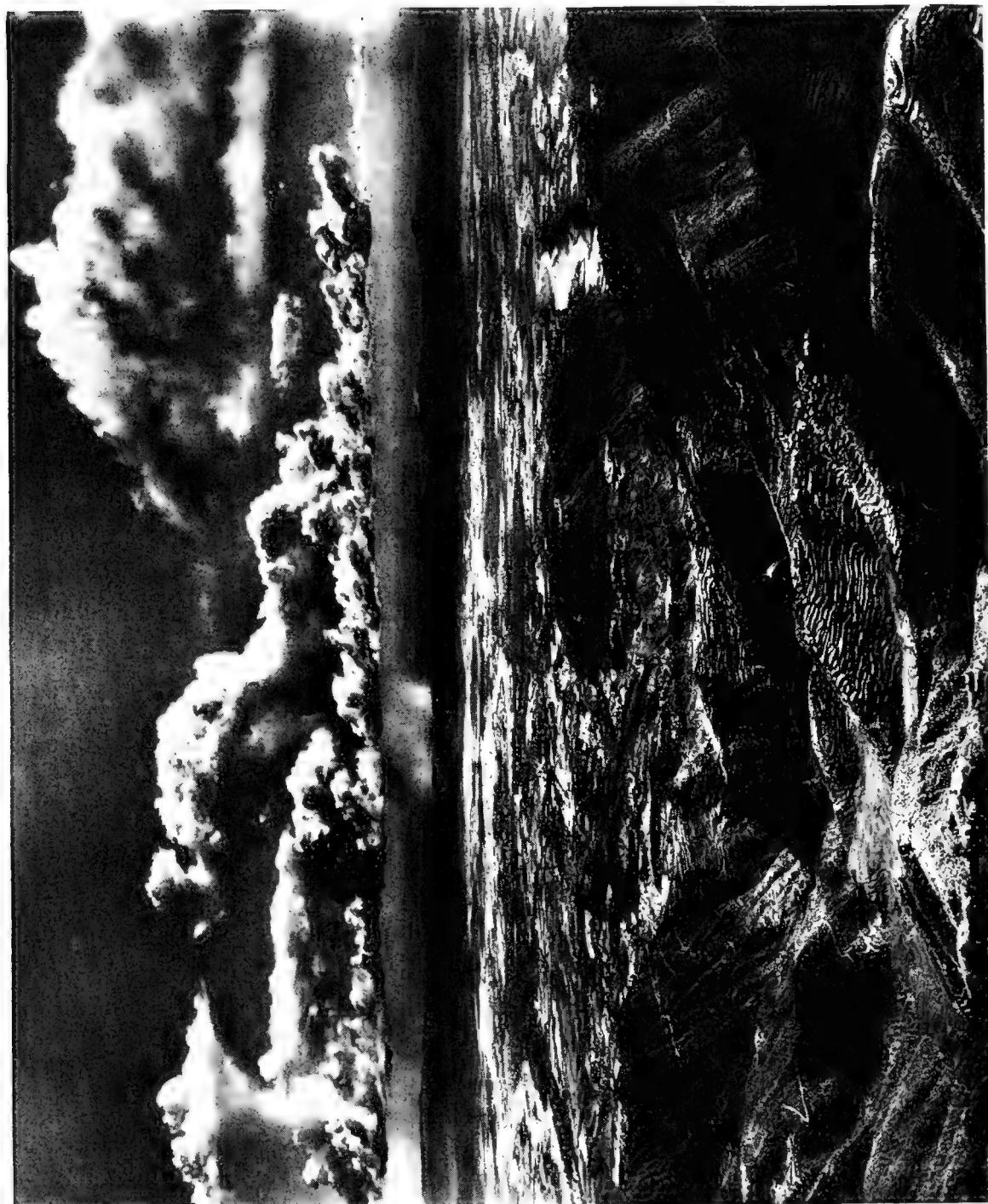


FIG. 62.—A section of the Siwaliks, India. (Photograph donated to Dr. Hrdlicka by the Geological Survey of India.)

and *Sivapithecus* genera, and this with but limited scientific exploration. In former years remains of fossil anthropoids had been discovered in no less than eight other well separated localities in these hills, and it is probably safe to say that there is no region in the world richer or more promising in such remains. Yet this important field today lies fallow. The man who, in recent years, has done most of the paleontological exploration in these hills—Dr. Pilgrim, formerly a Superintendent of the Geological Survey—is returning to London, and there is no one to take his place.<sup>1</sup>

Many other noteworthy Tertiary and Quaternary fossils besides those of apes are appearing in the Siwaliks, such as those of giant turtles, extinct proboscidea, and other animals; and the further possibilities of the region can hardly be estimated.<sup>2</sup>

From Simla Dr. Hrdlička proceeded to the Tibetan border, to observe the types of the Tibetans who make their homes in Darjeeling or its vicinity, or come there from over the mountains, and who occasionally show types that resemble most closely the American Indian. At Darjeeling, with generous help from the Government,<sup>3</sup> it was possible in a short time to see large numbers of the native population, consisting of mongoloid tribes who have overflowed into the northernmost parts of India, and a good many Tibetans. There is seen amongst these Tibetans, Chinese admixture—for the Chinese have been lords of Tibet for a long time—yet frequently true American Indian types are also to be found, so true that if they were transplanted into America nobody could possibly take them for anything but Indian. They—men, women and children—resemble the Indians in behavior, in dress, and even in the intonations of their language.

From the Tibetan border Dr. Hrdlička returned to Calcutta to see the establishment of the Geological Survey of India and the renowned Indian Museum, where were found very valuable paleontological and archeological collections which ought to be better known.<sup>4</sup> The

<sup>1</sup> Just as this goes to press, it is learned that, owing to a discovery of oil in the Punjab, Dr. Pilgrim is to return to that part of India, where he will be near what are perhaps the most promising parts of the Siwaliks.

<sup>2</sup> At Simla, help was received particularly from Sir Frederick White, President of the Indian Assembly, from the Military Secretary to H. E. the Viceroy, from members of the Cabinet, and from Dr. Pilgrim personally.

<sup>3</sup> Thanks here are due especially to H. E. Sir John Kerr, Governor of Assam, at that time Acting Governor of Bengal, to Lady Kerr, and to the Governor's official family.

<sup>4</sup> In Calcutta many thanks for aid extended are due particularly to the local public officials, to the excellent staff of the Geological Survey, to Mr. J. Van Mauen, Secretary of the Asiatic Society of Bengal, and to the gentlemen of the American Consulate-General.



FIG. 63.—Tibetan man, showing type of American Indian; Darjeeling. (Photograph by local photographer.)



FIG. 64.—Tibetan woman, showing type of American Indian; Darjeeling. (Photograph by local photographer.)

former include a whole series of specimens of great and lesser fossil apes from the Siwaliks some of which are not yet described; and numerous "paleolithic" stone implements from Madras. There is also now exhibited in the Museum an interesting collection of the antiquities gathered recently by the Archaeological Survey of India under Sir John Hubert Marshall, which belong to the oldest advanced culture (about 3000 B. C.?) as yet discovered in India.

From Calcutta the journey led to Madras, where Dr. Hrdlička wished to inspect the collections, and to see what could be learned of traces of the Negrito in the Indian population. One of the biggest problems in anthropology is the presence of the Negrito in the Philippines, the Andamans, and elsewhere in the far southeast. He is there—a clear but enigmatic type, without connection now in any direction. His nearest relatives are apparently the Pygmies of Central Africa, but a great unbridged space has till now separated the two. The problem is—how did the Negrito get to his present homes? If he extended from Africa, he must have left traces of his passing in Arabia and India, from which, however, there has hitherto come no clear evidence of his presence. Such traces, so far at least as the Indian coast lands are concerned, Dr. Hrdlička became satisfied do exist. They occur in Parganas (northwest of Calcutta), in at least one area along the eastern coast, here and there among the Dravidians, and along larger parts of the western coast, more especially in the Malabar Hills. This brings unmistakable traces of the Negrito a long way farther to the westward and so much nearer to Africa, making his derivation from that continent so much the more probable.

A great collection of paleolithic implements is preserved in the Museum at Madras.<sup>1</sup> These implements are similar to those of other parts of India. They are all of one general class, so that there can hardly be a question as to their contemporary origin in the different parts of India, their connection with people of the same race, and belonging to the same though perhaps a long cultural period. They do not show great variety. They resemble some of the paleolithic implements of western Europe, but on the whole cannot be associated with any one of the European cultural periods. In certain parts of

<sup>1</sup> Dr. Hrdlička's thanks for help received at Madras are due to Dr. Gravely, Superintendent of the Madras Museum; to his Assistant, Mr. P. V. Mayurathan; to Major Dr. J. A. Cruickshank and Dr. Robert E. Wright, in charge of important Government medical establishments; and to Mr. Edward S. Parker, U. S. Vice-Consul in Charge at that city.

India, such as the Santal country north of Calcutta, such implements have been collected in thousands. In other parts, especially near Madras, they are partly on the surface soil, partly from 1 to 4 or 5 feet and even deeper below the surface. In places they occur in the alluvium of the rivers and occasionally in the "laterite", a talus-like debris resulting from the disintegration of older rocks.

In short, there are plentiful paleolithic implements over large portions of the country, but as yet they do not definitely indicate a man of geological antiquity.

With regard to the bulk of the present population of India, Dr. Hrdlička believes he can say with confidence that it is mainly composed of three ethnic elements, the Mediterranean, the Semitic, and in certain parts the "Hamitic" or North African. The "Aryans" show everywhere either the Semitic or the Mediterranean type. There was seen nothing that could be referred to the types of central or northern Europe. It would seem therefore that the Aryans came from Persia and Asia Minor rather than from or through what is now European Russia.

From India Dr. Hrdlička went to Ceylon, which is a strategic island in an anthropological sense as well as in other respects.<sup>1</sup> It is known that before its present population of Singhalese and Dravidians, Ceylon was peopled by an older branch of humanity, the remnant of which is represented in the Veddas.

No certain trace has been found in Ceylon as yet of geologically ancient man, but there are all over the island, generally on the tops of the hills, plentiful traces of old stone workings. These remains, mostly of quartz, some of chert, are, however, superficial and look fresh and have never been found in association with extinct animals.

The Veddas are only a remnant. They live in hardly accessible lowlands and are very seldom met with. Judging from their portraits and other information they do not appear to be of such a primitive type as has been supposed.

From Ceylon, Dr. Hrdlička proceeded to Java, touching at Sumatra and the Straits Settlements.

Sumatra is still but imperfectly known and retains the romance of such a state. As learned later, especially from Mr. L. C. Westen-anck, formerly for many years Resident (local Governor) at Palom-

---

<sup>1</sup> Thanks for aid with his work in this island are due to the island authorities; to Mr. John H. Williams, the U. S. Vice-Consul in Charge at Colombo; to the authorities of the Colombo Museum; and to Dr. Andreas Nell and Judge Pieris at Kandy.



FIG. 65.—India; a Semitic type “Sheik Mahomedan.”  
(Photograph from Madras Museum.)



FIG. 66.—India; Mediterranean types (Sukla Yegur Vedda Brahmins).  
(Photograph from Madras Museum.)



FIG. 67.—India; types approaching the Hamitic "Rangavis."  
(Photograph from Madras Museum.)

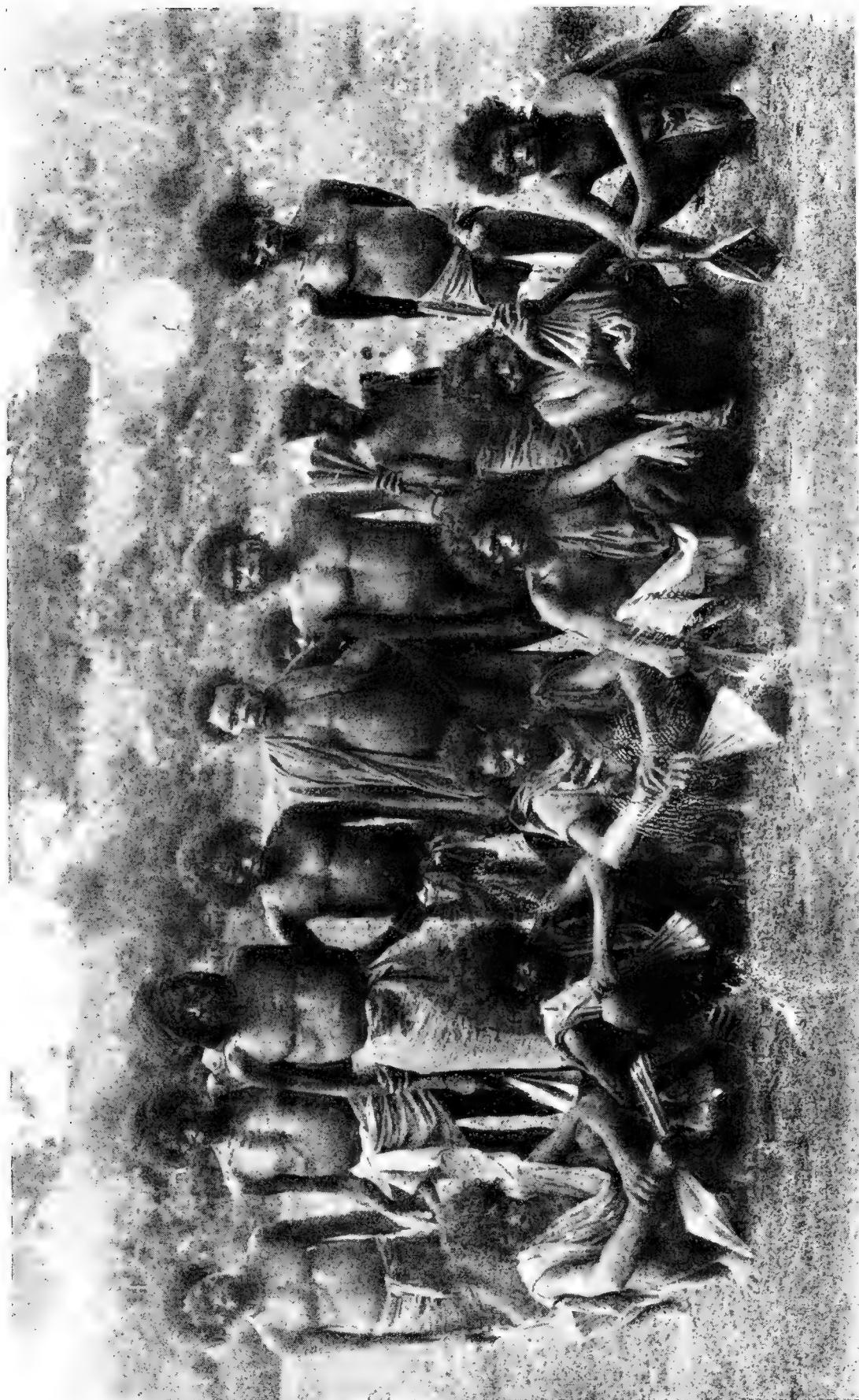


FIG. 68.—Negritoids; natives of western part of Southern India.



FIG. 69.—Negritoid statuettes from Palombong District, Sumatra. (Photographs donated to Dr. Hrdlicka by Mr. L. C. Westenacck, former Resident of Palombong.)

bong, Sumatra, there still prevail in the island among the whites as well as the natives, beliefs in the existence of wild men. There are two varieties. The Orang Pandak (orang=man, pandak=short) is said to live in the almost impenetrable mountain forests of the central and southern parts of the island. The natives describe him as black, short, long-haired, and wild, but not unsurmountably shy—will ask the Malay natives for tobacco. The second form is the Orang Sedapak. He is said to live in the unhealthy lowlands of the southeastern parts of Sumatra. He is said to have the body of a child of about 12 and to have long red hair on head and body. He is very shy and runs but does not climb. On June 20 an expedition was to leave, in charge of Captain Bor, for the determination of what this creature really is. In addition Sumatra has been yielding for some time peculiar stone sculptures, including heads that seem to represent the Negrito.

In the mountainous region of the upper parts of the Malay Peninsula, according to information given to Dr. Hrdlička, there still live thousands of negritoid people, and there are many caves waiting to be explored.

The visit to Java was made chiefly for the purpose of inspecting the site of the Pithecanthropus, but Dr. Hrdlička also desired to satisfy himself as to any possible cultural traces of early man, and as to the present population. As a result of the generous assistance given by the authorities,<sup>1</sup> he was able to see the natives in practically the whole of the island and especially to examine that important region which gave the precious remains of the Pithecanthropus—the valley of the Bengawan or Solo River, a fairly large river, beginning in the south of the island and running north and then east to Soerabaya. Here exists a veritable treasure-house for anthropology and paleontology, where nothing has been done since the Selenka expedition of 1910, which was the only one since the work of Dr. Dubois in 1891-'93. The lower deposits along the river are full of the fossil bones of Tertiary and Quaternary mammals, but among them at any time may be remains of greater value. Many of the fossils fall out of exposed strata every year and lie in the mud, where the natives occasionally gather them and take them to their homes.

---

<sup>1</sup> Dr. Hrdlička wishes to thank especially Dr. B. Schrieke of Veltevreden; Mr. J. Th. Jarman, the Assistant Resident at Ngawi; Mr. and Mrs. S. H. Pownall, at Banjoewangi; and Messrs. C. P. Kuykendall and R. R. Winslow, U. S. Consuls respectively at Batavia and Soerabaya.



FIG. 70.—The Dubois Monument opposite the site of the Pithecanthropus. (Photograph taken for Dr. Hrdlička by Mr. J. Th. Jarman, Assistant Resident, Ngawi.)



FIG. 71.—Natives opposite the site of the Pithecanthropus bringing in fossils found about that site. (Photograph by Dr. Hrdlička.)



FIG. 72.—The Pithecanthropus site from the opposite bank. (Photograph by Dr. Hrdlička, May 26, 1925.)



FIG. 73.—The Pithecanthropus site from the opposite bank. (Photograph taken for Dr. Hrdlička by Assistant Resident Jarman later in the summer.)

When the actual site of the Pithecanthropus was reached by Dr. Hrdlička, under the guidance of the Assistant Resident of Ngawi and his Chief of Police, a whole gang of natives advised by the police were already waiting there, bringing each a smaller or larger pile of fossils gathered from the muddy ledges of the river as these were exposed by the receding water. These fossils were eagerly examined but they included no remains of any Primate. A selection was made, to which the boys added a few specimens collected at that moment from about the site which gave the Pithecanthropus. On the top of the opposite bank stands a cement monument erected by Dubois and pointing to the spot which yielded what are probably the most precious remains in existence.

Further excavation here and in other localities along the river would be relatively easy and a few years of sustained work here is one of the great needs of Anthropology.

After the site of the Pithecanthropus and its neighborhood were examined, a little dug-out with two natives took Dr. Hrdlička down the river to Ngawi, a distance by river of perhaps 15 miles. During this trip both of the banks could be closely examined. They and their prolongation south-eastward are of interest geologically and there may be spots of paleontological value, but there are no other sites as promising in the latter respect as that near Trinil.

From Madioen Dr. Hrdlička's journey led to the eastern portion of Java, where it was interesting to find in spots traces of the pre-Malay Hindoo population which peopled the island in early historic times. In the central part of Java these people evidently reached a high degree of culture and left imposing ruins.

From Java Dr. Hrdlička traveled by boat along the northwestern and western Australian coast, stopping at all the little ports from Derby to Perth. This gave the opportunity to see numerous pure-blood Australians, and also some of their impressive nocturnal ceremonies. Here was encountered an exceptional type of the Australian from the Wyndham district, differing considerably from the rest of the natives. Here also were seen for the first time full-blood and otherwise full-colored Australians with tow hair; more were seen later on the Trans-Australian Railway at Ooldea. In southern Australia other aborigines were seen, particularly on the lower Murray River.

The principal Australian Museums of interest to Anthropology are located at Perth, Adelaide, Melbourne, Sydney and Brisbane. They were found to contain astonishingly rich collections, ethnological, archeological and anthropological, from Australia, Tasmania,



FIG. 75.—A full-blood Australian woman from the lower Murray River. (Photograph by Dr. Hrdlicka.)



FIG. 74.—A full-blood Australian man from the lower Murray River. (Photograph by Dr. Hrdlicka.)

and Melanesia. In addition there are several noteworthy private collections of this nature, two of which (Dr. Basedow's and Dr. Pulleine's, Adelaide), were seen; and important somatological collections are being built up at the Anatomical Departments in the principal cities.<sup>1</sup> The greatest collection of human skeletal material is that of the Museum of Adelaide. It consists of over 600 skulls of the Australian aborigines, with numerous skeletons, and it is being constantly added to under a beneficial law which obliges all the police officials of the State of which Adelaide is the capital to



FIG. 76.—Three of the tow-haired full-blood Australians of the Ilgarene Tribe. (Photograph donated to Dr. Hrdlicka.)

forward to the Museum any aboriginal skeletal remains that may be found.

These precious somatological collections Dr. Hrdlicka was permitted to utilize and nearly five weeks were spent in the work, resulting in securing essential measurements on 1,000 well-identified skulls of Australians, and on such of the Tasmanians as are preserved in the institutions visited.

<sup>1</sup> For aid given in connection with his work in Australia, Dr. Hrdlicka is particularly indebted and thankful to the following: Dr. I. S. Battye, Director of the Perth Museum; Mr. A. E. Morgan, U. S. Consular Agent at Perth; Dr. A. E. Waite, Director of the Museum, Adelaide; Dr. J. A. Kershaw, Curator of the National Museum, Melbourne; Dr. C. Anderson, Director of the Australian Museum, Sydney; Professors of Anatomy, R. J. A. Berry (Melbourne), F. Wood Jones and A. N. Burkitt; Drs. Herbert Basedow and R. H. Pulleine at Adelaide; and the U. S. Consul General at Melbourne.

The data obtained in Australia, supplemented by those on the Tasmanian material in the College of Surgeons, London, throw a very interesting and to some extent new light on the moot questions of both the Australian and the Tasmanian aborigines. According to these observations, the Australian aborigines deserve truly to be classed as one of the more fundamental races of mankind, and yet it is a race which shows close connections with our own ancestral stock—not with the negroes or Melanesians (except through admixture), but with the old white people of postglacial times. They carry, however, some admixtures of the Melanesian blacks, which is more pronounced in some places than in others.

As to the Tasmanians, the indications are that they are in all probability but a branch of the Australians, modified perhaps a little in their own country. Both peoples have lived, and the Australians of the northwest live largely to this day, in a paleolithic stage of stone culture. They are still making unpolished stone tools, which in instances resemble the Mousterian implements or later European paleolithic types. But they are also capable of a much higher class of work. Today, about Derby, bottles are used in making beautifully worked spear heads.

In the Anatomical Department of the University of Sydney, with the kind aid of Professor Burkitt, Dr. Hrdlicka had the chance to examine several times the Talgai skull, believed to be of geological antiquity. The specimen was seen to bear undeniable affinities with the Australian cranial type, but the very large palate and the teeth need further consideration.

From Australia Dr. Hrdlicka's journey led to South Africa and disembarking at Durban, Natal, the first task was to see as many as possible of the Zulu, about whose exact blood affinities there was some doubt. Large numbers were seen, and the conclusion was reached that they are unquestionably true negroes, though now and then as in other negro tribes, showing a trace of Semitic (Arab?) type due probably to old admixtures.

The two main objects of the visit to South Africa were the investigation on the spot of the important find of the Rhodesian skull, and of the recent discovery of the skull of a fossil anthropoid ape at Taungs, which had been reported as being possibly a direct link in the line of man's ascent. South Africa is a land full of anthropological interest. There is the disappearing old native population of Bushmen, Strandloopers, and Hottentots; the newer negro population which amounts already to over 7,000,000 and is steadily increasing; the almost stationary population of 1,500,000 South Af-

rican whites of Dutch and English derivation, who are blending together and producing a type of their own (as is also happening on a larger scale in Australia); and there are abundant remains of "paleolithic" cultures. Of equal interest are the great finds of the



FIG. 77.—Mr. Zwigelaar, the miner who with his "boy" discovered the Rhodesian skull, with the specimen shortly after the find was made. (Photograph loaned Dr. Hrdlicka by Mr. Zwigelaar.)

Broken Hill mine, Northern Rhodesia, 2,015 miles north of Cape Town, and of the Buxton quarry, 1,000 miles further southward.

The discovery in 1921 at Broken Hill in Southern Rhodesia of the skull of the so-called "Rhodesian Man" was an event of much scientific importance. The find, moreover, is still enigmatic. The skull shows a man so primitive in many of its features that nothing like it has been seen before. The visit to the Broken Hill mine in which the skull was discovered proved a good demonstration of the

necessity of a prompt following up by scientific men of each such accidental discovery. The impracticability of such a following up in this case has resulted in a number of errors and uncertainties on important aspects of the case, some of which have already misled students of the find. It was possible to clear up some of the mooted points, but others remain obscure and can be definitely decided only by further discoveries.

As one of the results of the present visit, it was possible to save and bring for study a collection of bones of animals from the cave,



FIG. 78.—Animal and human bones secured by Dr. Hrdlička at the Broken Hill Mine; all from the Bone Cave. (Photograph by Dr. Hrdlička.)

the lower recesses of which gave the Rhodesian skull, and also two additional mineralized human bones belonging to two individuals; all of which, to facilitate the study of the whole subject, were deposited with the earlier relics in the British Museum. The mine is by no means exhausted, and since the interest of everybody on the spot is now fully aroused to these matters, there is hope that more of value may yet be given to science from this locality.

A visit to the Taungs or rather Buxton quarry which yielded, late in 1924, the high-class anthropoid ape announced in February of this year by Professor Dart (*Nature*, Feb. 7), revealed also most interesting conditions from the standpoint of geology, paleontology, and anthropology. Here are remnants of a vast plateau, eroded in the middle by a river to a shallow valley with an escarpment of long cliffs on each side. In the western escarpment, in ferruginous shales,

is an ancient basin filled with remarkably pure limestone. This limestone in turn, through water action, had become honeycombed with crevices and caves, and in these caves lived, and especially went to die, ancient baboons and also the recently found anthropoid ape the existence of which, so far south, has never been suspected. These remains became covered with sand blown in from the Kalahari Desert. This sand was in turn permeated with water carrying lime in solution, forming hard rock in which the remains of the ancient creatures are enclosed; and here they appear in the stone as this is blasted. This site is by no means exhausted, at least as far as the smaller apes are concerned. But to get to the fossils, a man must climb with the help of a rope a 60-foot vertical cliff, and thrusting his foot into crevices, must hammer off piece after piece of the hard rock which contains the remains. In this manner Dr. Hrdlička found five baboon skulls, only one of which however could be preserved. Other fossils besides those of baboons have been found in this quarry—turtles, crabs, large eggs and bones.

Dr. Hrdlička examined the large fossil skull at Johannesburg University where it is deposited in Professor Dart's laboratory.<sup>1</sup> It belongs to a species of anthropoid ape of about the size of a chimpanzee and evidently related to this form, though there are certain differences, especially in the brain. These differences suggest that this ape may possibly have been somewhat superior to the chimpanzee and nearer to the human. But it is not necessarily a form that stood in the direct line of the human phylum.

In "paleoliths," South Africa is rich. They may be found in favorable spots along the sea shore; in the gravels, banks, and vicinity of rivers; and they are common in caves. They present forms rather more like those of India than those of old western Europe; but here and there, are also close resemblances to the earlier or later European types. The question of the antiquity of these implements has not yet been satisfactorily worked out as a great many are found on the surface and are plainly recent; others may be ancient. That not all the sites where such implements occur and have hitherto been regarded as ancient, are of that nature, was seen along the Zambesi

<sup>1</sup> Those in South Africa whose aid in Dr. Hrdlička's work is hereby specially and thankfully acknowledged are: Professor Raymond A. Dart and many of his colleagues at the Johannesburg University; the officials of the Broken Hill Development Company, Northern Rhodesia; those of the Northern Lime Company, Bechuanaland; Mr. Neville Jones of the London Mission, near Bulawayo; Professor M. R. Drennan at the Cape Town University; and Mr. Dewitt C. Poole, U. S. Consul General at Cape Town.



FIG. 79.—The western wall of the Taungs quarry. The dark spot in the center is the opening to what remains of the stalagmite cave. On the left is the 60-foot wall of limestone, from about the middle of which came the anthropoid skull. On the extreme right is seen the semi-consolidated filling of a great old cavity in the rock.



FIG. 80.—Northern wall of the Taungs quarry. A darker patch slightly to the right of the center and mid-way between the face and top of the cliff shows the filled-in tunnel in which Dr. Hrdlicka found five fossil baboon skulls.

on both sides of the river at Victoria Falls. Here stone implements were reported as occurring in the ancient gravels of the river, deposited along the sides of the stream before the formation of the falls. A three-days' examination of conditions, in company with two Americans, a South African engineer and some negroes was sufficient to show that the cultural remains here extend over a considerable distance along both sides of the river, are numerous, superficial, and in all probability not very ancient. A good-sized collection of the worked stones was secured for the National Museum.

The Bushmen and the Strandloopers whose remains are being found in shell heaps and in caves along the southern coast of Cape Colony, were apparently identical, judging from the osteological evidence that could be seen, and both show a strong affinity with the Hottentots. And all the essential characteristics of the three, outside of stature and muscular development, appear to be radically connected with the negro.

Dr. Hrdlička has returned deeply impressed with the opportunities for and the need of anthropological research offered by all these distant parts of the world, and the openings everywhere for American cooperation. The story of man's origin, differentiation, spread and struggle for survival, is evidently greater, far greater than ordinarily conceived, and a vast amount of work remains for its satisfactory solution.

A brief stop on the return journey was made in England, where, thanks to the courtesy of Sir Arthur Keith, of the Royal College of Surgeons, the precious Tasmanian cranial collection of that institution could be examined. Here also, thanks to those in charge of the Department of Geology, British Museum (Natural History), it was possible to examine once more the Rhodesian originals.

#### ARCHEOLOGICAL INVESTIGATIONS AT PUEBLO BONITO AND PUEBLO DEL ARROYO, NEW MEXICO

Under the auspices of the National Geographic Society, Mr. Neil M. Judd, curator of American archeology, U. S. National Museum, continued, during the summer months of 1925, his exploration<sup>1</sup> of Pueblo Bonito, a prehistoric communal village in northwestern New Mexico. The extensive excavations inaugurated at this particular ruin in 1921 had been concluded by the autumn of 1924. In course of the

<sup>1</sup> Smithsonian Misc. Coll., Vol. 72, Nos. 6 and 15; Vol. 74, No. 5; Vol. 76, No. 10; Vol. 77, No. 2.



FIG. 8I.—The methods employed in excavating Pueblo Bonito varied as local conditions changed. Rooms enclosed by high walls offered greatest difficulty. In the above view, taken in August, 1924, debris first turned with hand shovels is being dragged by horse-drawn scrapers to waiting tram cars for transfer to, and deposition in, the deep arroyo visible just beyond the Expedition's camp. (Photograph by O. C. Havens. Courtesy of the National Geographic Society.)

work, however, traces of earlier structures underlying the floors of the great pueblo were frequently disclosed by the explorers. Such discoveries naturally required thorough understanding and, to this end, the studies planned for Pueblo Bonito in 1925 were intended to be mainly chronological and stratigraphical. While these technical investigations—by their very nature, slow and tedious—were in progress, most of the 25 Indian laborers employed by the expedition were put to work in the neighboring ruin, Pueblo del Arroyo.

This latter structure is severely rectangular except that its two ends are connected by an eastward curving series of low, one-story rooms. Since the south wing and the extramural habitations adjoining it had been excavated during the two previous field seasons, the efforts of the 1925 party were centered on the middle portion of the village. Some of the outward results of this investigation are apparent in the accompanying illustrations.

In accord with the original plan of procedure, the north wing of Pueblo del Arroyo and the curved series of rooms on the east have been left undisturbed. This decision was made deliberately and with realization that modern archeological research, no matter how thorough, is rarely conclusive; that the National Geographic Society or some other institution might, at some future time, wish to confirm the deductions of the current expedition.

In seeking last summer to establish a chronology for Pueblo Bonito several outstanding discoveries were made. Not all of these could have been anticipated. It was learned, for example, that the site occupied by this largest of all prehistoric villages in Chaco Canyon National Monument had been utilized long prior to construction of the great pueblo itself—a pueblo whose massive architecture has won the admiration of American antiquarians generally. Vast quantities of wind-blown detritus, floor sweepings and other refuse had accumulated during the centuries throughout which Pueblo Bonito was inhabited—accumulations on which the more recent dwellings were constructed. Ten feet below the foundations of these latter houses were the broken remains of two primitive structures erected by pre-Pueblo peoples; that is, by Indians who had not yet learned the benefits of such community enterprise as is represented by the complex dwellings and obvious civic organization of later house-building tribes. The deposits which covered these primitive structures—deposits consisting of successive layers of ash, blown sand and rubbish from razed and rebuilt dwellings—gave the long-sought stratigraphic evidence by means of which the inhabitants of Pueblo Bonito could be separated.



FIG. 83.—Two venerable Navaho who, risking serious illness through telling stories before the first snow of winter, related to Mr. Judd their observations and experiences in Chaco Canyon, 70 years ago. (Photograph by O. C. Havens. Courtesy of the National Geographic Society.)



FIG. 82.—In May, 1877, Mr. W. H. Jackson, of the Hayden Geological Survey, visited and described the Chaco Canyon ruins. Forty-eight years later, as a guest of the Pueblo Bonito Expedition, he examined those same ancient pueblos with Mr. Judd. (Photograph by O. C. Havens. Courtesy of the National Geographic Society.)

Pueblo Bonito was occupied contemporaneously by two distinct groups of prehistoric agriculturists. The explorations of the preceding four summers had established this fact beyond question. Their dwellings, their ceremonial chambers, their cultural remains were alike divisible into two classes. One of these was early; the other, late. And yet, throughout a considerable period the two were co-existent. As the evidence accumulated with each successive expedition it became the more certain that Pueblo Bonito, as it stood



FIG. 84.—From the north rim of Chaco Canyon one looked down upon a veritable maze of foundation walls that emerged from beneath the outer rooms of Pueblo Bonito and continued eastward more than 500 feet. (Photograph by O. C. Havens. Courtesy of the National Geographic Society.)

at the time of its abandonment, represented the individual and yet cooperative efforts of these two distinct peoples. Their clan organizations were obviously similar; their daily activities were probably identical; the utensils they used daily in their several households, while exhibiting no marked difference to the untrained eye, showed to the archeologist dissimilarities that could only have resulted from the industry of separate groups, each trained to its own mode of thought and self expression. The researches of the expedition during 1925 fixed beyond reasonable conjecture the truth of these earlier deductions.

Two members of Mr. Judd's scientific staff devoted their undivided attention last summer to examination of the pottery fragments collected from the individual rooms explored during the previous four seasons. These sherds were separable into various types, based on the stratigraphic evidence above mentioned. As an indication of the vast number of vessels fashioned by prehistoric potters, final tabulation of the fragments from Pueblo Bonito alone, after eliminating all possible duplicates, shows over two hundred thousand



FIG. 85.—Not the least puzzling of the many riddles connected with the foundations above pictured was the purpose served by this group of seven huge, ash-filled ovens. (Photograph by O. C. Havens. Courtesy of the National Geographic Society.)

individual pieces. These represent successive periods of occupancy as well as variations in design and technique for each such period. In assembling the information conveyed by these fragments of broken pottery more than two million sherds were handled at least twice. Lesser ceramic collections from Pueblo del Arroyo were studied with equal devotion to detail.

By a series of four great trenches the site occupied by Pueblo Bonito, together with its immediate surroundings, was laid bare. Each trench provided a cross section by means of which the Expedition staff was enabled to visualize the successive changes which



FIG. 87.—The Expedition's third exploratory trench bisected the east refuse mound and ended against the outer south wall of Pueblo Bonito. More than 5 feet beneath the latter and overlain by successive strata of man-made rubbish was a huge fireplace. (Photograph by O. C. Havens. Courtesy of the National Geographic Society.)



FIG. 86.—A great trench through the west court of Pueblo Bonito revealed deeply buried walls, a partially razed kiva over 50 feet in diameter and stratified accumulations of household refuse. Herein was pictured the domestic history of this ancient village. (Photograph by O. C. Havens. Courtesy of the National Geographic Society.)

occurred throughout the entire period of human occupancy. Hearths were encountered eight feet, and more, below the surface; evidence of frequent reconstruction, of alterations in the grouping of dwellings, of destructive conflagrations were disclosed by these cross sections.

In addition, a former channel for the diversion of flood waters—mud-laden floods that refused to stay within the man-made banks intended for them—to cultivated fields below the village was brought to light for the first time since abandonment of Pueblo Bonito a thousand years or more ago. No trace of small irrigation ditches has yet been found in Chaco Canyon and the diversion channel just mentioned tends, therefore, to confirm the opinion of the Expedition's staff and technical advisers that the ancient Bonitians practiced a system of flood irrigation not unlike that employed today by certain of the more successful Navaho farmers of northwestern New Mexico or, on a larger scale, by the Hopi, Pima and Papago Indians of Arizona.

During the course of the National Geographic Society's explorations at Pueblo Bonito and Pueblo del Arroyo, indisputable evidence of the former presence of human beings, semi-sedentary in habit, has been observed as much as 20 feet below the present valley surface. These ancient folk were far less civilized than the Bonitians but, owing to the depth at which their infrequent remains lie buried, we may not hope to learn much about them. Fragmentary remains are there but the limits of the crude culture to which they belong are still indeterminable.

There are factors that point to certain changes in the geophysical appearance of Chaco Canyon since the period of Pueblo Bonito's greatest prestige; there is accumulative evidence in support of possible climatic changes during or since that same period. The former existence of a prehistoric arroyo, 18 feet deep immediately in front of Pueblo Bonito, was finally established by the Expedition of 1925. The data already assembled suggest that this ancient water course, now completely filled and leveled over, may have rendered the cultivated fields of the Bonitians unproductive, thus forcing abandonment of this, at one time the most influential and powerful of all prehistoric pueblos in the southwestern United States.



FIG. 88.—In excavating the central portion of Pueblo del Arroyo, debris from the individual rooms was wheeled in barrows to accessible points and dragged thence to an elevated trap through which it was poured into steel tram cars. (Photograph by O. C. Havens. Courtesy of the National Geographic Society.)



FIG. 89.—By September, 1925, exploration of Pueblo del Arroyo had been completed but the original court pavement still lay several feet below the last level of human occupancy. (Photograph by O. C. Havens. Courtesy of the National Geographic Society.)

## ARCHEOLOGICAL AND ANTHROPOMETRICAL WORK IN MISSISSIPPI

Henry B. Collins, Jr., assistant curator of ethnology, U. S. National Museum, was engaged during the summer of 1925 in an archeological reconnaissance and exploration of the ancient Choctaw territory in Mississippi for the Bureau of American Ethnology. In cooperation with the Bureau, the Mississippi Department of Archives and History detailed Mr. H. H. Knoblock, assistant in the department, to participate in the work.

The region selected for investigation was the eastern part of the state, the former center of the Choctaw tribe. Here are found not only the village sites known to have been occupied by the Choctaw within historic times, but also a number of prehistoric mounds similar to those found throughout the Mississippi Valley and in other parts of the South and East, denoting a still earlier occupancy of this region by either the Choctaw themselves or by related tribes.

At the time of first contact with Europeans, the Choctaw were the most numerous of all the southern Indians. They are also generally regarded as a basic type, culturally and physically, of the great Muskhogean linguistic stock. In any consideration of the ethnic problems of the South, therefore, the Choctaw must assume a place of importance, but as yet very little work has been done among them. It was decided, therefore, that operations for the summer should be confined to definitely-known Choctaw territory, devoting part of the time to exploration of historic village sites and part to the excavation of prehistoric mounds, in an attempt to establish as far as possible the relation of the two.

Mr. Collins left Jackson, May 24, to make a reconnaissance of the field and to select sites for exploration. Mounds were examined in the counties of Hinds, Lowndes, Winston, Neshoba, Kemper, Newton, Lauderdale, Clarke, and Wayne. Perhaps the most important earthwork examined was Nanih Waiya, the sacred mound of the Choctaws, in the southern part of Winston County, shown in figure 90. This famous mound, one of the largest and best preserved in Mississippi, is regarded by the Choctaw as their place of origin, and figures prominently in their legendary history.

The historic village sites visited were Holihtasha, Yanabi, East Yazoo, Shomo Takali, and Ibetap Okla Iskitini, all in Kemper County; Halunlawasha and Kastasha in Neshoba County; Coatraw in Newton; Coosha in Lauderdale; and Yowanee in Wayne County.

The work of reconnoissance was concluded early in June and excavations were begun on a group of eight small burial mounds on the farm of Mr. Lawrence Slay near Crandall, in Clarke County. These mounds averaged about 30 feet in diameter and were for the most part unstratified. Skeletal remains, ranging in number from one individual to fifteen or more, were found in each mound. Evidences of cremation were observed in several of the mounds and in one of them, resting on a thick layer of charcoal, was found a compact mass of broken and calcined bones, representing the remains of a dozen or more individuals. As is usual in mounds of this type, the bones were in a very poor state of preservation even



FIG. 90.—Nanih Waiya, sacred mound of the Choctaw, in Winston County, Mississippi. According to Choctaw tradition, Nanih Waiya is the birth place of the tribe, the first man and woman having come up from the underworld through the mound.

where they had not been subjected to fire. Figure 91, showing the bone layer in one of the mounds, will afford some idea of the condition in which the bones were found. From the few accounts we have of the early explorations into the Choctaw country, it is known that the burial customs of this tribe during the eighteenth century and earlier were different from those practiced at a later date. The dead were formerly placed on a platform erected for the purpose, from which, some months later, they were removed by the "bone-pickers," whose official duty it was to carefully scrape and clean the bones. These were then placed in cane hampers and deposited in the bone house, one or more of which was to be found in each Choctaw village. The bones were later taken from the bone house and carried some distance from the village, where

they were finally buried in a promiscuous heap and a mound of earth erected over them. This custom was not confined to the Choctaw alone but was quite widespread as is evidenced by the presence of similar mounds or ossuaries in many localities of the eastern United States and Canada.

Following the excavation of the Crandall mounds, work was begun on a much larger mound of a different type on the property of Dr. B. J. and Mr. R. L. McRae, near the town of Increase. Approximately one third of the mound was excavated by trenching, and while no skeletal material and only a few artifacts were found,



FIG. 91.—Layer of human bones in small sand mound near Crandall, Clarke County, Mississippi.

the peculiar stratification seemed to warrant as thorough an examination as was made (see fig. 92). This stratification consisted of a series of brilliantly colored sand layers, yellow, brown, orange, blue-gray, and pure white, from which, at the center of the mound, there suddenly arose a dome-shaped structure of compact yellow clay. This clay dome and the succession of colored sand strata probably had a ceremonial significance, having been placed on the floor of what had very likely been a temple, the site of which was later covered over with a mound of earth, on the top of which, still later, there probably stood a temple or council house. Colored sand strata in much the same arrangement have also been found in the effigy mounds of Wisconsin.

Within this small inner mound or clay dome was found a rectangular ornament of sheet copper and silver enclosing a core of wood, shown *in situ* in figure 93. Both copper and silver are shown by analysis to be native American, probably from the Lake Superior region. Silver and copper ornaments practically identical to this have been found in small numbers in Florida, Tennessee, Ohio, and Michigan.

Thin, flaked knives, struck with a single blow from flint cores, were found both in the mound and in the adjoining field. These



FIG. 92.—Stratification of colored sand and clay in McRae mound, near Increase, Clarke County, Mississippi.

are identical in every respect with the flaked knives from Flint Ridge in Ohio which, while abundant in the Ohio mounds, are rarely found in other localities.

With the most significant features of the McRae mound so strongly suggesting northern influence, we must conclude that the builders of this Mississippi mound maintained at least a close trade relationship with the northern tribes. While undoubtedly the many mounds and various other earthworks of North America were built by Indian tribes of diverse stocks, there are certain resemblances between even the most distant of them which suggest a contact something more than sporadic.

Work was next begun on a group of seven small mounds on the property of Mr. J. M. Kettler near Hiwanee, in Wayne County.

In size, construction, and contents they were similar to those previously excavated at Crandall.

With the completion of the mounds at Hiwannee in early July, explorations were started on the site of the historic Choctaw village of Coosha, near Lockhart in Lauderdale County, on the property of Mr. W. E. Frederickson. The cemetery was located and ex-



FIG. 93.—Ornament of sheet copper and silver in McRae mound, Clarke County, Mississippi.

amined, but the burials were comparatively recent, dating probably between 1800 and 1830, by which time the Choctaw had lost much of their native culture. Except for the presence of mortuary offerings, consisting for the most part of beads, porcelain, and cooking utensils, the burials were typical of those of the whites.

It is believed that the archeological work described above reveals something in the nature of chronological cross section of the three most important phases of Choctaw culture history. At the Coosha village, conditions were found which were typical of the last phase

of Choctaw history, when their native culture was rapidly breaking down and assuming the essential features of the dominant white civilization. The small burial mounds at Crandall and Hiwannee, dating perhaps from the first half of the eighteenth century, belong in all probability to the period immediately preceding, when mounds were still built, but only for purposes of burial. The earliest of the three stages, perhaps antedating by centuries the smaller burial mounds, is represented in the McRae mound.



FIG. 94.—Choctaw Indians engaged in a game of native ball at Philadelphia, Mississippi. There are at the present time about 1,100 Choctaws in the state.

The explorations at Coosha brought to a close the archeological work of the summer, and Mr. Collins and Mr. Knoblock proceeded to Philadelphia, Miss., where measurements and observations were made on the living Choctaw, of whom there are still about a thousand in the state. Measurements were secured on 58 adults, some of which undoubtedly have white or negro blood.<sup>1</sup> The cooperation of Mr. T. M. Scott, of the Indian Agency at Philadelphia, was very helpful in this work. Particular thanks are also due to Mr. Weaver Bridges of Philadelphia and to Mr. H. B. Cole, of Quitman, both of whom rendered valuable assistance in many ways.

<sup>1</sup> The results of this study have been published in the American Journal of Physical Anthropology, Vol. 8, No. 4, 1925.



FIG. 95.—Group of Choctaw Indians assembled for a game of native ball at Philadelphia, Mississippi, July, 1925. Measurements and physiological observations were taken on a number of the Indians in this group. (Photograph by Knoblock.)

## ARCHEOLOGICAL STUDIES OF THE WUPATKI NATIONAL MONUMENT

So little was known in 1853 of the physical features of the region between the Zuñi and the Colorado Rivers, that in that year Captain Sitgreaves, of the U. S. Corps of Topographical Engineers, was sent by the Secretary of War to follow the Zuñi River to its junction with the Little Colorado and on to Yuma. One object of this trip, which now seems almost ludicrous, was to determine the "navigable properties" of the two rivers. It did not take long to determine this. Captain Sitgreaves records that between Camps 13 and 14, near the Great Falls of the Little Colorado, "all the prominent points [were] occupied by the ruins of stone houses of considerable size, and in some instances of three stories in height. They are evidently," he writes, "the remains of a large town, as they occurred at intervals for an extent of eight or nine miles, and the ground was thickly strewed with fragments of pottery in all directions."

In 1900 these ruins, then locally called the Black Falls ruins, were described and first figured by the present Chief of the Bureau of American Ethnology, Dr. J. Walter Fewkes, who was so much impressed by their magnitude that he recommended they should be preserved by the National Government.<sup>1</sup> In 1925, his hope was realized and they were declared a National Monument by Presidential proclamation.

Other literature on this monument is meagre, but the archeology of the Flagstaff region has lately been studied by Professor and Mrs. Colton, who have published valuable material on the "small houses" of this region.<sup>2</sup> The construction of a road recently laid bare a prehistoric cemetery at Young's Canyon, 18½ miles east of Flagstaff, and the objects there brought to light have been acquired and a description of them published.<sup>3</sup>

At least two types of large ruins occur in this area, the former of which is represented by the Citadel, figures 96 and 97. The second

<sup>1</sup> A cluster of Arizona ruins which should be preserved. *Records of the Past*, Vol. III, Pt. I, pp. 3-19, Washington, 1904.

<sup>2</sup> The little known small house ruins in the Coconino forest. *Mem. Am. Anthropol. Assn.*, Vol. V, No. 4, 1918.

Did the so-called cliff dwellers of central Arizona also build hogans? *Am. Anthropol.*, Vol. 22, 1920.

<sup>3</sup> An archeological collection from Young's Canyon, near Flagstaff, Arizona. *Smithsonian Misc. Coll.*, Vol. 77, No. 10.



FIG. 96.—The Citadel and terraced gardens, and small ruins near them.



FIG. 97.—Rooms and fallen walls on top of Citadel.

type, figure 101, contains rectangular ruins of slabs of stone masonry erected on the rims of shallow canyons, which were apparently used as habitations.

The most imposing ruin is the so-called Citadel, which from a distance resembles a volcanic peak, the cone of which is capped with walls made of sandstone and lava rocks, the sides of the elevation being strewn with these blocks which have fallen from the walls at the apex. Figure 96 shows this Citadel from the side, and figure 97 indicates the broken-down walls and the general character of the fallen masonry on the surface. The Citadel had many rooms apparently built around a central open space or plaza, the masonry being composed of lava blocks and sandstone slabs. The numerous stones down the sides of the Citadel now and then are arranged in rows, calling to mind retaining walls or trincheras so common on hillsides of southern Arizona and the northern states of Mexico.

*Tcuaki (Snake House).* The ruin here first called Tcuaki (figs. 98, 99), is situated about 30 miles from Flagstaff, Arizona, and is in reality composed of two clusters of rooms connected by a long wall, possibly modern, which follows the summit of a sandstone ridge.<sup>1</sup> The corners of the walls have fallen down the sides of the ridge, covering the roofs of the subterranean rooms at the base of the cliffs. In the year 1900, rafters and remains of these roofs were well shown and a few fragments of roofs still remain *in situ*, as if lately abandoned. As in all these ruins, there were numerous basal rooms from which many specimens were obtained, but the best objects were found in the rooms above the surface or those on the summit of the ridge. The rooms were two stories high, the floors of the lowest story being generally buried under fallen debris.

*Alaki (Horn House).* The ruin called Alaki or Horn House, also of the Great House dormitory type, is characteristic of the Wupatki monument. It is shown in figure 101. There are massive buildings above and the subterranean basal walls below. In the neighborhood of Alaki there are several small stone subterranean houses, each generally with a single room, possibly pit dwellings.

The canyon on the rim of which Alaki stands becomes "blind" a few hundred feet from the ruin and is exceptional in having excavated in its walls small rectangular cubby holes formerly closed by slabs of stone, all of which have been broken and many have been destroyed. These recesses were apparently used for storage cysts, and are not confined to this canyon.

---

<sup>1</sup> Records of the Past, *op. cit.*

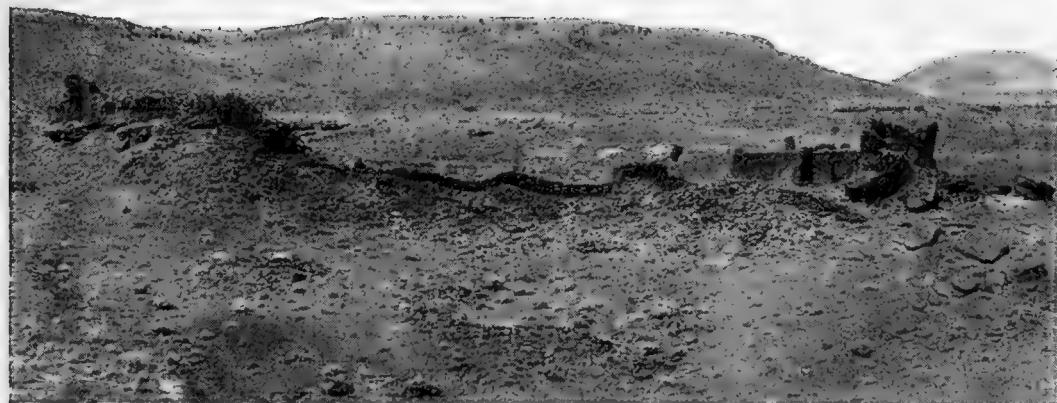


FIG. 98.—Tcuaki, showing the two large buildings and connecting wall, which was possibly constructed by sheep herders. These and neighboring buildings are called Wupatki in the President's proclamation.



FIG. 99.—Tcuaki.



FIG. 100.—Typical one-room house.



FIG. 101.—Alaki.



FIG. 102.—Ruin near Alaki.

These ruins are referred to in the map in the President's proclamation as belonging to the Citadel group.

*Wukoki.* Wukoki, figure 103, the tallest building of the Black Falls buildings, belongs to the second type and is the highest and best preserved of these buildings. It presents some of the finest masonry on the monument, and almost entirely covers the top of the small mesa. From a distance across the sands, its prominent walls resemble a castle, its base rising about 15 feet above the neighboring plain.

*General features of the walls.* The walls of the large buildings that form the most striking feature of the Wupatki monument



FIG. 103.—Wukoki (near Wupatki Monument). It is hoped that Wukoki may later be included in the Monument.

belong to the fine masonry of the Southwest. They are constructed of a filling faced on both surfaces with slabs of dressed stone, often more or less artificially worked and laid in courses. But, as in the construction of all masonry in the Southwest, some of the first principles of masonry are neglected. For instance, the corner binding of stones is neglected and there is seldom an overlapping of the same in order to tie the component stones of the wall together. The corners especially show weakness in this particular for they are seldom fitted together. The stones are sometimes roughly hewn, the alternating courses being often pitted on the surfaces, but also occasionally decorated with incised geometrical designs. The doors and en-

trances to the rooms are generally lateral and the few windows are small, circular or rectangular. Two or three of these buildings contain but a single room, others are multi-chambered, and in the largest buildings three stories can be distinguished.

The roofs of all the rooms are simple, flat coverings, supported by several large logs extending from one wall to its opposite, across which are laid willow twigs supporting a layer of cedar bark, the whole being covered with clay. There are evidences of fireplaces centrally placed, and in a few instances ashes were found in one corner. In one room there is an elaborate chimney, possibly modern, communicating through the walls with a fireplace, extending a few feet above the highest masonry. Although the walls are generally constructed of sandstone, they also show alternate layers of lava rock which, contrasted with the intervening courses of red sandstone, add a picturesque appearance to the whole. As is customary in pueblo construction the stones are laid in adobe in which often occur imbedded pottery shards and fragments of stones. The marks of human fingers also appear in the mud plastering, especially where the walls are protected by overhanging cliffs. The walls of the rooms were seen in one case to be plastered on the inside with adobe decorated with red pigment, like the dadoes of the modern Hopi houses.

At the base of the cliffs there are several walled-in shrines or rude rock inclosures, generally containing water-worn pebbles or fossil shells which were no doubt religious offerings. These also contained prayer sticks, figure 105, *b*, *b'*, and in one instance a wooden image of human form, figure 105, quite unlike, however, any idols which have previously been described. Clusters of pictographs generally of geometrical forms adorn the walls of the canyons on which the larger buildings have been built.

The characteristic features of the Wupatki buildings are the small rectangular stone-walled rooms of good masonry and the subterranean rooms at the base of the low cliffs on which they stand. No kivas have yet been excavated; those shown on the map are doubtful ceremonial rooms.

Typical specimens of Wupatki Monument pottery resemble those found in the cemetery at Young's Canyon.<sup>1</sup> They belong to a pre-puebloan type found throughout Arizona underlying the more brilliant Sikiyati ware and the related Homolobi-Chevron forms. The

<sup>1</sup> Smithsonian Misc. Coll., Vol. 77, No. 10.



a



b



c



d



e



f

*M. del.*

FIG. 104.—Type designs on inside of bowls from Wupatki, southern Tokonabi ceramic culture.

- a. Key figures covering whole inside area.
- b. Alien designs.
- c. Central unfilled space surrounded by serrated bands.
- d. Central unoccupied space and peripheral border. Quadrate design in which square white figures with black dots predominate.
- e. Typical quadrate design with Greek fret border.
- f. Quadrate design in white on a black background. The square central figure is characteristic of Wupatki ware.

prevailing ceramic types are corrugated, black on white, and polychrome, dull red with shiny black interiors. The food bowls often have out-curve rims and single loop handles. The colander form, or food bowl perforated with holes, occurs both at Wupatki and at Marsh Pass.

The designs on the well decorated pottery, both black on white and polychrome, figure 104, are similar to those from Tokonabi. These decorations cover the whole interior of the bowls except the very center, and have a quadrate arrangement, in some examples of which rows of white squares with black dots predominate. The flaring rims of food bowls are adorned with special geometrical patterns forming the framework of the main interior design.

The dead were inhumated or cremated. A typical human interment found in the sands near the ruin, Wukoki, was enclosed in a cyst made of stone slabs set on edge, covered with another slab of rock, resembling those in the Marsh Pass region. In one of these graves was a skeleton with two pendants made of lignite and turquoise mosaic like Hopi ear rings, figure 105, c, as fine specimens of jewelry as any known from the Little Colorado region. Several mortuary vessels were found with the dead, and also remains of fabrics, apparently kilts or garments.

Additional facts of a comparative nature are much needed in order to explain the difference between decorations on the Wupatki pottery and the beautiful designs on the Homolobi-Chevron ceramics from ruins higher up on the Little Colorado. There is also a difference between the pottery and architecture of this region and those of Young's Canyon a few miles away. So far as known it would appear that the Homolobi-Chevron culture, which is allied to that of the Hopi ruins, Awatobi and Sikyatki, and to that of the Jeddito and Bitarhootci valleys, although late prehistoric, was more modern than that of Wupatki.

As elsewhere suggested, both architecture and ceramic designs from Wupatki are practically the same as those from Marsh Pass, probably indicating that the latter is an identical and synchronous culture area which in Hopi Snake legends is called Tokonabi (Kayenta). This far-flung culture area is quite unlike that which occurs higher up on the Little Colorado at Homolobi and Chevron, the artifacts of which are more closely related to the Sikyatki and Awatobi and probably is more modern, as Hopi migration legends state.

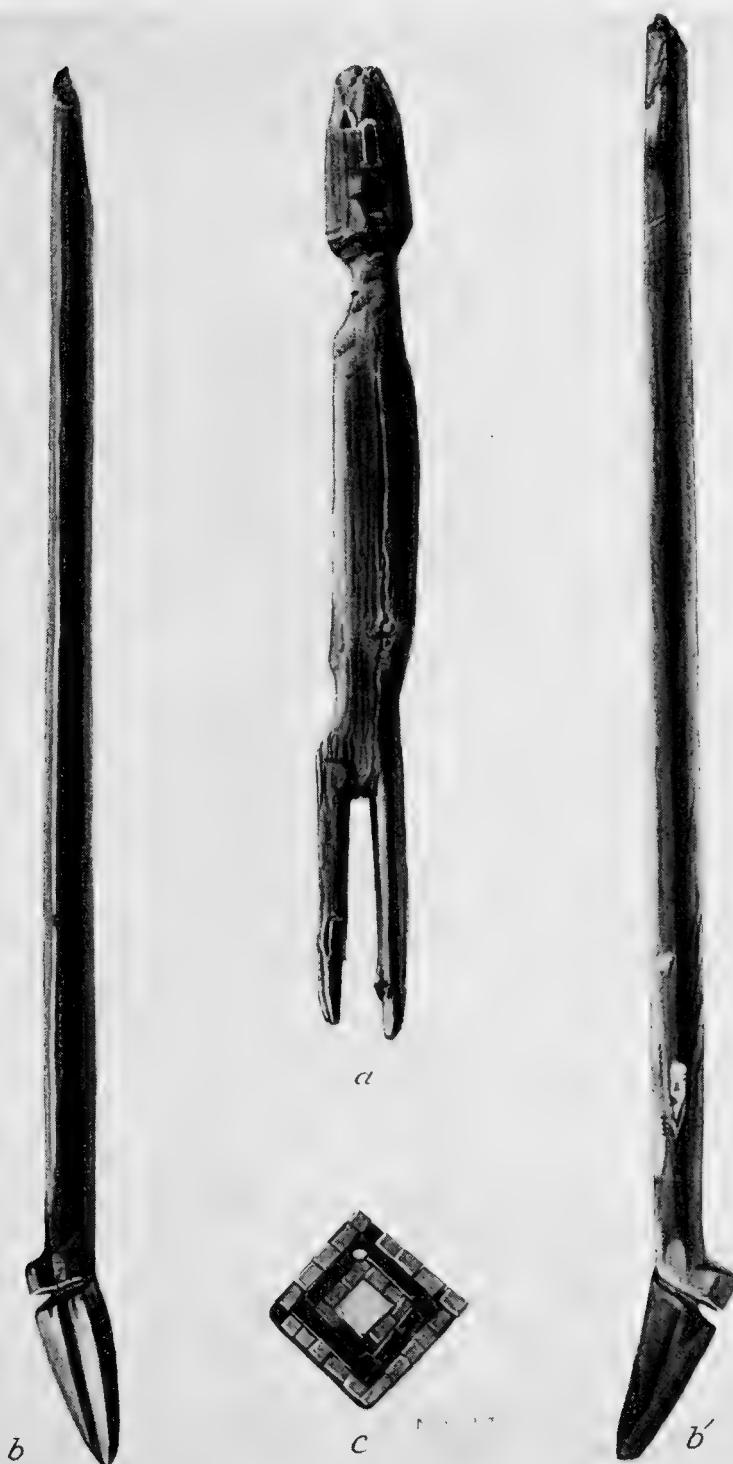


FIG. 105.—*a*, Wooden image from shrine near Tcuaki. *b*, *b'*, Possible shaft of throwing stick from near Tcuaki. *c*, One of two mosaic ear pendants made of turquoise and lignite set on lignite base from stone grave near Wukoki. The grave contained a large decorated black and white vase and fragments of cloth.

## RESEARCHES ON THE ARCHEOLOGY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

At the close of June, 1925, Mr. J. P. Harrington, ethnologist of the Bureau of American Ethnology, proceeded to Santa Barbara, California, to continue his researches on the Mission Indians. Many Indian rancheria sites of this region were visited in the course of his work. In the Santa Ynez valley alone, more than 40 ruined villages were inspected, and in the Otay and Simi valleys some 30 more, at several of which extensive excavations were made.

Pictographs were discovered and photographed; also many rocks which represent mythological personages or form the crucial land-



FIG. 106.—Medicine rock surrounded with cacti.

mark of ancient legends. Spirit footprints on the rocks, of gigantic size, were said to have been made by the "first people" when the earth was still soft and muddy.

At San Marcos the boulders on a hillside represent the warriors of a mythic battle; some are standing with the blood from wounds running down their sides, seen as stains on the rock. A site was also visited where two boulders are situated six feet apart. Indian boys used to attempt to jump from one to the other, and if they succeeded it was a sign that they would be able to jump around the mountains in later years without skinning their legs. A medicine rock (fig. 106) was also visited, a symmetrical pinnacle of stone surrounded with a

circle of cacti in such a way as quite effectually to keep away intruders.

At the Rincon, Mr. Harrington discovered the ruins of a medicine house formerly used by the island wizards for secret ceremonies. This remarkable structure consists of a natural cave chamber, blackened with the smoke of former fires. On the east side is a circular enclosure 18 feet in diameter, the walls of which, made by piling up rocks to a height of about three feet, are still partly standing. Pine trees were formerly laid across from the top of this wall to the roof of the cave, and on these thatch was placed. An extended study was made of this temple, and the cave floor was excavated. There was a tradition that if a common Indian came on this place by mistake he would be struck dead and that if an innocent person happened to stroll near, thunder, lightning and rain would immediately result.

Since little is known of the California Indian house of this section, it was thought desirable to construct a replica of a native wigwam and to photograph step by step the building of it (fig. 107). In all more than 40 exposures were made as the work progressed, thus securing a record for future description. The wigwam is circular and about 13 feet in diameter and 7 feet high. The site for the house was selected and the ground cleared and leveled. Using a short bar of willow for digging the post holes and the hand for scooping out the earth, eight slender willow poles, 15 to 20 feet high, were erected in the form of a Greek cross. The pairs of poles opposite each other were then lashed together to form arches 7 feet high. Other uprights were then added until the poles formed a complete wall and were only "a short step apart." Smaller poles, called "latas" in Spanish, were then lashed on the outside of the uprights at intervals of about a foot (fig. 108). The thatching material—tule, carrizo, brakes, or grass—was laid on in tiers, the lowest tier standing upright with the butt end in the ground to form a firm base for the wall and subsequent tiers upside down, as the inverted leaves shed water better. The material used for lashing this house was mescal fiber. Outer "latas," opposite the inner ones, hold the thatch firm, and it is sewed in place by means of a great needle of willow wood which is poked through the thatch, two workers being required at this stage of the construction. The thatching, when compressed, is only four inches thick, and is impervious to wind and rain. At the top of the house an ample hole is left for the exit of smoke. A fire place with pot-resting stone occupies the center of the earth floor.



FIG. 107.—Modern wigwam of Southern Californian Indians; constructed under Mr. Harrington's direction.



FIG. 108.—Framework of wigwam of Southern Californian Indians; constructed under Mr. Harrington's direction.

The doorway of the house is only a yard high and about two feet wide. It is closed by a door made by tying together an oblong frame of willow poles and weaving small willow twigs to fill this frame. Another type of door is a tule mat, stood on end. The Indian word "to lock the door" really says "to tie the door," for the only protection from intruders when Indians went away and left the house was such a mat or frame, carelessly tied—and Indian etiquette, which said that a stranger should not enter. Similar mats were used for sleeping and for sitting on the floor, and are surprisingly warm when used for such purposes. The Indians slept with nothing between themselves and the cold earth but one of these "petates de tule."

Some of the Indians had their houses lined on the inside with similar tule mats, much as we use wallpaper, but in the poorer houses, thatch and twigs showed on the inside. Between the poles and thatching, all kinds of Indian utensils and furnishings were stored out of the reach of children and in sight when needed for use.

On completing the Indian house, Mr. Harrington started in the latter part of October on an expedition to the Cañada de las Uvas. This trip proved rich in discovery along several different lines. Many of the archeological sites visited had not been touched since Indian times, and Mr. Harrington found without difficulty the old hut circles on the surface of the ground, either marked by rings of rocks, formed by the Indians clearing the surface for the hut, or by rings of raised earth which mark the former walls.

The first work was at the village of Sikutip, where the Indian huts were formerly clustered at the southwest border of the ciénega. There are many interesting rocks and caves in the neighborhood, and four minor springs were located. Only a mile away is Choriy, another large village.

The largest village discovered was that known as Milyahu (fig. 109). This differed from the other sites in being located on a detached rocky hill which has the appearance of a great towering citadel when seen from the arroyo. The little Indian wigwam circles, varying in diameter from 12 to 20 feet, were found all over the summit of this hill. The water used by the people of Milyahu is supplied by a spring which gushes forth from the sandy bed of the dry arroyo opposite the middle of the Indian town. All the water had to be carried up a cliff 75 feet or more in height, reminding one of the practice at some of the Pueblos. Figure 110



FIG. 109.—The great citadel of Milyahu, viewed from downstream. The spring is in the bed of the arroyo at the left. The entire top of the hill was covered with thatched jacales, the pits for which have not been disturbed to any extent since the time the village was occupied.



FIG. 110.—A wigwam circle at Milyahu, perfectly preserved except that a rock or two has rolled inside. These circles were easy to trace and will throw much light on the average size of the California Indian jacal.

shows a typical wigwam circle on top of Milyahu. The Milyahu cemetery has unfortunately been washed away by the arroyo.

On a hill on the Santa Maria ranch, Mr. Harrington discovered an Indian fortification wall (fig. III) which is evidently in much the same condition as when it was abandoned. The rocks have been piled to form a parapet five feet or more in height, the wall forming a corral around the top of the hill. It was used for outlook purposes.



FIG. III.—Old Indian fortification works on the crest of the hill west of the Santa Maria ranch house. The wall of piled up rocks forms a parapet around the top of the hill, and was used as a lookout by the ancient Indian inhabitants.

Besides obtaining many unique traditional songs, Mr. Harrington devoted special attention to pictographs, both photographing them and tracing them off full size on thin paper, so that they can be reproduced in their natural colors.

#### STUDIES OF THE FOX AND OJIBWA INDIANS

Dr. Truman Michelson, ethnologist, Bureau of American Ethnology, left Washington about the middle of June, 1925, to renew his researches among the Fox Indians near Tama, Iowa. There he verified a number of texts previously obtained on various ceremonials; he also procured additional information on several sacred

packs, as that of Pyätwäyā, belonging to the Thunder gens, and that called ke'tcimī'cam<sup>mi</sup> in Tepashit's care belonging to the Thunder gens; and the one called Sāgimā 'kwäwa, which belongs to the Bear gens, formerly in the possession of Pushitonequa, the last recognized chief of the Foxes. He obtained also much information on two other sacred packs, one belonging to the Thunder gens, the other to the Bear gens, the existence of which were hitherto unknown. The information on all these packs was obtained mainly



FIG. 112.—Da lo tti wa, a Fox woman, gathering flags to make mats. (Photograph by Grace Scott.)

in the current Fox syllabary and English paraphrases secured from Horace Poweshiek and Harry Lincoln. During his visit, a Winnebago enrolled among the Foxes was injured in an automobile accident, and Dr. Michelson had the rare opportunity of witnessing a sweat-lodge performance and listening to the Winnebago prayers and songs accompanying it.

Dr. Michelson proceeded on August 21 to Odanah, Wisconsin, to obtain some first-hand information on Ojibwa gentes. The follow-

ing live at or near Odanah: Marten, Loon, Eagle, Bull Head, Bear, Sturgeon, Great Lynx, Crane, Lynx, and Chicken. The chief belongs to the Loon gens; a "head-man" to the Bear gens; and the messenger to the Marten gens. In sharp contrast with the Foxes, the gentes apparently have no special rituals. Exogamy is still practiced for the most part. It may be noted that cross-cousins as well as parallel cousins are not allowed to marry. It should be stated that, as with the Menomini, the offspring of a white man and an Ojibwa woman belongs to the Chicken gens. Although almost all of the Ojibwa at Odanah are Christians, Dr. Michelson found



FIG. 113.—Some birch-bark dwellings of the Ojibwa. From a postal card purchased at Ashland, Wisconsin. The scene obviously is at the pageant held at Apostles' Islands.

that they have a vivid recollection of their ancient religious rites, and he obtained detailed information on some of these. On September 2, Dr. Michelson proceeded to the vicinity of L'Anse, Michigan, where he located a family of Stockbridge Indians, but none spoke their own language. He observed that the Ojibwa dialects spoken at Odanah and in the vicinity of L'Anse differs markedly in some respects from the western dialects, to judge from Jones' Ojibwa Texts. On September 12, Dr. Michelson went to Mt. Pleasant, Michigan, where he began a preliminary survey of the Ojibwa, Ottawa, and Potawatomi of the neighborhood.

## ETHNOLOGICAL RESEARCHES AMONG THE IROQUOIS AND CHIPPEWA

Mr. J. N. B. Hewitt, ethnologist, Bureau of American Ethnology, left Washington in May, 1925, for field duty and resumed his studies among the Six Iroquois Nations or Tribes, namely, the Mohawk, Seneca, Onondaga, Oneida, Cayuga, and the Tuscarora, all dwelling on the Haldimand Grant on the Grand River in Ontario, Canada.

In previous years Mr. Hewitt had recorded with great care from the dictation of the most intelligent living statesmen, ritualists, and counsellors, voluminous texts relating to the complex institutions of the League. Because the war of the American Revolution had badly disrupted the tribes of the League and the League itself, Mr. Hewitt inevitably encountered variant versions of many portions of the traditions, rituals, chants, and addresses relating to the organization, constitution, ordinances, and regulations of the League, and recorded these variant versions. In the furtherance of this task, Mr. Hewitt again took up the literary study, interpretation, and translation of the texts embodying the laws, ordinances, and the regulations, the chants and the rituals of condolence for the dead *rotiyancer* and *koñtiyaner* (the native name of the federal counsellors), and the installation of the *rotiyancer* and the *koñtiyaner* (elect) (who constituted the councils of the tribe and of the League, in addition to the chiefs). The first is the masculine, and the second the feminine, form of the noun.

The organic institutions of the League of the Iroquois for over one hundred and fifty years have been subject to the action of various destructive external and internal forces, and so it is that many of the most distinctive institutions of the League have long been inoperative through the failure of the leaders to execute them.

The Governor General in Council by an Order in Council on September 17, 1924, abrogated the organic institutions of the Canadian part of the League. This crisis in the affairs of these tribes arose because the government of the League of the Iroquois had become such a travesty of the complex institution established by the great prophet-statesman, Deganawida, and his astute collaborators, that it failed to function organically.

By the aid of Mohawk informants, Mr. Hewitt was enabled to resolve the lexical and the grammatical difficulties of the Mohawk texts of certain important rituals of the Council of Condolence for deceased *rotiyancer* and the installation of the *rotiyancer* elect

and to translate into free English speech one of these rituals and to discover the reason for its most peculiar name. The title of this ritual is *Ka'rhawen' hrā'to"* in Mohawk, and *Ga' hawen' hä' di"* in Onondaga, meaning "Cast or Thrown Over the Grand Forest." To learn the cause of giving so peculiar a name is to learn one of the processes of constructing rituals.

Legislative or ceremonial action is taken by the tribe only through the orderly cooperation of the two constitutive Sisterhoods of clans, commonly called Phratries in early ethnologic writings. This dualism in the highest units of organization was based originally on definite mythic concepts. Briefly, the one Sisterhood of tribes symbolized the Female Principle or Motherhood in Nature, and the other, the Male Principle or Fatherhood in Nature.

The Sisterhood of tribes functioned by the independent action of its constituent institutional units—every several tribe. In turn, every tribe functioned through the units of its own internal organization—each several clan, to execute its prescribed part in the larger federal action, which otherwise could not be authentic and authoritative; so that a clan, or an individual in a clan, in special cases involving personal rights, might prevent vital federal action. So personal rights were abundantly safeguarded.

In addition to the chant called "Cast Over the Grand Forest" mentioned above, the most distinctive one of the Council of Condolence and Installation of the League of the Iroquois is that which is designated as "The Seven Songs of Farewell." This is intoned in behalf of the deceased member of the Federal Council which, as a Council of Condolence and Installation, has met to condole his death with his kinsmen and to install his successor. These two chants are respectively divided into two portions. The first six of the "Seven Songs of Farewell" are followed by the first five paragraphs of the chant "Cast Over the Grand Forest." A veil of skins divides the Mother from the Father Side during the chanting of the "Farewell Chant."

By a searching study of all symbolic terms and phrases occurring in the chants of these rituals, Mr. Hewitt was able to identify the phrase, "the veil of skins" with the other phrase "the Grand Forest." The "Grand Forest" represents ritually the totality of the forests which intervene between the lands of the Mourning Side of the League and those of the other side. Mr. Hewitt also made a free English translation of the chants, "Cast Over the Grand Forest," and "The Seven Songs of Farewell."

Mr. Hewitt made a reconnaissance trip to the Chippewa of Garden River, Canada, for the purpose of expanding his knowledge of certain Chippewa texts, recorded in 1921 by him from the dictation of Mr. George Gabaoosa of Garden River, Canada, and also to obtain data in regard to the derivation of two very important proper names, namely, Chippewa and Nanabozho (appearing in literature also as Nenabojo, Menaboju, and Wenaboju).

The name Chippewa is the generic designation of a historically important group of Algonquian tribes of the northwestern United States. Various unsatisfactory derivations have been given to it, and it appears in literature with no less than 97 variant spellings.

For two years Mr. Hewitt has had in mind a definition of the name Chippewa which brings out one of the distinctive arts of these people, just as the Ottawa received their name of "The Traders" because for the moment the business of trading was then ethnically distinctive. To those who first gave the name Chippewa to these people, picture-writing was their preeminent characteristic. And the birch bark records of the Chippewa are sufficiently prominent in their culture to be noteworthy. The stem of the term may be found in the Chippewa expression, *nind ojibiwa*, meaning "I mark, write, on some object." The form *ojibiwa* used as an appellative in the plural would become *ojibweg*, which used as an ethnic appellation signifies "those who make pictographs." Mr. George Gabaoosa, of Garden River, Canada, a most intelligent Chippewa, collaborated in the derivation of this tribal name.

The present writer is not aware that any consistent meaning has been given by any other student to the proper name Nanabozho (Wenaboju, Menaboju, etc., being other spellings of it) of the Algonquian biogenetic myth. Briefly, it is the Myth of Mudjikewis, the First Born on Earth, commonly called The Story of Inābi'-oji'o' (*i. e.*, Nanabozho.) This story, which is remarkable for beauty and comprehensiveness, relates that on the shore of the great primal sea dwelt Misakamigokwe (*i. e.*, The Entire Earth Mother) and her Daughter. This Entire Earth Woman is the impersonation of the inert earth, while the daughter is the life-increasing power of the earth—the Life Mother—the Mother of all Living Things. These two personages were of the super-race of the "first people" who lived when the earth was yet new.

The Entire Earth Woman cautioned her daughter, saying, "Daughter, bend not yourself against the sun at noon-tide, because the Great Father Spirit at that time looks on you. Remember,

I command you, not to forget my words, for surely if you do, evil will befall us; since our time to increase the number of living things on the earth on which we live, is not yet fully come."

But there came an evil day when, very busy with her mat-making, and with her back unconsciously turned sunward at noon-tide, she dropped her mat-gauge on the ground and unwittingly stooped forward to pick it up. Instantly, she was seized with exhausting pains after the manner of women.

So, in due time, the daughter gave birth to a son, whom she named *Inābi'oji'o'* (*i.e.*, Formed, Created, by a Look). She continued bearing offspring until four other sons were born to her—all brothers of *Inābi'oji'o'*. In order of their birth these brothers were named Ningabeon (The West), Kiwedinese (The North), Wabanese (The East), and Shawanese (The South). After this time Misakamigokwe became Nokomis, the grandmother of all living things.

In this highly condensed and abbreviated recital of the common Algonquian myth of the Beginnings is given the key to the literal signification of the name Nanabozho (Wenabozho, etc.), or *Inābi'oji'o'*. This name is based on the common Algonquian verb *wāb*, "to see, to look," which with associated elements, expressed and understood, gives the literal meaning "created, conceived, made, through the look, the gaze (of the Great Father Spirit).

#### ETHNOLOGICAL WORK AMONG THE OSAGE OF OKLAHOMA

In May, 1925, Mr. Francis La Flesche, ethnologist, of the Bureau of American Ethnology, visited the Osage Reservation, Oklahoma, to continue his work among the Indians of that reservation. He was met at Nelogany station by his friend, Ku-zhi-si-e, in his big automobile and driven to his house in the Indian village about a mile from the town of Pawhuska.

The afternoon was passed by Mr. La Flesche and Ku-zhi-si-e in planning the work they were to do together. They agreed to do first that part which promised to be the most laborious, that of recording and classifying the personal names of the members of the tribe according to gentes and sub-gentes, and of giving where possible, the meaning of each name. To avoid confusion in the performance of the work, Ku-zhi-si-e suggested the use of the early annuity pay rolls which contained the names of every man, woman, and child.

Early the following morning, Mr. La Flesche and his assistant appeared before Superintendent J. George Wright of the Agency and made known to him the purpose of their visit. The Superintendent immediately put one of his clerks to work to find the record wanted. The clerk found a roll for the year 1877, which he placed in Mr. La Flesche's hands. Then he and his friend sped back to the little cottage where they began this work.



FIG. 114.—1, Coneflower, life emblem of the Peacemaker gens. 2, Haircut of the children of that gens to resemble the flower.

The two put about three weeks of steady work on the revision of the roll. The spelling of nearly all of the 1991 names found on the roll had to be corrected, and to the name of each annuitant was added the name of the gens to which he or she belonged, as, for example, Ku-zhi-si-e, Wa-tse-tsi gens, They Who Came from the Stars.

When the work on the gentile personal names of the members of the tribe was completed, Mr. La Flesche and Ku-zhi-si-e took up the

task of recording the names of the wild plants known to the Osage and their uses where they could be ascertained. This was out-door work and more agreeable than the other. One day as the two were driving over the hills, Ku-zhi-si-e called to his driver to stop. He pointed to a patch of yellow flowers which he said were called "ba-shta," hair-cut (Cone-Flower). This was the flower chosen by the people of the Peacemaker gens to be their life and peace emblem. The hair of the children of this gens was cut to resemble the sacred flower as the sign of a petition to the Power that brought it into existence, to grant the little one a long and fruitful life (see fig. 114). They drove on to a small-wooded stream where there were many aquatic plants. The *ci<sup>n</sup>* (*Sagittaria latifolia*), Ku-zhi-si-e pointed out as a food plant; the *Mi-ke-the* (cattail), the leaves of which he said were used to thatch houses as well as for medicine; the *ca-zhi<sup>n</sup>-ga*, rush, (*Eleocharis interstincta*), which was used for making mats to sit upon in the house, and for making the inner shrine of the sacred hawk. As the two drove along the border of a small lake, Ku-zhi-si-e also pointed out the *tse'wa-the* (water chinkapin), as a food plant.

On the last day of the exploration, the two drove to the top of a high hill where they stopped and got out of the car. After a moment's silence, Ku-zhi-si-e gave a wide sweep of his right arm and said, "All the grasses, weeds, shrubs, and trees that we see around us as far as the eye can reach, are medicine, but we know the qualities of only a few. Some plants like the *cta-in-ga-hi* (persimmon tree) serve as medicine and food. There is life in all plants and all are active. There are medicines for horses as well as for human beings."

#### STUDIES OF INDIAN MUSIC AMONG THE MENOMINI OF WISCONSIN

In July and August, 1925, Miss Frances Densmore, collaborator of the Bureau of American Ethnology, recorded the songs and studied the musical customs of the Menomini Indians in Wisconsin. Three classes of songs recorded among the Menomini have not been found in other tribes. These are the songs connected with games played as a "dream obligation," the songs of "adoption dances," and the songs connected with the use of packs or bundles, by individuals, for the purpose of securing success on the hunt or war path.



FIG. 115.—James Pigeon-hawk. (Photograph by Miss Densmore.)



FIG. 117.—Agnes Sullivan. (Photograph by Miss Densmore.)



FIG. 116.—John Shawunopinas. (Photograph by Miss Densmore.)

The two games played in order to secure benefits promised in dreams are the "bowl and dice game," played by women who have dreamed of the "four spirit women in the east," and the lacrosse game, played by men who have dreamed of the "thunderers." The manner of playing the first game was demonstrated by Catherine Laughery, whose dream requires that she play the game once every summer. She also recorded the song given her by the spirit women when, in her dream, she visited their lodge. A lacrosse game was thus played at a gathering attended by Miss Densmore. It is believed that a sick person will be benefited by attending a lacrosse game played in a ceremonial manner, and a song used on such an occasion was recorded by James Pigeon-Hawk (fig. 115). An adoption dance is held when a family wishes to adopt someone in place of a member of the family who has died. Two sets of songs are used at these dances, one attributed to the east and the other to the south god. The family select the songs to be used, the songs from the east god being chosen if the adoption is to be an important, dignified occasion. These are the more highly regarded as the east god is supposed to be the greater. Songs of both sorts were recorded, together with a description of the ceremonial action attending the adoption.

The individual war and hunting packs of the Menomini consist of certain articles wrapped in tanned hide. Under certain conditions the owner opens the pack in a ceremonial manner and exposes the contents, singing certain songs. A description of the bundles and manner of their use was obtained, together with the songs which are sung to make them effective.

The songs of the Dream dance formed a subject of special study, as Miss Densmore had attended this dance when held by the Chippewa and Menomini in 1910. (See Bull. 53, Bur. Amer. Ethn., pp. 142-180.) A few songs were sung by both tribes at certain points in the ceremony, and a comparison of the two renditions was desired. The "Pipe song" showed the same rhythmic phrase in the two renditions, and a somewhat similar duplication was found in the "Drum song." Thirty-three Menomini songs of the Dream dance were recorded, and the place where the dance is held was visited and photographed.

Songs used in the treatment of the sick were, as usual, an important phase of the research. Among those recording such songs was James Pigeon-Hawk, who, in treating the sick, uses songs which he received from his uncle and grandfather. One of these songs

is sung when digging medicinal roots in order to make them effective. The Menomini differ from the Chippewa and Sioux in that they employ a "diagnostician" who decides whether a sick person shall be treated by a doctor giving material remedies or shall be taken to an exhibition of magic power by a "juggler." A description of the performances of the latter, with several of their songs, was obtained from a man familiar with their practices.

War songs received attention, about 25 of this class being recorded. Several war songs were connected with the Black Hawk war, which took place about 1832, while others were connected with the enlistment and service of Menomini Indians in the Civil War. John Shawunopinas (fig. 116) is a member of the G. A. R.



FIG. 118.—Exterior of medicine lodge.

and recorded a song with the words "The white man points his pipe at me," meaning "The white man asks me to join him in war." Agnes Sullivan recorded five old, vigorous war songs and asked to be photographed wearing her badge as a member of the Auxiliary to the American Legion. Among the miscellaneous songs obtained were those of the moccasin game, several social dances, the legends of Manabus, and the lullaby sung to little children, the latter being a variant of the Chippewa lullaby. Four melodies played on a cedar flute were recorded.

The Menomini Medicine Society, corresponding to the Chippewa *Mide' wiwín*, held a meeting in July which was attended by Miss Densmore. This was an interesting opportunity, as the society meets only once or twice a year to initiate members, and was particularly valuable, as Miss Densmore had recorded the songs of the



FIG. 119.—Interior of medicine lodge.



FIG. 120.—Women sitting in medicine lodge, their medicine bags hanging on the framework behind them.

Mide'wiwīn. Remaining at the Menomini ceremony about four hours she found that the songs used were chiefly Chippewa songs, with words in that language. She witnessed the "shooting with spirit power," in which members of the society thrust their medicine bags toward others with deep ejaculations. These persons "become unconscious" for a time and the performance is continued until all the members have thus "received spirit power." The meeting was held in a long lodge (fig. 118), and the members sat on the ground or danced in a line around the lodge, the songs being accompanied by a "water drum" and three gourd rattles (fig. 119). At the right of this illustration may be seen the top of the "water drum;" the dancers, including a little child; and the gifts for the leaders which are hung from a horizontal pole. The man near the drum is carrying his medicine bag, probably made of weasel skin. Many medicine bags were made of otter and were elaborately decorated, the material indicating the owner's rank in the society (fig. 120).

Continuing her study of Chippewa customs, especially those connected with the treatment of the sick, Miss Densmore visited the Cass Lake and Mille Lac reservations in Minnesota, in June, 1925, obtaining additional specimens of medicinal plants with descriptions of their uses. At Mille Lac she witnessed the making of two native dwellings of bark and rushes, and took photographs at various stages of the construction. Specimens of native implements made of wood were also obtained.

#### INVESTIGATION OF SHELL AND SAND MOUNDS ON PINELLAS PENINSULA, FLORIDA

Mr. David I. Bushnell, Jr., collaborator of the Bureau of American Ethnology, while on the west coast of Florida during the present year, visited various shell and sand mounds on Pinellas Peninsula. The peninsula extends southward into Tampa Bay and is of irregular form. On the northeast it is bounded by Old Tampa Bay, on the southeast and south by Tampa Bay, and on the west by Boca Ciega Bay, the latter being separated from the Gulf of Mexico by low, sand keys. Part of the peninsula is quite low and the entire region is infested with mosquitoes and other insects in vast quantities. Much of the shore is bordered by a broad stretch of marsh, with a dense growth of semi-tropical vegetation, but some of this marshy expanse has recently been reclaimed in the endeavor to make it suitable for building sites.

The shores of Tampa Bay—Espíritu Santo Bay of earlier maps—are interesting as having been the landing place of DeSoto and his numerous party in the year 1539, when “On Friday the 30th of May they landed in Florida, two leagues from a towne of an Indian lord, called Ucita.” Unfortunately, the exact position of this ancient settlement is not known, but from the manner in which it was approached from the Gulf, as told in the Spanish narratives, it must have stood near the deeper channel which is found on the east and south sides of Tampa Bay, away from Pinellas Peninsula.



FIG. 121.—Large mound, formed of shells and sand, standing about midway between Maximo Point and Point Pinelos. The graded way, or approach to the summit, is on the left. Camera pointed northeast.

Three classes of works can be distinguished on the peninsula, all of which were erected near the shore. First are the large mounds, of a definite form, composed of shells and sand; second are the sand mounds; and third are the shellheaps, of no clearly defined shape, which resulted from the extensive use of shellfish for food.

Nearly a half century has passed since these mounds were visited by S. T. Walker, of Clearwater, Florida, at that time connected with the U. S. Fish Commission, and by whom they were briefly described in the Report of the Smithsonian Institution for the year 1879. The most important work is in the extreme southern part

of the region, about midway between Maximo Point on the west and Point Pinelos a little south of east. It stands about four hundred yards from the water and the greater part of the intervening area is a marsh with a thick, matted growth of low vegetation. This mound, viewed from the southwest, is shown in figure 121. It was visited by Walker in 1879 who referred to it as "the most beautiful mound that I have seen in South Florida." And he continued, "The mound is situated in a 'rosemary scrub,' and rises to an imposing height above the low trees in its vicinity. Its outlines are beautifully regular . . . . with a beautiful inclined roadway leading up to its western side." During past years excavations have been made in the structure by persons seeking hidden treasure, and consequently the surface is now quite irregular but it is possible to follow the original lines. The mound is about two hundred feet in length and twenty feet in height. It is composed of shells and sand, and the following shells were collected from the several excavations: *Fasciolaria tulipa*; *Macrocallista gigantea*; *Busycon canaliculata*; *Pecten irradians*; *Strombus pugilis*; *Venus mercenaria mortoni*; *Fulgur perversa*.<sup>1</sup> No fragments of pottery were discovered although known to occur in the mound.

A symmetrical mound stands near the shore of Big Bayou, some two and one half miles east of north of the work just described. It appears to be formed entirely of sand, is a hundred feet or more in diameter and rises about ten feet above the original surface. It is owned by Mr. Glen Taylor, to whom I am indebted for much assistance during visits made to the scattered sites on the peninsula. About four hundred yards northeast of this mound were two large shell mounds, now destroyed. They are said to have been formed for the greater part of large oyster shells, and fragmentary pottery was found throughout the mass. When the site was examined large shells of the *Ostrea virginica* were discovered, some being seven inches in length. These were in the lowest and consequently oldest part of the mound or mounds.

Next to be considered are works on the west side of the peninsula, south of the railroad bridge across Four Mile Bayou. On the shore, opposite the mouth of the bayou, is an extensive shell-heap, part of which is shown in figure 122, a view looking southwest, over the waters of Boca Ciega Bay to the low keys beyond. About one thousand feet inland from the shellheap is a large shell and

<sup>1</sup> All shells have been identified by Dr. Paul Bartsch, of the U. S. National Museum.



FIG. 122.—Shellheap on the west side of the peninsula at the mouth of Long or Four Mile Bayou. The view is looking southwest showing the waters of Boca Ciega Bay.



FIG. 123.—Compact mass of shells exposed near the summit of a large mound standing about three hundred yards inland, east, from the mouth of Four Mile Bayou.

sand mound, quite similar in appearance to the great mound in the southern part of the peninsula. A small part of the southern section of the work has been removed and the upper portion, thus exposed to view, is shown in figure 123. This reveals a compact mass of shells, usually of small size. The shells collected from this exposed portion of the mound were: *Venus mercenaria mortoni*; *Cardium robustum*; *Fulgur perversa*; *Fasciolaria tulipa*; *Arca ponderoso*; *Ostrea virginica*; *Pecten irradians*; *Melongena corona*; *Chione cancellata*; *Cardita floridana*. Fragments of pottery were mingled with the shells, all having stamped designs over the entire surface. Many bits of human bones, indicating burials, were found near the summit. One fragment of a human skull revealed traces of a red pigment with which it had probably been covered.

Southward from the preceding site, at the end of the electric line running to St. Petersburg, and on the shore of Boca Ciega Bay, is a shellheap having a diameter of a hundred yards and an elevation of approximately ten feet. It extends eastward from the edge of the water to the road which has cut through the eastern portion, exposing the interior of the mass as shown in figure 124. The shells gathered here were: *Fasciolaria gigantea*; *Fulgur perversa*; *Strombus pugilis*; *Fasciolaria tulipa*; *Venus mercenaria mortoni*; *Pecten irradians*; *Ostrea virginica*; *Spicula similis*; *Cardium isocardia*. A closer view of the mass of shells in this exposure is given in figure 125. All fragments of pottery discovered mingled with the shells and decomposed vegetal matter were smooth on both surfaces, entirely undecorated.

On the eastern side of the peninsula, north of east from the several mounds just mentioned, is another ancient site. It is near the narrowest part of the bay, south of the bridge over Old Tampa Bay, and exactly west of Port Tampa on the opposite shore. However, the water is not visible from the site on account of the very dense vegetation. Here are shellheaps, low and spreading and less clearly defined than others already mentioned. They extend in a general course from southeast to northwest and terminate abruptly at a sand mound. The latter is about one hundred and twenty feet in diameter, although it is difficult to distinguish where the artificial work actually begins; its elevation is approximately seven feet. This appears to have been the burial place which belonged to the nearby settlement. Many burials were discovered by Dr. J. W. Fewkes in the eastern part of this mound during the winter of 1923-1924, at which time about one quarter of the structure was examined. Fragments of pottery, decorated with designs in incised



FIG. 124.—Section of a spreading shell mound in a region known as "The Jungle," on the west side of Pinellas Peninsula, at the end of the electric line running to St. Petersburg.



FIG. 125.—A closer view of the mass of shells forming the mound in "The Jungle."



FIG. 126.—Fragment of a large pottery vessel from the burial mound on Weeden Island. One-half natural size.

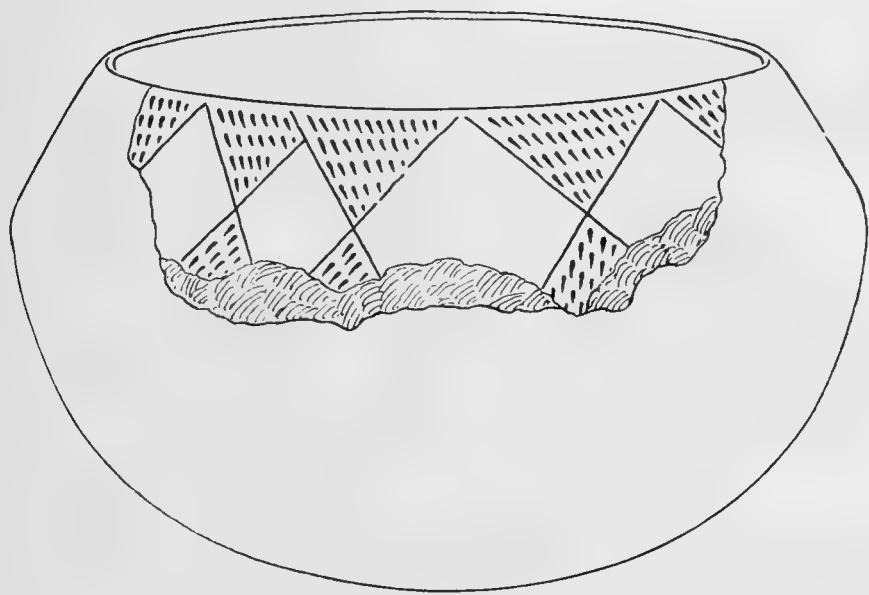


FIG. 127.—The probable form of the vessel, suggested by the shape of the fragment. (Drawn by DeLancey Gill.)

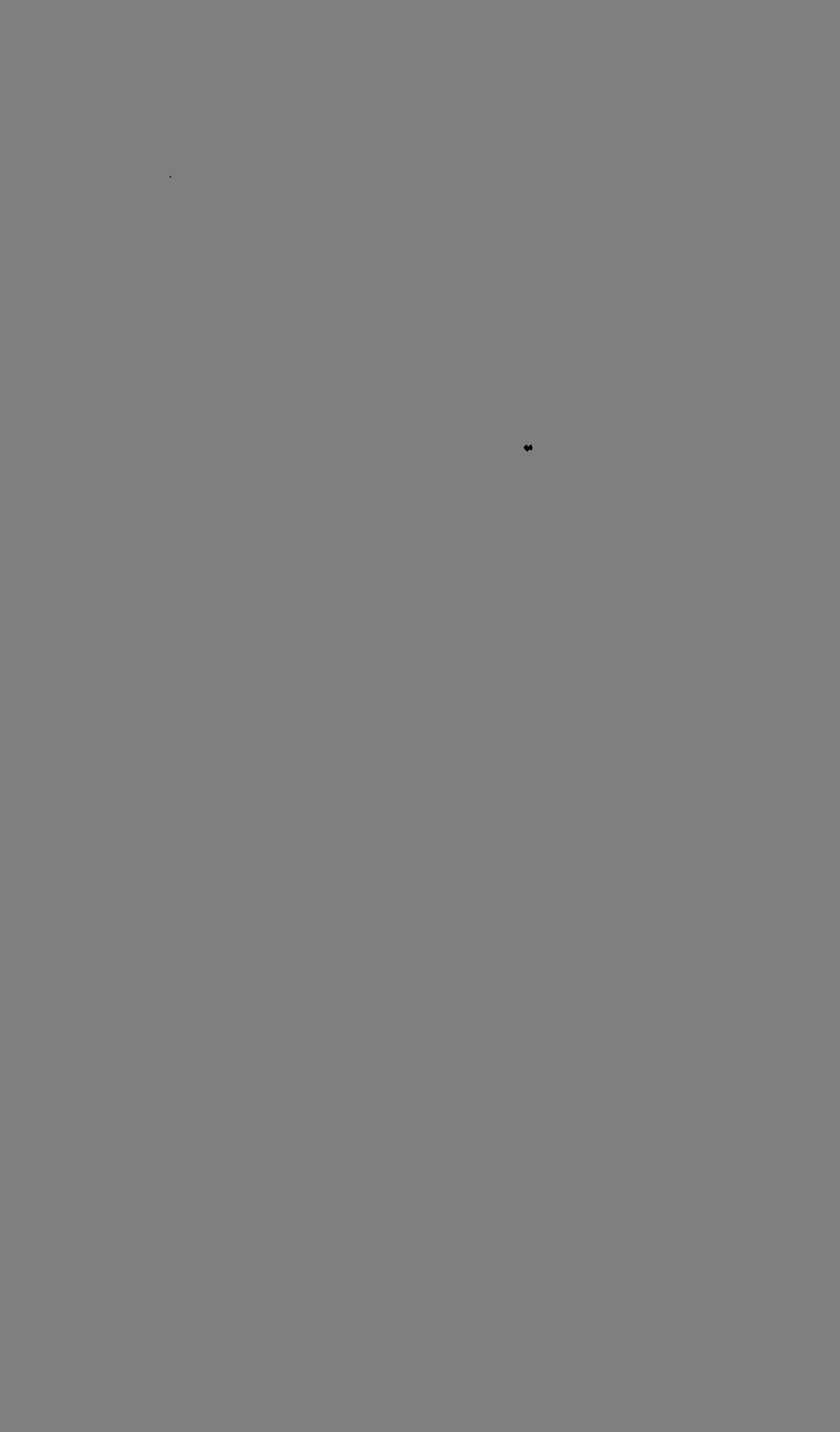
lines, were recovered from parts of the excavation, and although this is considered typical of the west coast of Florida no examples were found by the writer on other sites on the peninsula. In addition Dr. Fewkes encountered many fragments bearing the usual stamped design, and exactly like that recovered from the large mound on the west side of the peninsula, but it was not determined conclusively whether the two types were intermingled or whether they occurred in two distinct layers one above the other. A careful examination of the mound, especially the central portion, would undoubtedly make it possible to discover which of the two forms of pottery



FIG. 128.—The low, spreading burial mound on Weeden Island. The large cabbage palmetto, to which the sign is attached, stands very near the center of the mound.

is the older, if a difference actually exists. A photograph of the mound is reproduced in figure 128. On the right is the end of the excavation made by Dr. Fewkes, the large marker being attached to a tree near the center of the work. A fragment of the rim of a large earthen vessel, found by the writer in the excavation, is shown in figure 126, and a sketch of the probable shape of the vessel in figure 127. It was a well-made vessel, thin, and of a yellowish-brown tint. The opening was about ten inches in diameter.

Other large mounds occur on other parts of the peninsula, and all are of the greatest interest at this time. As yet it is not possible to identify the tribe or tribes by whom the ancient settlements were occupied.





SMITHSONIAN MISCELLANEOUS COLLECTIONS  
VOLUME 78, NUMBER 7

EXPLORATIONS AND FIELD-WORK OF THE  
SMITHSONIAN INSTITUTION  
IN 1926



(PUBLICATION 2912)

CITY OF WASHINGTON  
PUBLISHED BY THE SMITHSONIAN INSTITUTION

*April 21, 1927*



SMITHSONIAN MISCELLANEOUS COLLECTIONS

VOLUME 78, NUMBER 7

EXPLORATIONS AND FIELD-WORK OF THE  
SMITHSONIAN INSTITUTION  
IN 1926



(PUBLICATION 2912)

CITY OF WASHINGTON  
PUBLISHED BY THE SMITHSONIAN INSTITUTION

1927

*The Lord Baltimore Press*  
BALTIMORE, MD., U. S. A.

## CONTENTS

	PAGE
Introduction .....	I
Field-Work in Astrophysics (Dr. Charles G. Abbot) .....	I
Smithsonian-Chrysler Expedition to Africa to Collect Living Animals (Dr. W. M. Mann) .....	10
Visits to the Serpentine District of Southern England and the Gem-Cutting Town of Oberstein, Germany (Dr. George P. Merrill) .....	21
Explorations for Microfossils in France and Germany (Dr. R. S. Bassler) .....	29
Geological Field-Work in the Rocky Mountains (Dr. Charles E. Resser) .....	36
Geological Field-Work in New York and Ontario (Mr. Erwin R. Pohl) ..	40
Collecting Fossil Footprints in the Grand Canyon, Arizona (Mr. Charles W. Gilmore) .....	45
An Elephant Hunt in Florida (Dr. James W. Gidley) .....	48
Collecting Minerals in Mexico (Dr. W. F. Foshag) .....	51
The Canfield Mineralogical Collection (Mr. E. V. Shannon) .....	57
The Roebling Mineralogical Collection (Dr. W. F. Foshag) .....	58
Biological Collecting in Sumatra (Lieut. Henry C. Kellers) .....	59
Biological Field-Work in Florida (Dr. Gerrit S. Miller, Jr.) .....	67
Visit to a California Whaling Station (Mr. A. Brazier Howell) .....	71
Explorations in Siam (Dr. Hugh M. Smith) .....	79
Breeding Experiments with Cerions (Dr. Paul Bartsch) .....	80
Study of the Crustaceans of South America (Dr. Waldo L. Schmitt) .....	89
Investigation of the Amphipoda of the Tortugas (Mr. Clarence R. Shoe- maker) .....	93
Entomological Trip to Guatemala (Dr. J. M. Aldrich) .....	94
Collecting and Rearing Fruit Flies in Panama (Mr. Chas. T. Greene) ..	98
Exploring for Ferns in the Blue Mountains of Jamaica (Dr. William R. Maxon) .....	100
Botanical Field-Work in Panama and Costa Rica (Mr. Paul C. Standley) ..	111
Botanical Exploration in Northern Haiti (Mr. E. C. Leonard) .....	118
Archeological Survey of the Fêng River Valley, Southern Shansi, China (Dr. Chi Li) .....	123
Anthropological Work in Alaska (Dr. Aleš Hrdlička) .....	137
Archeological Investigations in Chaco Canyon, New Mexico (Mr. Neil M. Judd) .....	158
Investigating Evidence of Early Man in Florida (Dr. James W. Gidley) ..	168
Archeological and Ethnological Studies in Southeast Alaska (Mr. H. W. Krieger) .....	174

Archeological Investigations in the Columbia River Valley (Mr. H. W. Krieger) .....	187
Archeological Work in Louisiana and Mississippi (Mr. Henry B. Collins, Jr.)	200
Archeological Field-Work in Arizona (Dr. J. Walter Fewkes).....	207
Archeological and Ethnological Researches in California (Mr. J. P. Harrington) .....	232
Ethnological Studies Among the Iroquois Indians (Mr. J. N. B. Hewitt)...	237
Field Studies of Indian Music (Miss Frances Densmore).....	247
Archeological Work in Louisiana (Mr. Gerard Fowke).....	254





Fig. 1.—Table Mountain Solar Observatory. The bolometer which measures  $\frac{1}{1,000,000}$  degree temperature is in the tunnel, and sunlight is reflected into it.

## EXPLORATIONS AND FIELD-WORK OF THE SMITHSONIAN INSTITUTION IN 1926

### INTRODUCTION

Field-work is essential to the advance of nearly all branches of science, particularly those which the Smithsonian Institution is at present engaged in promoting, namely, geology, biology, anthropology, and astrophysics. The Institution therefore embraces every opportunity of putting expeditions in the field to obtain desired information or collections, either under its own auspices through financial assistance from its friends, or in cooperation with other agencies which will benefit equally from the work. During the past year more expeditions, in which the Smithsonian was represented, have gone out than ever before, and this in spite of the fact that the Institution has practically no unrestricted funds for field-work. Had it the unfettered income from an adequate endowment, much more extensive field-work in accordance with a definite plan would be accomplished each year, and the advance along the whole front of human knowledge would be greatly accelerated. The Smithsonian holds in abeyance a number of important projects in many branches of science, awaiting only funds to finance them. These include researches, nearly all of which involve work in the field, in astrophysics, meteorology, oceanography, entomology, zoology, botany, geology, archeology and ethnology, physical anthropology, mathematics, and chemistry.

The present pamphlet is intended as a preliminary announcement of the results of the year's field-work. The accounts, although written in the third person, were for the most part prepared by the participants in the various expeditions, and the photographs taken by them.

### FIELD-WORK IN ASTROPHYSICS

Does the sun vary, and if so, what effects on our weather do the changes of solar heat produce? For eight years the field-work of the Astrophysical Observatory has been aimed to solve this question. With the generous aid of Mr. John A. Roebling, special observatories were erected on desert mountains in Chile, Arizona, and California.

Daily reports of the condition of the sun are received from the observers, who patiently carry on in these isolated deserts far from

society, provisions, and even (at Mount Montezuma, Chile) from water.

Since January, 1926, these reports have been printed by the United States Weather Bureau on its daily weather map. Those who have followed them will have noticed that many days are missing and many rated unsatisfactory. It was to round out these records that the National Geographic Society on March 20, 1925, allotted \$55,000 to Dr. C. G. Abbot, Assistant Secretary of the Smithsonian Insti-



FIG. 2.—Mt. Brukkaros. Looking towards the Observatory site near the top of the rim at the extreme right.

tution, and Director of its Astrophysical Observatory, to enable him to select the best site in the Eastern Hemisphere, erect and equip there a solar radiation observatory and maintain it for several years under the title "The National Geographic Society Solar-Radiation Expedition Cooperating with the Smithsonian Institution."

Accordingly, accompanied by Mrs. Abbot, he sailed from New York on October 31, 1925, examined the advantages of sites in Algeria, Egypt, Baluchistan, and South West Africa, and at length located the new observatory on Mount Brukkaros, South West Africa.

The mountain is 5,200 feet above sea-level and quite 2,000 feet above the plateau. The whole massif is composed of chocolate-colored rock with very little soil, though sparsely tufted with bunches of dry bush and grass, with here and there a queer cactus or dwarf tree. The cliffs are seamed into great cubes and the slopes are littered with fallen fragments.

The summit is like a cup with a flat bottom about half a mile in diameter and a steep rim 1,000 feet high. From a V-shaped



FIG. 3.—The precipice at Mt. Brukkaros leading up to the bottom of the cup.  
The water pools are just below the precipice.

break in the southeast side of the rim a precipice 60 feet high leaps to the bed of the dry stream, which leads down a 3-mile corridor to the plateau.

Since the observations require the use of the bolometer, that electrical thermometer sensitive to a millionth of a degree, they require very constant temperature surroundings. These are most easily obtained by making a horizontal shaft or cave, some 30 feet deep, right into the slope of the mountain near its summit.

The average yearly rainfall is  $3\frac{1}{2}$  inches. Dr. Abbot was 12 days in the vicinity during March, which, equally with February, is



FIG. 4.—Observatory at Mt. Brukkaros.



FIG. 5.—Observer's quarters at Mt. Brukkaros.

the rainiest time of the year. On 11 days there were fine observing conditions each forenoon, though a bit of rain fell sometimes towards nightfall. That is surely a favorable record. There were absolutely no cirrus clouds—those wisps that slightly veil the sun and are fatal to our observing. There was very little wind—almost none in the forenoons—though in winter it sometimes blows hard.

Mount Brukkaros lies in a Hottentot reservation, and a vote of the tribe was necessary to permit us to locate there. This was



FIG. 6.—Hottentot village near Mt. Brukkaros, South West Africa, which will be the headquarters of the expedition.

easily carried. Lying about 20 miles to the west of the railroad and 250 miles south of Windhoek, capital of South West Africa, Mount Brukkaros sticks out as the only peak of consequence in a circle at least 50 miles in diameter.

Thus the observers are exiled to a crater in the wilderness seven miles even from Hottentot neighbors (at Berseba) and 60 miles from a fair-sized town (Keetmanshoop). We hope their loneliness will be mitigated by the facts that they are both fine fellows, inured to camp life; that they will have interesting work; that there will be games, music, books, and radio to beguile leisure hours; and that the leopards and other wild game, so plentiful in the vicinity,

will divert them. Perhaps they will raise a garden on the level bottom of the cup, if they can arrange for enough water.

The water supply is not so great a difficulty as it seems. By making a reservoir in the gulch in front of the observatory, the drainage of several square miles may be impounded. Even the few inches of yearly rainfall thus conserved will be abundantly sufficient.

For provisions and mail the observers must arrange with the Hottentots. With their own automobile, our men will make the



FIG. 7.—A Hottentot cattle-team near Mt. Brukkaros of the type which will be used to haul the expedition's instruments and supplies.

60-mile trip to Keetmanshoop frequently, where nearly everything needed can be obtained.

By permission of the Government of South West Africa, Mr. Dryden, of Keetmanshoop, Inspector of Public Works, constructed the observatory and approaches on Mount Brukkaros, last summer. Our expedition with its 60 boxes of delicate apparatus and supplies reached Keetmanshoop in September and was hauled to the foot of the mountain by two 12-ox teams in a 6-day journey. All the apparatus and accessories were at the top by mid-October. Observations began in early November.

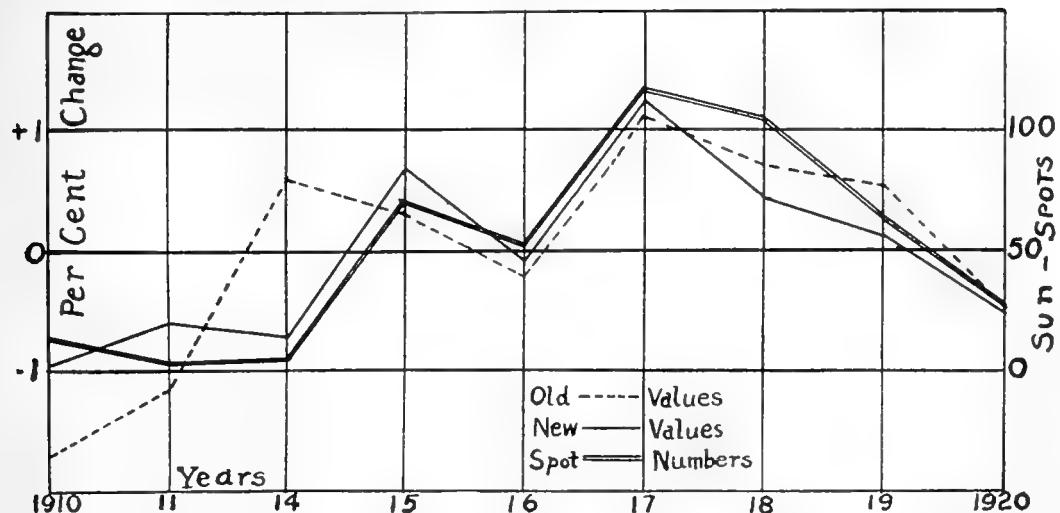


FIG. 8.—Selected pyrheliometry, solar constant and sun spot numbers compared. Mt. Wilson work, Julys 1910 to 1920.

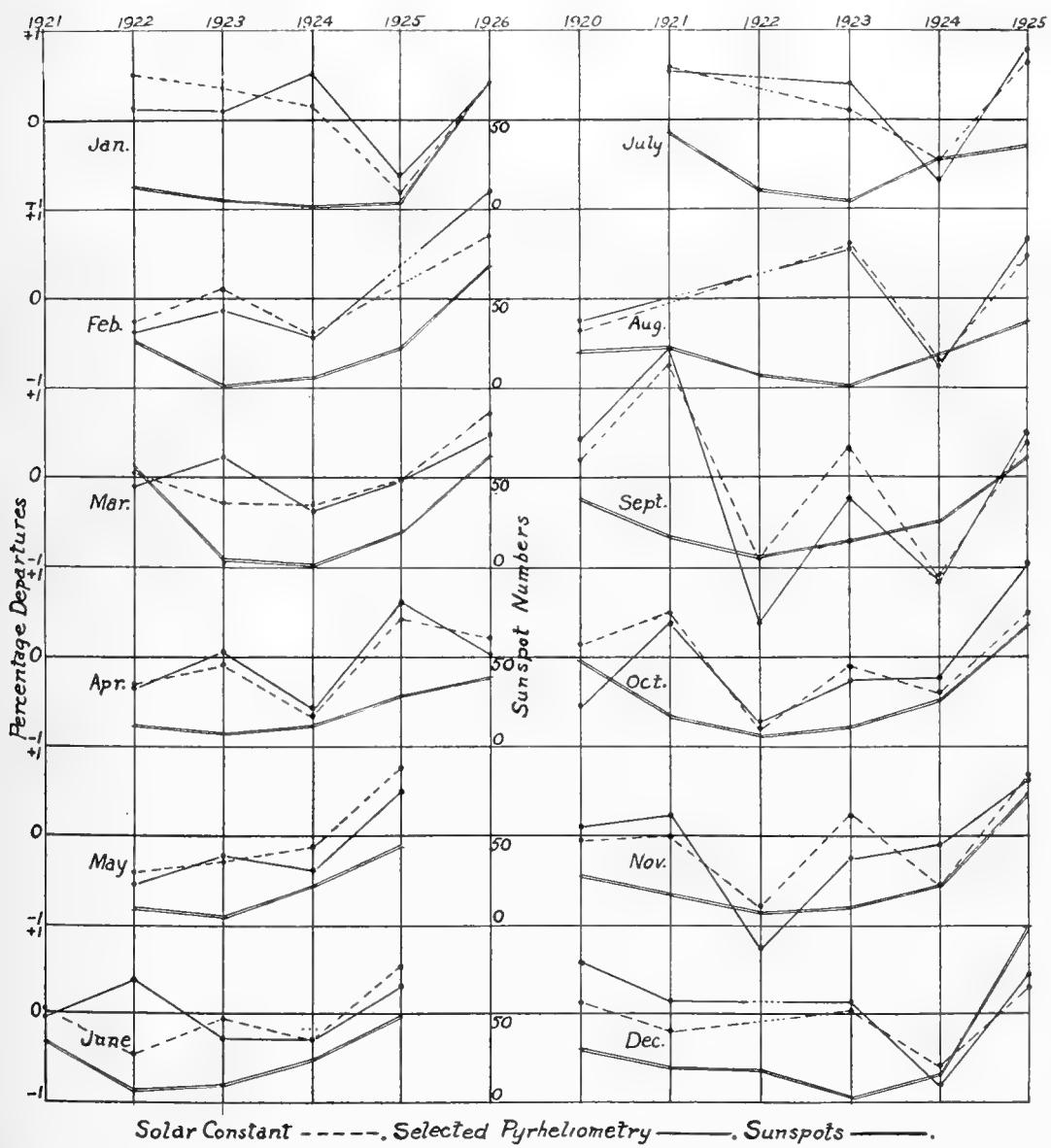


FIG. 9.—Montezuma observations, all months, 1920 to 1925.



FIG. 10.—Observer's quarters at the solar station on Table Mountain.



FIG. 11.—Looking toward the Mojave Desert from Table Mountain.



FIG. 12.—Reading the weather instruments at Table Mountain.



FIG. 13.—Reducing the observations at Table Mountain.

Returned from this expedition, Dr. Abbot, finding various critical papers published during his absence tending to express the view that solar variation is still doubtful, devised a new proof of it depending on a simple inspection, on selected days, of the pyrheliometric measurements of total solar radiation. By choosing for comparison only days of equal atmospheric transparency and humidity, the uncertainties which critics had stressed were largely eliminated. This new treatment supported closely the more elaborate and continuous indications of solar variation obtained by the complex process of spectrum analysis.

In figures 8 and 9 the new and old work is compared for separate months on Mount Wilson and Mount Montezuma, and the parallel variation of sun-spot numbers is also shown.

Having found from this new study, as well as from previous work at Mount Harqua Hala in Arizona, a source of error due to the bright rays of sky light immediately about the sun for very hazy days, an improvement of the silver disk pyrheliometer consisting of a very long vestibule has been made, designed to greatly limit the sky rays admitted to the field of view of the instrument.

In the frontispiece, figure 1, Field Director A. F. Moore is shown observing with the improved instrument at the new solar station on Table Mountain, California, built with the generous aid of Mr. John A. Roebling, and first occupied in October, 1925.

#### SMITHSONIAN-CHRYSLER EXPEDITION TO AFRICA TO COLLECT LIVING ANIMALS

The Smithsonian-Chrysler Expedition to collect living animals for the National Zoological Park sailed from New York on March 20 and arrived in Dar-es-Salaam, Tanganyika Territory, East Africa, on May 5. The expedition was financed by Mr. Walter P. Chrysler. Tanganyika was chosen as being one of the best localities in which to make a representative collection of the game animals of East Africa.

The party consisted of four members: Dr. W. M. Mann, Director of the Zoological Park and leader of the expedition; Mr. Stephen Haweis, artist and amateur naturalist; Mr. F. G. Carnochan, of New York City; and Mr. Arthur Loveridge, of the Museum of Comparative Zoology at Cambridge. The latter, having previously resided eight years at Tanganyika, some of which had been spent in the Game Department there, was conversant with conditions in the country, and in addition, had a good knowledge of Kiswahili language. The Pathe Review sent with the party Mr. Charlton,



FIG. 14.—Unloading crates at Dodoma. These were made at the Zoo and shipped taken down.



FIG. 15.—Wagogo natives at Dodoma.

one of their field men, to make a pictorial chronicle of the trip and the work of the expedition.

The United States Marine Corps supplied the expedition with cots, blankets, and certain other equipment, and the Freedmen's Hospital, of Washington, through the Chief Coordinator's Office, furnished the medicines.

At Tanga, the first port of call in Tanganyika, Mr. Fair, Assistant Chief of the Game Department of Tanganyika, joined the boat, and on the voyage between there and Dar-es-Salaam arranged a special permit for collecting, which was afterward signed by the Governor of the territory. There is in Tanganyika a well-organized department for the conservation of game. There is a chief, C. T. M. Swynnerton, and an assistant chief, several white rangers, and a considerable corps of native guards or scouts. The latter are much in evidence, and even in the remote parts of the territory would come into our camp, ask to see our license, take its number and our names, and find out from the natives with us just what we were doing. The very generous license that the Governor gave us proved invaluable, as it gave permission to capture specimens of practically all of the game in Tanganyika and, when necessary, to kill females in order to capture the young. This is not often necessary, and on the entire trip we did not take a single animal by the killing of the mother.

Headquarters were made at Dodoma, about 250 miles inland from the coast. The country about there is hot and dry, rolling and dotted with rocky kopjes, and reminds one strongly of parts of southern Arizona. The natives belong to the Wagogo tribe, an offshoot from the Masai, and are a pastoral and agricultural people, living on their flocks and herds and on the small amount of Kafir-corn that they cultivate. Not being a hunting tribe, they brought in to us very few large specimens but were very useful in collecting small things. Weaver birds do a vast amount of damage to the crops and the natives are in the habit of trapping these birds in quantities in small woven basket traps. So instead of destroying the birds, they brought them in to us, as well as anything else they happened on, and in this way were obtained a ratel, a fennec, a number of vervet monkeys, and a few reptiles. Mr. Loveridge and Mr. Haweis stayed at Dodoma a good part of the time, but made short trips out, and afterwards Mr. Haweis came down to Morogoro and stayed a month at Mhonde, 60 miles from Morogoro. In this locality we secured five blue monkeys, three golden baboons, and a pair of elephant shrews.

Mr. Carnochan worked in the Tabora district, where he lived among the Manumwezi tribe, experts in snake catching, and his division of the expedition succeeded in forming a considerable collection of snakes, several interesting mammals, including a female eland, and a rare caracal.

The party had been joined on the boat by a Mr. Lyman Hine, of New York, an American sportsman, and he and Dr. Mann, accompanied by two white hunters, George Runton and Guy Runton, left Dodoma by motor car and reached Ubugwe, about two hundred



FIG. 16.—Natives gathered for instruction on game drive.

miles to the north, where they made safari to Lake Manyara. Mr. Hine was able to stay in the field only a month when he returned, business calling him back to America. But Mr. George Runton, a professional hunter and guide, stayed with the expedition during its entire stay in Tanganyika and proved a most valuable addition to the party.

The Governor's license proved important at Ubugwe, for it enabled us to acquire 90 porters, men of the Wamboro and Wambugo tribes. The latter have the reputation of being swift runners, which they bear out from time to time by running down animals. The first catch on the lake was a water mongoose, which was run down on the lake shore and boxed.



FIG. 17.—Our first zebra colt.

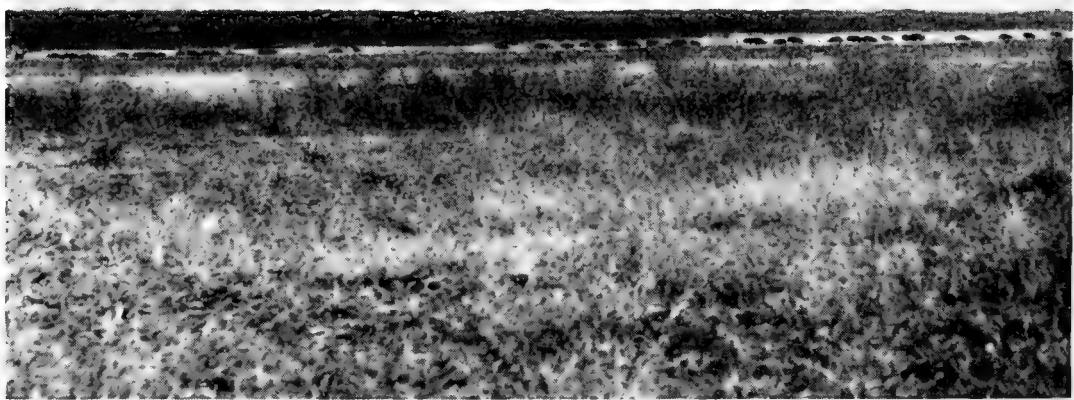


FIG. 18—Herd of white-bearded gnu.



FIG. 19.—White-bearded gnu calves.

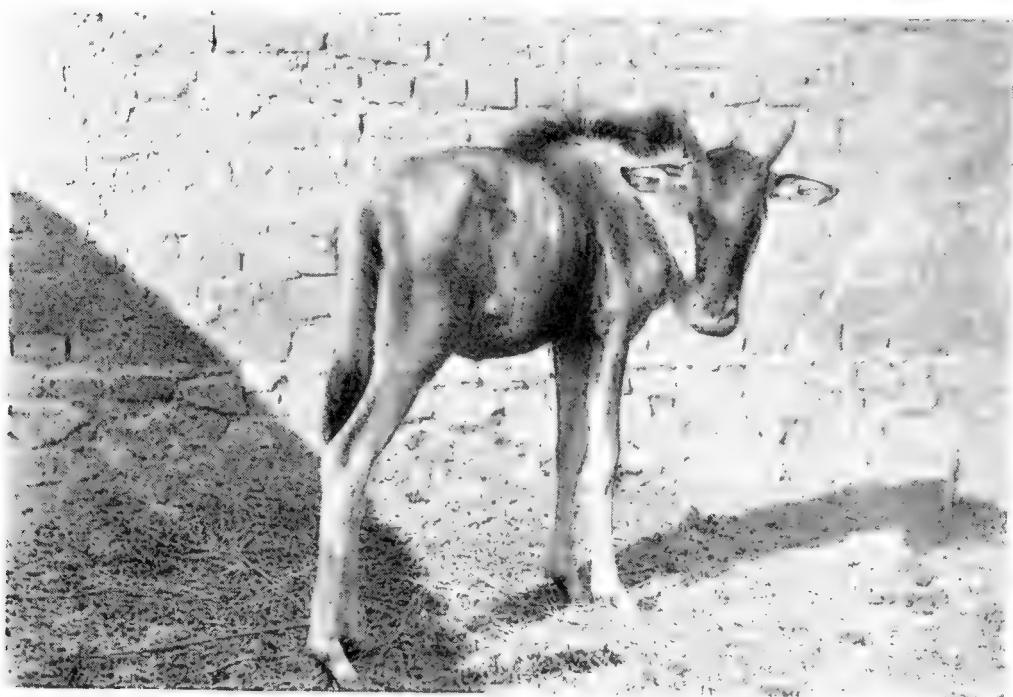


FIG. 20.—White-bearded gnu calf.

On Lake Manyara we captured the three white-bearded gnu which we brought to Washington. As we marched along the shore of the lake, the herds of gnu would run in front of us, back and forth the whole day, and when evening came they were very tired and attempted to cut back between us and the lake. Our porters dropped their loads and headed them off. They got into the shallow lake and mixed together. When the splashing had died down, little groups of natives brought back the calves which they had seized. These became tame very quickly, fed readily, and were thoroughly satisfactory animals to catch and keep.

Mr. George Le Messurier joined the party to drive the motor car which the Chrysler factory in London had presented to the expedition. He kept the car busy between Ubugwe and Dodoma, carrying in specimens as fast as we had a ton of them accumulated. On the first trip, Dr. Mann accompanied the animals to Dodoma, sending Mr. Runton on to the Masai Steppe to look for young rhinos. We had been told that they were very abundant toward the Ngoro-Ngoro crater. Dr. Mann returned to Ubugwe in a week, climbed the escarpment to Umbulo, and started in the direction of the crater, but on the evening of the first day met Mr. Runton and his party coming down. In one week they had seen only four rhinos, no young nor signs of young, and since Mando, our best native guide, had told of a district, the Ja-aida swamp country, in which he said there were "Faro mingi sana" (very many rhinos) we went down into this region and found what he said to be true. Altogether we saw 22 rhinos. Our safari was charged once while on the march, and four times at night rhinos charged through our camp. But in all of these we failed to locate a single young specimen. Five different times we crawled into the scrub 30 or 40 feet from a rhino to see if it had young and were disappointed each time. One locates these rhinos, by the way, through the tick birds, which make a loud twittering at the approach of any suspicious object to the rhino on which they are clustered for the purpose of eating the ticks which are so abundant on its body. Theoretically they serve a useful purpose to the rhino by warning him of his enemies. Actually we found they were useful in leading us to where the rhino were lying, for we were attracted by the birds to each of the rhinos that we found.

The night charges are simply the result of the stupidity of the rhino. We camped usually in the vicinity of water holes, and when the near-sighted beast came to water late at night or early in the morning he would suddenly notice that there were fires and natives about. Whereupon he would put his head down and charge through

in a straight line. On these occasions the natives have a frantic desire to get into the tents to be near the white men and the guns; the white men on the other hand have a frantic desire to get out of their tents, and the result is a collision at the entrance. Two rhinos came into our camp the same night. When the second one came, Le Messurier heard it snort and the sound of its tramp, and just then a native tripped over one of his tent ropes. He left the tent in a hurry, but was met by twelve boys entering it at the same speed,



FIG. 21.—A serval cub, one of our bottle babies.

and the result was that he was thrown and injured his knee so badly on a tent peg that we had to rush him back to Dodoma for medical attention. This, and the fact that we had spent 28 days without seeing a single young rhinoceros, made us decide to split up the expedition even more. So Messrs. Runton and Le Messurier stayed at Kondoa Irangi, while Dr. Mann secured the services of an additional hunter, Mr. C. B. Goss, and went down the railroad to Ngere-Ngere, and from there southward into the Tula and Kisaki districts to begin another search for rhino.

We saw, on the average, signs of five rhino each day, but again neither young nor fresh tracks of young. So after 10 days, time being

short, we camped at Tula to collect whatever we could, but especially giraffes. Two native sultans, Chanzi and Chaduma, joined forces with us for a week, bringing with them about 500 natives. With the help of these we had the most successful trip of the expedition. Some of the boys from a mountain nearby had had some experience in netting game. They make a coarse seine of native rope in sections about five feet high and 15 feet long. These were placed in a row, until they made about 1,000 feet of native fence, one boy hiding behind each section. The two lots of natives would double over their ends and join in a circle about a mile in circumference, then closing in toward the net. The object was to drive animals into



FIG. 22.—Safari at rest.

the net, but nine times out of ten they would break through the line. Occasionally, however, they came straight on. One day a herd of over 50 impalla was surrounded. This is the most graceful antelope in Africa and a great leaper. Most of them sailed right over the net, but five fell short and we got them all. Fortune was with us as far as impalla were concerned, for it is one of the most delicate animals to handle, and yet all of ours reached Boston alive and in good condition.

Wart-hogs were captured in the same way and a troop of four were added to the collection.

Besides rhinoceros, giraffe was one of our important *desiderata*. They were abundant about Tula but not easy to catch because we had no horses. We tried time after time to run them into the nets, but a herd of giraffe runs in a file led by the biggest bull, and he

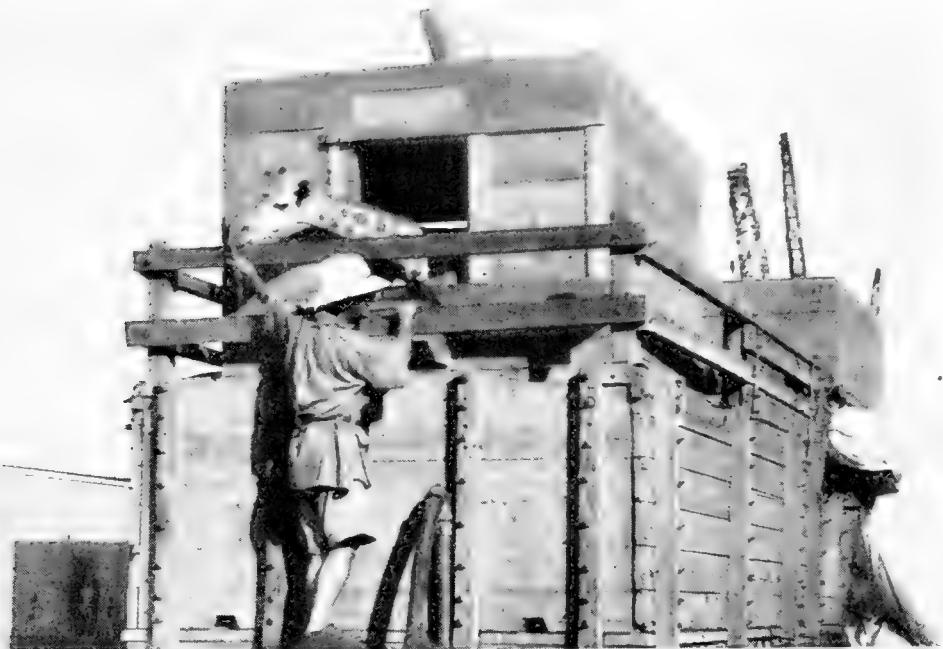


FIG. 23.—Hi-Boy, the male giraffe in crate.



FIG. 24.—Hi-Boy, the male giraffe in crate.

apparently enjoyed kicking the nets into the air as high as possible; whereupon they would all rush through and disappear in the scrub. But once we succeeded in separating from the herd a calf about eight and a half feet tall, and one of the natives grabbed it by the tail, another by the neck, and threw it. We got it into camp, carrying it on a native bed heaped high with grass, and put it in a room of the Kafir native-built house in which we were staying. It became quite tame in a short time, and fed readily on milk and mimosa leaves. Dr. Mann rushed to Dar-es-Salaam and had a crate built for



FIG. 25.—Handling stock at Dar-es-Salaam.

it, which was delivered to Ngere-Ngere. The animal was taken in a motor car from Tula, a distance of about 80 miles, and at last arrived safely in Dar-es-Salaam, where its crate was placed beneath a mimosa tree in the yard of the Government veterinarian. It was then that we telegraphed the Smithsonian that we had captured the giraffe. However, after 10 days, the animal was attacked by pneumonia and died very suddenly, leaving us with our homeward passage engaged on the last steamer to arrive in the States before cold weather and without the main object of the trip attained. We cabled the Sudan Government to see if they could let us have specimens and received word that they could let us have a pair of young giraffe. So all members of the expedition gathered with their respective cages

in Dar-es-Salaam. For three days we maintained a menagerie visited by everybody in the city and finally embarked on the Crewe Hall, which took us to Colombo, where we transhipped on the City of Calcutta for a direct run to Boston. We landed with about 1,700 live animals, including the two giraffe (which were brought to us at Port Sudan by Mr. Skandar Armenius, assistant game warden of the Sudan, who brought also a shoebill stork), five impalla, a greater kudu, an eland, a blue duiker, red duiker, three white-bearded gnu, four wart-hogs, and quantities of birds, small mammals, and reptiles.



FIG. 26.—Aboard the steamship, Crewe Hall.

VISITS TO THE SERPENTINE DISTRICT OF SOUTHERN  
ENGLAND AND THE GEM-CUTTING TOWN OF  
OBERSTEIN, GERMANY

Dr. George P. Merrill, head curator of geology in the National Museum, availed himself of the opportunity offered by the Geological Congress in Madrid to visit some of the more important museums of England and on the continent, and also to visit sundry localities of geological and mineralogical interest. Among the more important, mention may be made of a visit to the historical quicksilver mines at Almaden, Spain. The party from the Congress was permitted to descend to the 280 meter level, where a fine massive body of ore (cinnabar) was exposed, embedded in quartzite. A series of typical

specimens was collected and forwarded to the National Museum through the office of the United States Consul. At the close of the Congress a party was formed, of which Dr. Merrill was a member, visiting Barcelona, with side trips to the eminence Tibidabo and the monastery on Mount Serrat, and thence going to the Island of Majorka, one of the Balearic group. Here, from June 5 to 13, inclusive, a series of automobile trips took the party well over the Island, visiting many interesting points and examining in detail the evidence of overthrust faulting and folding which abounds. Later in the season, trips were made to the serpentine and tin mining districts



FIG. 27.—Kynance. The rocks are of the historic *Lizard Serpentines*.

of southern England and the noted gem-cutting town of Oberstein in Germany. A brief account of these two trips is given below.

#### THE LIZARD SERPENTINES

In the early literature relating to petrographic research are to be found many references to the serpentinous rocks of Cornwall in southern England, and their problematic origin. Concerning this last, it was long ago decided that they were the result of the combined forces of igneous intrusion and subsequent metamorphism. It is with the rocks as they are today that this note has to deal; the exact locality is Kynance, near Lizard Point and but a few miles west of England's "jumping off" place, or Land's End. It is a most fascinating place on a fair, warm day in July. The country is

rough and the shore often precipitous. The rock where exposed to the action of the waves and windblown sand assumes an almost ebony-like hue and polish, but on close inspection it is found to be often filled with small streaks and gashes of a blood-red color. Broken fragments on the beach have given rise to a diversified series of oval pebbles of green, gray, purplish and red colors from which it is a delight to assort and select those which are most beautiful. Below the zone of pebbles the beach is of fine, clean sand over which the warm waters of the cove seeth with seductive softness, making it a bathers' paradise. As bathers are out in force one looks for bath



FIG. 28.—Pendeen. A glimpse of an old tin mining region in Cornwall.

houses, but not one of these ugly conveniences disfigures the landscape. A brief investigation reveals the fact that the numerous caves worn by the sea in the shattered serpentine are made to answer, and in their shallow and not very dim recesses may be seen groups of men and maids making the slight changes in raiment considered appropriate to the occasion. There is a primitive simplicity about it that is very pleasing, though it might have been a trifle shocking to a modest man had he witnessed it before his eyes had become accustomed to the scanty costumes of the present day.

Naturally the beauty of the stone, when polished, long ago attracted the artist and the artisan, and attempts were made to utilize it as a marble for interior decoration. The attempt failed for the same

reason that has brought disaster to a large proportion of like attempts elsewhere, namely, the badly jointed condition of the stone—its dry seams and like defects that prevent the getting out of pieces of more than moderate dimensions. Nevertheless, in the museums and art galleries are frequently to be found turned bowls, vases, urns, and stands for busts, of good design and color, the work of these earlier years. A very considerable souvenir industry still exists. To be counted by the score are the little shops in Kynance, Penzance and elsewhere where the natives work up small pieces into objects more or less—usually less—artistic, but always interesting for the variegated veining and for their colors. One can but regret that an arrangement cannot be made whereby with larger means better work could be done.

For the tourist, the approach to Kynance is by bus from Penzance, a delightful little town, ancient but now becoming popular, though one may hope not fashionable.

A few miles eastward are the historic tin workings of Cornwall now largely discontinued owing to the increasing depth and low grade of the ores. The country is at best bleak, and the miles of stone-walled abandoned pits and ruined shaft-houses, often with little more than chimney standing, add to its picturesqueness but not to its beauty.

#### GEM CUTTING IN OBERSTEIN-IDAR, GERMANY

The towns of the Nahe Valley are not large. Indeed, there is not room in the narrow valley for large towns, and whatever attempts are made to attain greater dimensions must end only in increase in length. Doubtless the little stream has done and is doing its best, but geological processes are slow. The work that has thus far been accomplished is more in the way of depth than breadth. So narrow is the resultant valley that there is, for the most part, space for but a single street, along which the houses are jammed back against the solid ledges of rock which rise abruptly behind them.

The geological history of the region is interesting, and inasmuch as it is this that has given the towns their industry and importance, it may be briefly touched upon.

Very many years ago, so long ago that it can be approximated only in the rough divisions of geological time, there occurred here an enormous outbreak of volcanic activity. Huge steaming masses of lava flowed out over the region and in time became consolidated into the solid rock now forming the high hills on either side and down

through which the patiently persistent Nahe has cut its way. But the upper portion of the consolidated mass was full of steam cavities, large and small, like those in a well-raised loaf of bread. Into these the heated waters carried silica in solution and formed agates. In turn, as the rock decayed and the stream cut deeper, these agates being less destructible, accumulated in the soil and ravines, to be collected doubtless at first as mere curiosities. Interest in their banded structure was probably aroused from broken fragments which led to laborious grinding of flat surfaces on sharp-gritted sandstones. Later yet they were ground by holding them against huge revolving grind-



FIG. 29.—Grinding agates. Oberstein—Idar.

stones driven by slow-turning undershot water-wheels, the operator lying prone upon a roughly carved wooden form moulded to his chest and abdomen, and with feet braced against a wooden cleat nailed to the floor. This crude system is still followed in many of the smaller shops, but is laborious and unhealthy, the confined position of the lungs and constant dampness from the cold, wet wheel being productive of rheumatism and pulmonary troubles. In all the many "Schleiferei"—shops devoted to gem cutting, and there are some hundreds in the region—the slicing is now done on circular saws of thin metal charged with diamond dust, and the grinding on metal plates revolving horizontally, at which the workmen sit in comfort.

Exhaustion of the local supply it may be safely assumed resulted in the reaching out into world-wide sources for new materials, and



FIG. 31.—Oberstein. A stone engraver.



FIG. 30.—Oberstein. Slicing gems with diamond saw.

a contemporaneous development in the art of cutting as well. Agates, amethysts, and topazes from Brazil, kunzite from California or Madagascar, beryls including aquamarines, golden beryls and morganite from Madagascar and America, peridot from Oriental sources; amazon stone and rose quartz from America, are among the many varieties.



FIG. 32.—Grinding facets on gem stone.

Aside from the faceted forms, beads, pendants, etc., used in jewelry, a variety of ornamental bowls, trays, vases, paper knives, some of which are very beautiful, are cut from the agates, rose quartz, lapislazuli and other of the so-called semi-precious stones, many of which find their way into museums and mineral collections where they are highly prized. A visit to the little local museum is needed to convey a full idea of the variety and beauty of the work now carried on behind the walls of the unimpressive buildings with

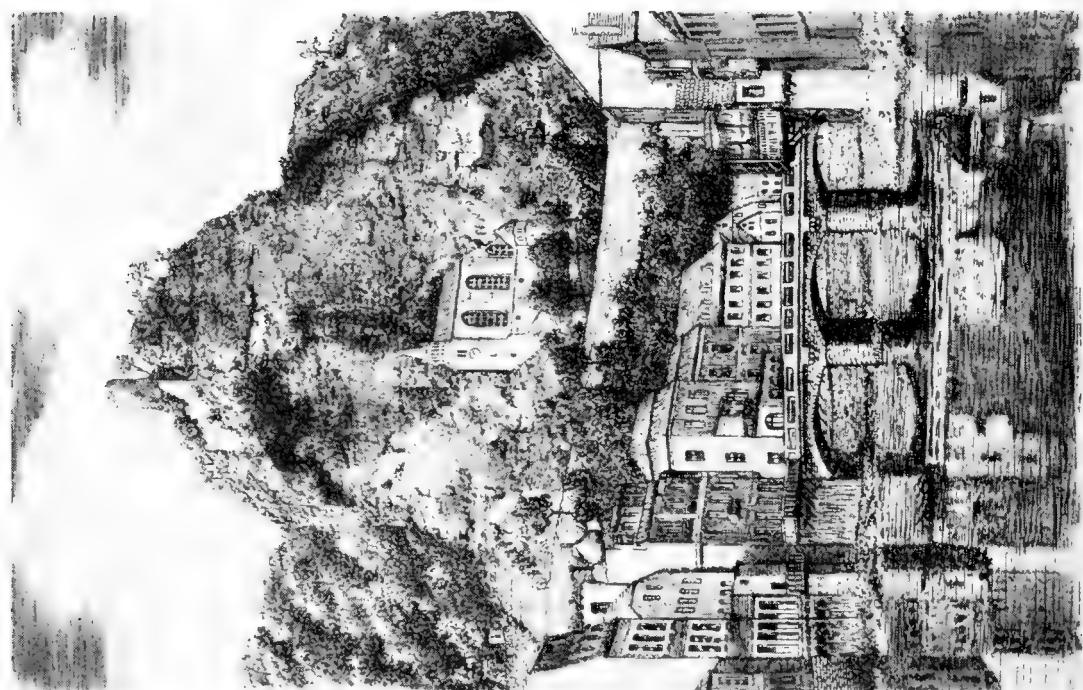


FIG. 34.—Oberstein.

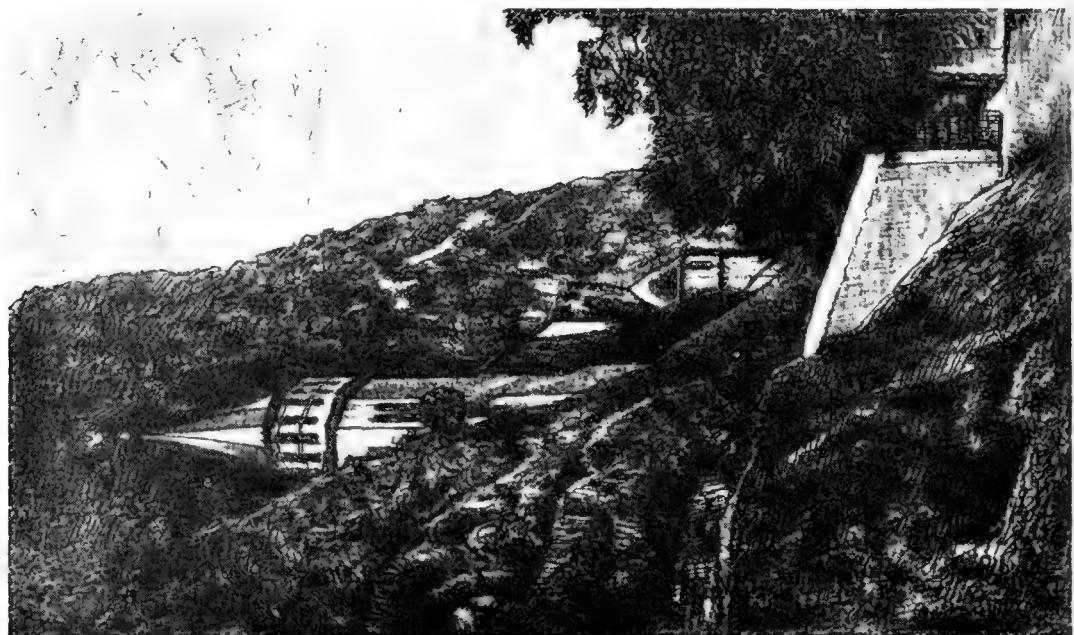


FIG. 33.—Oberstein.

which the street is lined. Today the towns offer an interesting illustration of the continued development of an industry long after the conditions which gave it birth have ceased to exist.

Interest in the two towns is, however, not limited to the "edelstein" industry. High up on the ragged hills that dominate Idar are the ruins of two castles dating back to a very early period—it is said to about the middle of the eleventh century. Tradition has it that in one of these dwelt two brothers. Whether a cat or a lovely maiden was the exciting cause (the tradition varies on this point), a violent quarrel developed which culminated in the younger being thrown from the castle window and dashed to pieces upon the rocks below. Repentant for his hasty act, the elder wandered aimlessly forth, entering first the service of the prior of a Rhenish monastery and afterward becoming a crusader, ultimately receiving absolution on condition that he return and with his own hands erect a sanctuary upon the exact spot where his brother fell. The penalty was carried out, and the now existing church, erected it is said in 1482, occupies the original site. It is an interesting little relic, its steeple alone projecting beyond the face of the cliff, and is well worthy the climb of the 163 irregular stone steps to give it a visit.

#### EXPLORATIONS FOR MICROFOSSILS IN FRANCE AND GERMANY

Probably no branch of natural history has received more intensive study during the past 10 years than the microscopic fossils which have proved of such great value in the determination of underground structure, particularly in oil geology. The paleontological collections of the U. S. National Museum are rich in species of fossil micro-organisms from many American Mesozoic and Cenozoic formations. Although many of these species have been separated and photographed during the past 20 years, their descriptions have never been published because of uncertainty regarding their relationship to the many described European species. Numerous large monographs and thousands of smaller articles upon European microfossils, particularly the moss-animals or bryozoa, the bivalve crustacea or ostracoda and the foraminifera among the protozoa, have been published during the past century but, in most cases, the illustrations are either free-hand sketches or diagrammatic drawings which make the recognition of the species uncertain unless specimens from the type locality are available for study. To secure such typical European material for comparison with the American faunas, Dr. R. S. Bassler, curator of paleontology, U. S. National Museum, spent August and Septem-

ber, 1926, in a study of various classic localities in France and Germany.

The first two weeks were occupied in a study of the Paris Basin in company with Dr. Ferdinand Canu of Versailles, France, the most eminent student of microfossils upon the Continent. The various publications upon American fossil bryozoa by Canu and Bassler were prepared entirely by correspondence, dating back to 1909, so that the actual meeting of these co-workers was a long anticipated pleasure. The result was that more time was spent in personal conference upon the past and future work than in actual field investi-



FIG. 35.—Die Pfalz, Rhine Gorge. (Photograph by Bassler.)

gations. However, the main formations of the Paris Basin were studied in a general way, but the most valuable collections of microfossils from this area were donated by Dr. Canu from material secured in his previous researches. In remembrance of this meeting and of his years of pleasant association with the paleontological work of the National Museum, Dr. Canu also presented to the National Museum his entire collection of French Cenozoic and Mesozoic fossils, numbering not less than a hundred thousand specimens. This gift is of particular interest to American paleontologists in that all the specimens are most carefully labelled as to exact horizon and locality, a most necessary item in present-day studies but often lacking in many collections from foreign countries.

Leaving Dr. Canu with much regret, Dr. Bassler proceeded to the Rhine valley where he studied, in succession, the broad plain around Strassburg, the valley to Mainz and the valley of the Main River from Mainz to Frankfort. Next the trip through the Rhine gorge was made, which was particularly interesting in that a first-hand knowledge was obtained of the Devonian stratigraphy of this classic area. Important collections of Devonian fossils were secured here, and the classification of them as well as of other collections from this area secured in the past, can now be made intelligently.

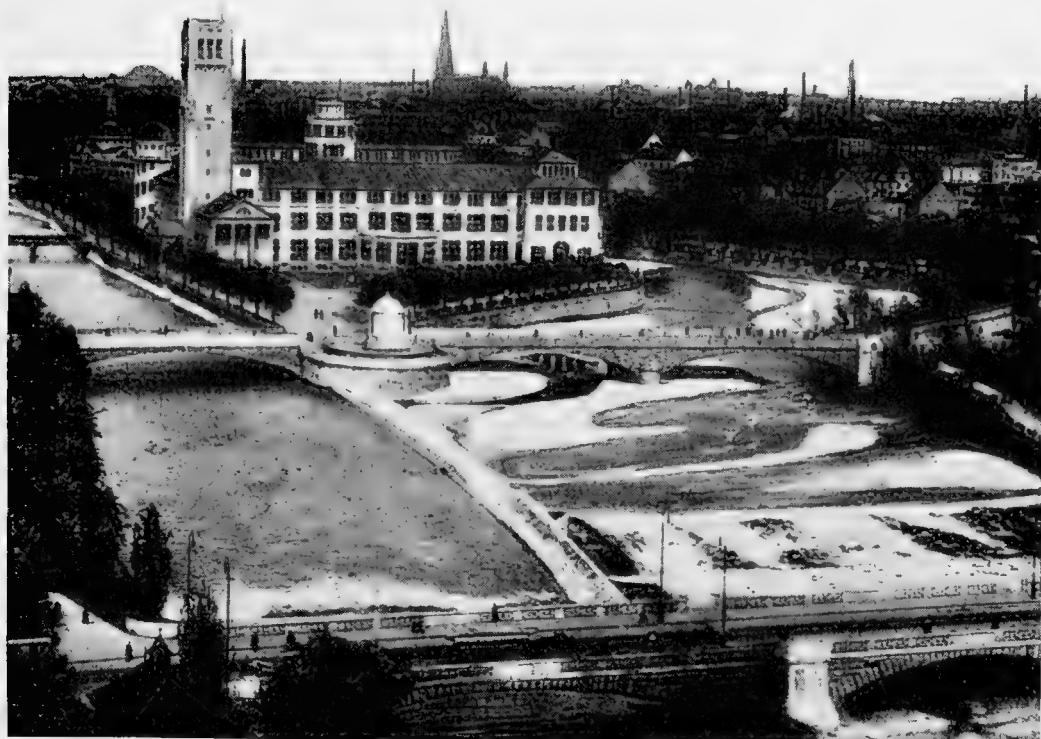


FIG. 36.—Bavarian Plateau at Munich with Deutsches Museum.

Although Rhine valley scenes are familiar to all, the photograph of the Pfalz in the middle of the river, the ruined castle at the top of the plateau, the modern town at the water level and the terraces for vineyards, in addition to the stratigraphy (fig. 35) make a combination of geological and historical interest hard to surpass.

The Early Tertiary deposits of southern Bavaria were next studied, and opportunity was taken here to visit the wonderful Deutsches Museum at Munich (fig. 36) where one can study the underground geology of the earth's crust in the basement halls and proceed from story to story through all phases of human activity until in the planetarium at the top of the building the movements of the heavenly bodies are exhibited. A chance to study the Mesozoic limestones of

the Bavarian Alps quickly and without effort was afforded by a visit to the Zugspitze on the Bavarian-Austrian boundary where the recently completed cable system to the top of the mountain, over nine thousand feet high, conveys one in 20 minutes over this distance which the best of climbers cannot accomplish in less than two days. The tiny car, operated as shown in figure 37, brings one at times



FIG. 37.—Cable road to top of Zugspitze, Bavarian Alps.

close enough to the limestone strata to give a good idea of the geological structure.

Proceeding northward from Munich, various regions in Germany were studied with profit both in the amount of good study material secured and in the information regarding stratigraphic relationships. The classic Mesozoic region north of the Hartz Mountains was visited in company with Mr. Ehrhard Voigt, an enthusiastic student of microfossils at Dessau, Germany. Mr. Voigt also accompanied



FIG. 38.—Baltic Plain, south of Berlin. Taken from train, the shadow of which shows in fore part of view. (Photograph by Bassler.)



FIG. 39.—Chalk cliff along coast, Island of Rügen.

Dr. Bassler to other regions celebrated in German stratigraphy, particularly the potash areas around Stassfurt, the drift region around Dessau and other regions to the north, and finally to the Island of Rügen on the Baltic. During these explorations, a short time was spent in the Berlin Basin where under the guidance of Dr. Kurt Hucke, of Templin, Germany, a good idea of the geology was obtained. This area and that to the north belongs to the Baltic Plain, a flat region covered with glacial deposits (fig. 38) in which the underground stratigraphy is made out with difficulty. However, the pebbles in these drift deposits afford such good clues to the geological structure, from their contained fossils, that a new phase of research has been developed by Dr. Hucke and his associates and a special society for this study has been formed. *Der Zeitschrift für Geschiebeforschung*, the journal of this society, of which Dr. Hucke is President, contains discussions of drift problems which are quite new to the American investigator.

The classic Island of Rügen, off the north coast of Germany, with its chalk cliffs of Cretaceous age, was then visited, and although most beautiful from a scenic standpoint, it proved at first very disappointing paleontologically. Hundreds of species of Cretaceous microfossils have been described from this area and it was believed that the specimens would surely occur in great abundance. However, as shown in figure 39, the cliffs are almost inaccessible and only the chalk blocks which have fallen to the beach are available for material. Upon breaking up these blocks, few fossils were found. The disappointment was lessened by the fact that the shore is composed of undecomposed boulders of various igneous rocks, limestones, sandstones and other types deposited here as drift material during glacial and subsequent times. All the various formations to the north are represented and some of the formations are evidently from outcrops at the bottom of the Baltic Sea for they never have been found in place on the land. The latter formations, curiously enough, were particularly rich in microfossils. The disappointment over the few fossils in the chalk bed was dissipated entirely when the "Kreideschlemmerei" or chalk washing establishments at the town of Sassenitz on Rügen were located. It happens that an important industry has been developed around the use of chalk for various whitening purposes, but the chalk must be pure and free from fossils and flint fragments. To accomplish this, the chalk is passed through the washers and all the fine and coarse débris is sieved out and thrown aside leaving the water with its dissolved material to settle. The

pile of débris resulting from such washing as shown in figure 40 explains why so many fossils have been discovered in this area. Not only were many excellent echinoids, brachiopods and other large fossils picked up in the dump heap, but literally billions of microfossils were obtained simply by shoveling up several boxes of the fine débris.



FIG. 40.—Kreide-schlemmerei at Sassnitz, Island of Rügen, showing chalk cliff in background and pit dump heap of fossils in foreground. (Photograph by Bassler.)

The last few days of the trip were spent in London where an idea of the stratigraphy of the London Basin was obtained although most of the available time was devoted to a study of Museum methods and to conferences with scientific friends. The material results of the summer's work have reached Washington safely and after two months' work are now unpacked and in proper form for study.

## GEOLOGICAL FIELD-WORK IN THE ROCKY MOUNTAINS

In continuation of the geological field-work in Rocky Mountain stratigraphy, under the direction of Secretary Charles D. Walcott, Dr. Charles E. Resser, associate curator of paleontology, U. S. National Museum, accompanied by Mr. Erwin R. Pohl, of the paleontological staff, left Provo, Utah, with the regular field outfit late in July, 1926.

The first objective was the determination of the section in Shoshone Canyon west of Cody, Wyo. The strata were here found to be rather badly metamorphosed, and fossils were few, but enough information was obtained to determine the position of the exposed Cambrian beds. An attempt was next made to work out the difficult sections farther north in the Beartooth Range, with the result that the proper stratigraphic position of the rocks was determined although the minor details could not be ascertained because of the ruggedness of the country.

The major objective of the season's work was a restudy of the famous sections north of the Gallatin Valley in Montana. Camp was established at Logan and daily trips made into one or another part of the foothills north of the Gallatin River. Mr. Pohl here investigated the Devonian strata particularly, securing good study collections. The Cambrian beds yielded many fine trilobites and other fossils as they have in the past, but a new locality in Nixon's Gulch furnished a large collection representing the Middle Cambrian Stephen fauna of British Columbia.

After the extended stop at Logan, camp was moved to Pole Creek south of the Madison River in the foothills of the Madison Range. Here ample collections were obtained from Middle Cambrian beds from which the National Museum had previously but a few fragments.

Near the close of the season several days were occupied in the study of the exposures in the Wasatch Mountains north of Brigham City, Utah. Dr. Asa A. L. Mathews, of the University of Utah, joined the party and served as guide to the places where he had previously discovered outcrops of fossiliferous Cambrian and Canadian formations. Two very strenuous trips to the top of the range resulted in obtaining many instructive fossils.

The season as a whole yielded returns beyond the average for several seasons past, in quantity and quality of fossils and in new stratigraphic data.



FIG. 41.—Shoshone Canyon, west of Cody, Wyoming. Upper Cambrian beds directly beyond bridge. Massive limestone below bridge, Bighorn Formation. Wall of Canyon at right, Mississippian rocks. (Photograph by Milwaukee Public Museum.)



FIG. 42.—View northward across Gallatin River, north of Manhattan, Montana. Low hills of Paleozoic rocks. Nixon's Gulch on right side. (Photograph by E. R. Pohl.)



FIG. 43.—Gallatin Valley at Logan, Montana. Upper Cambrian strata at extreme right. Massive cliff, Jefferson limestone. Gully at left typical feature due to outcrop of the Three Forks Shale. (Photograph by E. R. Pohl.)



FIG. 44.—Gallatin Canyon near Cherry Creek Road. Cliffs formed by Paleozoic limestones. (Photograph by Chas. E. Resser.)



FIG. 45.—Details of Middle Cambrian strata, north side of Gallatin River, east of Logan, Montana. (Photograph by Chas. E. Resser.)

## GEOLOGICAL FIELD-WORK IN NEW YORK AND ONTARIO

In continuation of work begun in 1925 by the division of paleontology of the U. S. National Museum, Mr. Erwin R. Pohl was detailed to spend four weeks during the summer of 1926 in the field in procuring the detailed data necessary to label correctly as to geological horizon the large collections of Devonian fossils from many classic localities in the eastern United States. Work was continued on the section at Kashong Creek in west-central New York where the beds of lower Hamilton age, including the Skaneateles and Ludlowville shales were made the subject of close stratigraphical



FIG. 46.—Falls of Kashong Creek over upper part of Ludlowville shale.  
Bellona, Seneca Lake, N. Y. (Photograph by E. R. Pohl.)

study. These strata contain many rare and excellently preserved invertebrate fossil remains, and not only were the collections increased but the information was also acquired to make those already in the Museum of real scientific value under the newer methods of study. Figure 46 illustrates one of the many charming waterfalls that abound in this section of the country. The strata here lie practically horizontal, and the falls are almost invariably due to the resistance of a harder bed of rock and the undercutting of the less resistant underlying layers.

At Ithaca, N. Y., due to the general southerly dip of the strata, excellent exposures of upper Devonian rocks are afforded, and the locality shown in figure 47 is a collecting ground that has long been

favored by geological collectors. The beds exhibited are at the base of a considerable invasion of the Portage during the Upper Devonian and carry a distinct fauna of striking forms. Several other noted localities in central and western New York were also paid brief visits. The most important of these trips, both in purpose and result, was that to examine the Middle and Upper Devonian beds at the celebrated series of sections along 18 Mile Creek and the north and south shores of Lake Erie. In this vicinity the entire sequence of the Hamilton, which in central New York comprises some 400 feet of



FIG. 47.—Ithaca Falls over Ithaca beds of Portage age. Ithaca, N. Y.  
(Photograph by E. R. Pohl.)

rock and in eastern New York and Pennsylvania is as thick as 3000 feet, is represented in less than 90 feet of superimposed beds. The faunal sequence, however, is as well marked, and the zones even more distinct than those of their eastern equivalents, for here the succession lacks many of the invasions that are represented in the more easterly deposits of the same age. This portion of the expedition was undertaken in cooperation with the Department of Geology of the Milwaukee Public Museum, which institution was represented by Mr. Gilbert O. Raasch, assistant curator of geology.

Following the work at 18 Mile Creek, Mr. Pohl proceeded alone to Thedford and Arkona, Ontario, Canada, for the purpose of



FIG. 48.—Beds of Hamilton age at 18-Mile Creek. The protruding band is the Encrinial limestone, which separates the lower from the upper Hamilton. Section 7, 18-Mile Creek, N. Y. (Photograph by E. R. Pohl.)



FIG. 49.—Section of the middle Devonian shales at No. 4 Hill, Arkona, Ontario, Canada. The beds are divided into lower and upper Hamilton by the Encrinial limestone in the middle foreground. (Photograph by E. R. Pohl.)

determining the correlation of the beds exposed in that region with those of the New York deposits. The country intervening has been subjected to much erosion and is moreover covered under a heavy deposit of glacial material, so that the strata under study are nowhere displayed. This correlation was accomplished on the basis of a bed immediately above the Encrinial limestone, shown in figures 48 and 49, which contains the exact fauna that is carried in one of the zones of the section in western New York at East Bethany. The strata at Thedford and Arkona have been separated into a three-fold divi-



FIG. 50.—Rock Glen, Arkona, Ontario. The Encrinial limestone here forms a small falls due to relative resistance in contrast to that of the soft shales above and below. (Photograph by E. R. Pohl.)

sion according to their fossil content. The lower beds, or as they are locally called, the Olentangy shales, are composed of fine gray shales which easily weather into a soft mud used in making pottery, and carry thin lenses of hard crystalline limestone composed throughout of masses of beautifully sculptured fossil remains. Several large exhibition slabs, besides much other material, were returned to the Museum from these beds. The middle division includes the so-called Encrinial limestone which is made up of an innumerable mass of crinoid remains, and a three-foot bed of shale which is referred to as the "coral bed" on account of the large number of fossil corals

that it contains. This is the bed whose fauna is also found in New York State. The Widder beds, or the upper division, contain an entirely different fauna and one that is not known elsewhere. The entire section is well exposed in several ravines such as those shown in figures 49 and 50, and is followed by black shales of Mississippian age which contain conodonts and plant remains. These beds are best exposed on the shores of Lake Huron at Kettle Point (fig. 51). Included in the shale, which has a high bituminous content, are many



FIG. 51.—Huron shales of Mississippian age, with included "cannon-ball" concretions. Kettle Point, Lake Huron, Ontario, Canada. (Photograph by E. R. Pohl.)

and often large peculiar spherical concretions with a radially crystalline structure. The nucleus of these concretions is usually a single plate of some armored fish of the Mississippian. In emerging from the shales under the action of erosion and frost, these concretions often split in half and lie about as the "kettles" of local terminology. The work in this district was aided by several amateur collectors including Messrs. Charles Southworth and J. R. Kearny, who have also been prevailed on to add to the Museum collections from their lifelong accumulations of local collecting.

### COLLECTING FOSSIL FOOTPRINTS IN THE GRAND CANYON, ARIZONA

In continuation of the investigation of the fossil tracks found in the Grand Canyon, so well begun in 1924,<sup>1</sup> Mr. Charles W. Gilmore, curator of the division of vertebrate paleontology, U. S. National Museum, made a second visit to the Canyon in the early spring of 1926.

This investigation, made possible through an allotment granted by the Marsh Fund Committee of the National Academy of Sciences, had as its purpose the acquiring of additional specimens of fossil tracks from the Coconino and Hermit formations and the extension of the explorations into the older Supai formation in which the discovery of fossil tracks had been reported by Mr. J. R. Eakin, Superintendent of the Grand Canyon National Park.

Arriving at the Canyon on April 20, Mr. Gilmore with one assistant spent three weeks in active field-work collecting and exploring these formations as exposed on the Hermit and Yaki trails. The expedition was successful far beyond expectations, as the collection made consisted of a large series of slabs of some 2,700 pounds in weight on whose surfaces were preserved the foot impressions of a great variety of animal life.

The old Coconino locality on the Hermit Trail was revisited and a large series of beautifully preserved tracks and trails secured, which included many kinds that were new to this Ichnite fauna. In the Hermit shale some 1,400 feet below the level of the Canyon rim a large assemblage of fossil tracks and plants was collected. The presence of insect remains was made known for the first time by the discovery of the wing impression of a large dragonfly-like insect; and finally in the Supai formation 1,800 feet below the rim another footprint horizon was definitely located.

Fossil tracks were found in considerable abundance in all three of these formations and at several levels in the Hermit Trail section, and it was along this trail that most of the collecting was done. This later investigation shows that in the perfection of their preservation and in the great variety of footmarks found, there are few localities that outrank this one. It is further unique in probably being the only place in the world where fossil tracks of three successive faunas may be found in one nearly vertical geological section, separated by such great geological intervals. It is now known that these evidences of past life range through over 800 feet of rock strata.

<sup>1</sup> Smithsonian Misc. Coll., Vol. 78, No. 1, 1926, pp. 20-23.



FIG. 52.—Trackway of a small salamander-like animal showing the marks of a dragging tail between the footprints. More than natural size.



FIG. 53.—Trackway of *Laoporus noblei* Lull (on left.) New species of fossil footprints (on right). Both reduced.

At the present time fossil tracks are known in these formations only on the Hermit and Yaki trails, but doubtless their geographical range will be rapidly extended now that the precise levels of their occurrence has been determined.

Previous mention has been made of the curious fact that in the Coconino nearly all of the tracks and trails were going in one direction, that is, up the slopes of the crossbedded sandstones. Examination of many additional hundred square feet of track-covered surface all goes to confirm this original observation, for in the hundreds of trails seen in the field only three exceptions to this trend of direction were observed. While slabs of considerable size were collected, larger and more impressive trackways might have been secured but for the difficulty of transporting them to the top of the Canyon, as all of these specimens were brought out of the Canyon on mule back along a narrow and often precipitous trail. It will thus be seen that the size of the specimens collected was always determined by the carrying capacity of a mule, which is about 150 pounds on these trails.

Preliminary study of this collection of tracks indicates that the known Ichnite fauna of the Coconino will be doubled in the number of genera and species; that an adequate fauna will be established for the Hermit shale; and a beginning will be made in the development of a fauna for the Supai formation. The development of these Ichnite faunas may, in the absence of other fossil criteria, be of great assistance in the correlation of other track-bearing formations of distant localities.

#### AN ELEPHANT HUNT IN FLORIDA

A mountable skeleton of some species of American mammoth has been long desired for the National Museum exhibition collection. But while remains of these extinct elephants have been gathered from almost all parts of North America, they consist for the most part of isolated teeth and bones. Occasionally jaws and still less frequently skulls with parts of the skeleton have been located. The National Museum has two of these skulls. The smaller, representing the species *Elephas primigenius*, is from northeast Siberia; the larger one, *Elephas boreus*, was found in a Pleistocene deposit near Cincinnati, Ohio. The next in importance of remains of the mammoth in the National Museum is a specimen from Idaho, representing a third species, *Elephas columbi*. This specimen consists of part of a lower jaw and an upper tooth associated with several

other parts of the skeleton. None of this material however, is sufficiently complete to form the basis of a successful skeleton restoration. It was therefore with renewed hope of realizing this desire for a mountable skeleton of one of these great elephants that a message was received, in the early autumn of the present year, from the Venice Company of Venice, Florida, reporting the discovery near that place of a mammoth skeleton. A cordial invitation to the Smithsonian to send and secure this specimen for the Institution's collections accompanied this report, and as this seemed sufficiently promising to warrant investigation, Dr. James W. Gidley, assistant curator, division of fossil vertebrates, was detailed to go to Venice for that purpose. Arriving there on the morning of the first day of November, Dr. Gidley was occupied for the next 10 days with collecting the fossil, and with studying the geological formations in its vicinity.

A preliminary examination revealed the fact that the bones all belonged to one individual but that the skeleton was by no means complete. However, the specimen was very far from valueless, and the portions remaining were of sufficient value to amply repay the time and expense required to collect and preserve them. Among the more important pieces obtained are the lower jaws including the teeth, both upper cheek-teeth, considerable portions of both tusks and many of the more important bones of the feet.

These pieces show that this mammoth, or extinct elephant, had been an animal of very large size. In life it would have stood at least 12 feet high at the shoulders and it carried a pair of great incurving tusks which were eight inches in diameter and, measured around the curves, were each 10 feet or more in length.

The location of this find is the north bank of the main drainage canal of the Venice Company at a point about four miles east of the Venice Hotel. The bones were first discovered by Mr. J. W. Parker, a farmer living in the vicinity, while walking along the water's edge after the subsidence of an unusually heavy freshet which had filled the canal to overflowing and had caused heavy caving of its banks. It was this caving that had brought the bones fully to view. It also broke up and destroyed many of the bones including the skull which evidently had been originally buried there, together with a considerable portion of the skeleton.

This partial skeleton was originally buried about five to six feet below the present surface of the ground in a stratum of sand belonging to the Pleistocene or so-called Ice Age. As revealed by the cut made by the canal, this sand deposit lies directly on an older Pleisto-

cene stratum, several feet in thickness and of very wide extent, which is made up almost entirely of shells representing numerous species which can live only in brackish or salt water. This is evidence that the sea once covered this part of Florida and that in its shallow depth was formed this widespread layer of shells. Later, as it slowly emerged from the sea, the bone-bearing sand layer was formed upon it.

The mammoth bones themselves tell an interesting little story of conditions which prevailed here when Florida was in the process of being transformed into its present day appearance.



FIG. 54.—North bank of Venice Company's main drainage canal, about 4 miles east of Venice, Florida. Location of Venice mammoth bones. Exact spot of find is indicated by canvas shelter at middle-left. Arrow indicates uneven line marking contact plane between fossil-bearing layer and later deposits.

In excavating these bones it was observed that they had not originally lain in a natural position but had been somewhat scattered about and broken before their final covering many thousands of years ago. This together with the fact that they were buried in a sand which contained many broken sea shells, in fact a typical beach sand, suggested that although this spot is now more than four miles inland, it was in that earlier time a sea beach upon which the mammoth carcass had stranded and as the flesh decayed the bones had been considerably tossed about and broken by the waves. That this was in reality a sea beach at the time the bones were buried

there is apparently fully proven by the fact that many of the bones including the lower jaws and teeth had a considerable covering of barnacles which can only live in salt or at least brackish water. The fact that barnacles had attached themselves to the broken surfaces is proof also that some of the bones had been broken before the final covering. The presence of the barnacles also indicates that the bones before their final covering had lain for some time just off shore in shallow water.

In connection with this story of the Venice mammoth, it seems in order here to express to the officers of the Venice Company appreciation for the courtesies extended to Dr. Gidley while engaged in collecting the specimen and to commend them for their public-spirited generosity in supplying all the material and labor needed for the work as well as assuming for the Smithsonian Institution practically all incidental expenses in connection with it.

#### COLLECTING MINERALS IN MEXICO

Regarding the mineralogy and geology of Mexico comparatively little is known. The country is rich in mineral wealth, producing over 40 per cent of the world's silver, yet very few Mexican mineralogical collections have been made. This present exploration was undertaken by Dr. F. W. Foshag of the Smithsonian Institution in collaboration with the Mineralogical Museum of Harvard University, for the purpose of collecting representative material from as many of the districts as possible. Field-work was confined to that portion of the plateau of Northern Mexico within the states of Chihuahua, Coahuila, and Durango.

The plateau region of Northern Mexico is characterized by a broad high plain from which have been thrust upward numerous monoclinal or anticlinal ranges of mountains. The plains and valleys between the ranges are clothed with grasses or scattered shrubs, and the slopes carry a sparse covering of brush characteristic of the Lower Sonoran life zone. This zone is characterized by a number of yucca and cactus species, the creosote bush and, in numerous places, the showy ocotillo. In a number of places the yuccas form extensive open groves. Some of these desert plants are put to economic uses; maguey and sotol for fermented drinks, lechuguilla for fiber, candelilla as a source of vegetable wax, and guayule for rubber.

The ore deposits of the area visited may be considered a mineralogical unit. The most important are found in limestone of Cretaceous age

and are without apparent direct connection with intruded granitic rocks, although there probably is a connection. This class of ore is comparatively simple mineralogically, consisting of silver, lead and zinc minerals accompanied by only minor amounts of silicates. A number of the richest and most extensive ore deposits of Mexico belong to this type of ore occurrence.

After leaving El Paso, the first district visited was Los Lamentos in the northern part of the state of Chihuahua. This district con-



FIG. 55.—The mining camp of Los Lamentos, Chihuahua. The rocks are fossiliferous Cretaceous limestones. (Photograph by Foshag.)

tains one of the few great ore deposits of Mexico that was not known to the Spanish conquerors. The extremely dry and inhospitable nature of the region probably accounts for this. The ore deposits are of so simple a type and the relations of the ore to country rock so clear, that it has become a standard for this type of occurrence. The ore persistently follows the contact between a hard, dark gray limestone and a lighter fossiliferous one, and consists of the simple lead and zinc minerals without any development of silicate minerals but with a surrounding aureole of recrystallized limestone. Many other North Mexican ore deposits are similar, although not always so simple. The mine is rich in showy minerals of both lead and zinc.

The region surrounding the city of Chihuahua is a rich one. Sixteen miles away is the famous camp of Santa Eulalia, where since 1591 the mines have been in almost constant operation. The ore bodies are quite extensive, carrying silver, lead, and zinc, and occurring in



FIG. 56.—Large crystals of gypsum in a cave in the Maravilla Mine at Naica, Chihuahua. (Photograph by Foshag.)

"mantos," one ore body having been followed for over two miles. Some of the chambers left by the removal of the ore are enormous, one in the Potosi Mine being 600 feet high, 300 feet long, and 200 feet wide. Other nearby localities visited were the La Ceja district, producing lead and zinc; Placer de Guadalupe, a small camp well known for its gold placers and for the combination of gold and pitch-

blende in its lodes; and Cuchillo Parado, a lead deposit on the Conchos River.

About 50 miles south of Chihuahua is the camp of Naica, known to mineralogists for its two crystal caves, the larger being in the Maravilla Mine. Here are several chambers connected by passage



FIG. 57.—A peon carrying lead ore up a "chicken ladder." Encantata Mine, at Esmeralda, Coahuila. (Photograph by Foshag.)

ways, one chamber containing well-formed groups of long, radiating crystals of clear gypsum growing from the floor of the cave. Many of these crystals exceed three feet and some reach six feet in length. Another chamber, reached through a narrow opening studded with crystals, is completely lined with thousands of blade-like crystals one to three feet in length.

Sierra Mojada, the next district visited, owes its discovery to a band of smugglers attempting to elude pursuit. The ore bodies extend for a distance of six kilometers along the foot of a limestone

cliff 2,500 feet high. The district is unusual in that lead, zinc, silver, copper, and sulphur have all been mined here. The great length but shallow depth of these mines makes it more economical to work them by the old Spanish methods than by modern ones. Much of the ore is brought to the surface on the backs of peons, often up ladders made of notched logs, popularly called "chicken ladders." It is said that a strong peon will carry loads in excess of



FIG. 58.—The mining camp of Ojuela at Mapimi, Durango. The rocks are Cretaceous limestone. (Photograph by Foshag.)

100 kilos (220 lbs.). Figure 57 shows a young lad carrying a sack of heavy lead ore by means of a tump line.

In the northeastern part of the state of Durango, near the village of Mapimi, is the Ojuela mine—one of the greatest lead mines of the world. Within this one mine are over 550 miles of tunnels driven to extract the ore. The camp itself is perched on a steep limestone mountain. Before the town, rises an almost vertical cliff of Cretaceous limestone 2,000 to 3,000 feet high. It is in the hills lying at the base of this cliff that the ore bodies lie.

Velardena, a district lying along the Cuencame River in Durango, has mines of copper, lead, and silver. The Ternares mine, located in the San Lorenzo Range, has been worked for over 200 years. The

ore deposits are at the contact of granitic rocks with limestones, or in veins in diorite. At the Ternares Mine the limestone contact zone is characterized by great quantities of velardenite, spurrite, and hillebrandite, minerals first described as new from this locality.

About a mile from the railroad station in the city of Durango, rises a mass of volcanic rock and iron ore called Cerro Mercado.



FIG. 59.—Old church on Cerro Remedios, Durango. The rhyolite of this hill is a low grade tin ore. (Photograph by Foshag.)

The iron ore deposits of this hill constitute Mexico's chief domestic supply. The iron-bearing mineral is almost entirely hematite, the ferric oxide of iron, and it forms large masses in a rhyolitic rock.

Nearly five months were spent in the field and over two tons of specimens collected and shipped. The success of the field-work was largely due to the hearty cooperation of the Mexican government officials and of the American mining engineers in charge of the various properties.

## THE CANFIELD MINERALOGICAL COLLECTION

Field-work of Mr. E. V. Shannon, assistant curator, division of physical and chemical geology, U. S. National Museum, was limited to a few trips to nearby Virginia and Maryland, and to nearly a month spent in Dover in northern New Jersey in packing the collection of minerals bequeathed to the National Museum by Dr. Frederick A. Canfield, who died during July of this year. This collection was begun by Mr. Mahlon Dickerson about 1808 and was

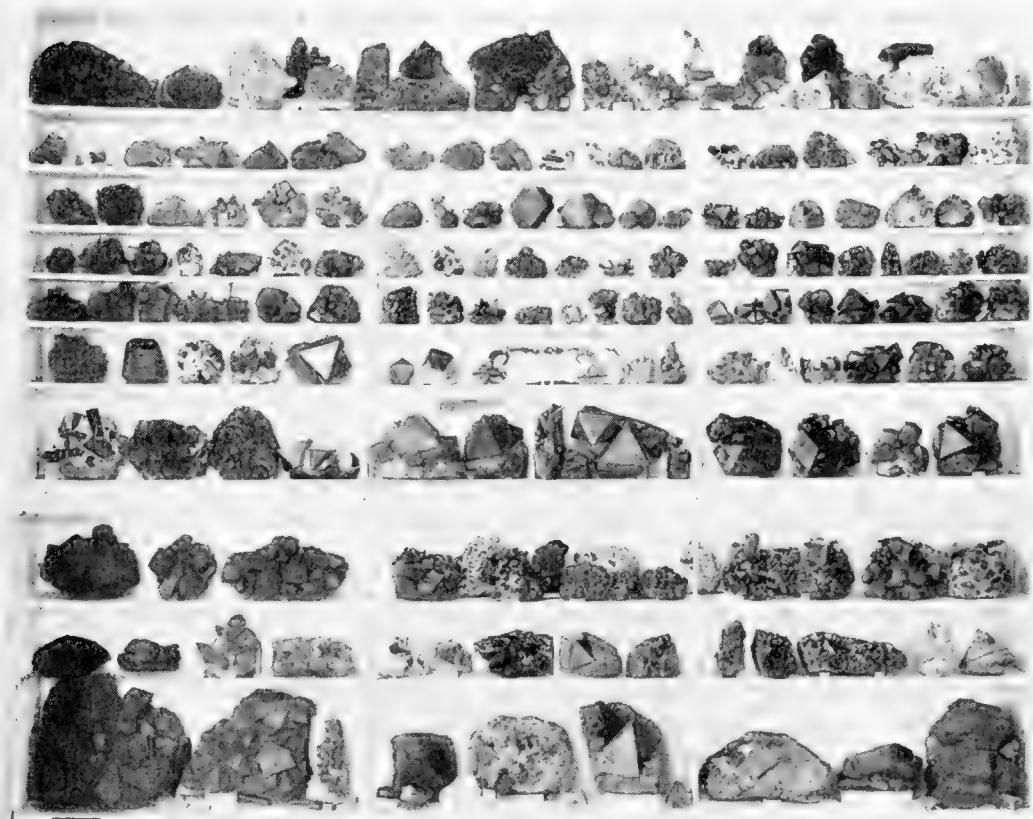


FIG. 60.—The collection of Franklin Furnace minerals, made by Frederick Canfield, Sr.

continued by Frederick Canfield, Sr., who secured many uncommonly fine specimens from old American localities no longer available and especially from Franklin Furnace, New Jersey, prior to 1870. Frederick A. Canfield, Jr., continued his father's collection and found in it his principal occupation and relaxation until his death. It now contains some 9,000 specimens, many of which are unique and all of them of exceptional quality. It was housed for over 70 years in the picturesque mansion at Dover, shown in figure 61, before being finally shipped to the National Museum. In order to insure its steady growth and relative standing, Mr. Canfield accompanied his

gift with an endowment of \$50,000, the income of which is to be utilized for this purpose. In the work at Dover, Mr. Shannon was ably assisted by Mr. James Benn of the Museum's staff and Geo. M. Hyland.

The opportunity was offered to visit several of the world-famous mineral localities of northern New Jersey. These included the various iron mines of Mine Hill, Wharton, and the vicinity of Dover. Of these the only one now in operation is the Hurd Mine owned by the Replogle Steel Company at Mount Hope.



FIG. 61.—Canfield house at Dover, N. J.

Through the courtesy of the officials of the New Jersey Zinc Company, it was possible to visit the underground workings and surface plant of the great zinc mine at Franklin Furnace, renowned as one of the most productive known localities for rare minerals. The mine and mill are models in efficiency, and the various methods which have been developed for handling the ore are of extreme interest. The quarries which furnish the beautiful zeolites at Great Notch and West Paterson were visited in company with the Newark Mineralogical Society, and a Sunday was spent at the well-known serpentine locality of Montville.

#### THE ROEBLING MINERALOGICAL COLLECTION

In July, 1926, a second of America's foremost collectors of minerals, Col. Washington A. Roebling, of Trenton, New Jersey, passed

away. His noted collection was bequeathed to his son, Mr. John A. Roebling, of Bernardsville, New Jersey, who, in memory of his father, generously presented it to the Smithsonian Institution, with an endowment of \$150,000 for the purpose of maintaining its present high standard.

On October 27, Dr. W. F. Foshag, Miss Margaret Moodey, and Mr. James Benn, of the staff, were detailed to go to Trenton to pack the collection for shipment to Washington. Mrs. Foshag also acted as a volunteer assistant for the greater part of the time. The work occupied a period of approximately six weeks, and the collection, contained in 258 boxes, was transported by truck and safely stored in the National Museum by December 7. It should be stated, incidentally, that Mr. Roebling defrayed all expenses connected with this work.

The career of Col. Washington A. Roebling, soldier, engineer, and mineralogist, is too well known to need narration here. The collecting of minerals was begun as a recreation and was energetically carried on from 1874 until the time of his death. With ample means to indulge this hobby, he spared no expense in securing rare minerals, both from American and foreign sources. In a large room in his beautiful home in Trenton, called by his family and friends "the museum," the collection was artistically arranged, and it was here that the Colonel spent most of his leisure time, delighting in showing his treasures to his friends, and being particularly happy if the caller chanced to be a mineralogist with whom he could discuss his rare finds. So methodical was the arrangement that he could place his hand almost immediately on any specimen desired.

Comprised of upward of 16,000 specimens, embracing almost the entire number of known mineral species, the collection contains much to delight both the eye of the seeker for mere beauty and the heart of the ardent student. Gem minerals are plentiful but there are only a few cut stones; showy examples of the more common minerals—malachite and azurite, quartz, calcites, and especially fine zeolites—are in abundance, but the chief value of the collection lies in the rare specimens which only the student can appreciate. Many of these represent the only example of a species in America. During the Colonel's lifetime, these were always freely loaned for study or comparison, and their usefulness will be increased when their final installation in the national collections makes them accessible to all accredited students.

#### BIOLOGICAL COLLECTING IN SUMATRA

Lieutenant Henry C. Kellers, Medical Corps, United States Navy, was detailed as representative of the Smithsonian Institution with

the U. S. Naval Observatory Eclipse Expedition to Sumatra. Dr. Kellers reports the following:

The expedition left San Francisco September 1, and arrived at Sumatra October 26, stopping at Java for three days for visé of credentials of the members of the expedition by the Dutch officials. The Astronomical Station was located at Kepahiang, a small village on the Moesi River situated among the foothills of the western range, with an elevation of about 1,900 feet above sea level. Kepahiang is near Mt. Kaba, an active volcano, and about 40 kilometers from the Indian Ocean. This proved to be an excellent location for collecting trips. Most of the collecting was done around and on the slopes of Mt. Kaba.

Two ascents of this mountain were made to the rim of the crater, and on each occasion numerous specimens were collected. Snares and spring traps were set along the banks of the Moesi River and in the jungle, with good results. As the rainy season was on in force by the end of November, hunting in the jungle was rather disagreeable because of the countless leeches that attacked one, no matter what precautions were taken. They bite so softly that their presence cannot be detected except for the blood which trickles from the wound. After covering a few kilometers in the jungle, the legs of my native hunters would change in color from the natural brown to a bright red, when they would rest and scrape off the leeches. The terraced rice fields in the vicinity of the station were worked over with seine and dip net for fresh-water fish and amphibia, with good results, and many reptiles were captured.

Four trips were made to the village of Benkoelen on the coast of the Indian Ocean for marine invertebrates and tow net hauls. A double outrigger canoe was used for towing the plankton nets, and I was able by increasing or furling the sail area, to obtain all the speed needed with the afternoon trade wind. The canoe although rather small, was in no danger of turning over while sailing, as the outriggers used by the natives were the largest I have seen, either in the Solomon group of Islands or the Samoan Islands that I have visited. Two excursions were made to the Island of Poeloetikus in the Indian Ocean where large quantities of marine life were collected.

The advent of the automobile, with the whirr of the engine on the roads skirting the edge of the jungle, makes collecting more difficult, and one must now penetrate far into the jungle to hunt game which formerly might have been obtained comparatively near the borders of the wild territory.



FIG. 62.—Looking into the crater of Mt. Kaba, Sumatra. (Photograph by Kellers.)



FIG. 63.—Community rice mill on the Moesi River, Sumatra. (Photograph by Kellers.)



FIG. 64.—Hauling the seine on the beach at Benkoelen, Sumatra.  
(Photograph by Kellers.)



FIG. 65.—Sumatran outrigger canoe used for towing the plankton net.  
(Photograph by Kellers.)

Although malaria is very prevalent on the island, the members of the expedition enjoyed excellent health. Mosquitoes were a pest, and none of the houses was screened. The Europeans and natives alike protect themselves by means of mosquito nets only at night. No effort is made to rid the villages of breeding places for mosquitoes. I found that one of the main sources of mosquitoes is the large cement tub or tank that holds the bathing water at every dwelling, the daily bath being taken by dipping the water out of the tank with a small bucket and pouring it over the body. The water in these tanks becomes stagnant, as they seldom go dry, and so becomes a perfect incubator for mosquitoes. The water as used is replenished



FIG. 66.—Poeloetikus Island, Indian Ocean. (Photograph by Kellers.)

two or three times a week during the dry season from surface wells, and during the wet season, rain is caught by means of wooden troughs leading from the roofs.

It is remarkable what cleaning up and proper drainage will do to eradicate the mosquito. The Kaba Wetan Coffee Plantation, situated about four kilometers from the astronomical station, is clean and well drained. The bath house of the manager's residence is screened, but there are no screens in the living quarters. It was a pleasure to remain there and rest without the heavy nets at night. The manager stated that he seldom had a mosquito in or about the house.

All water used for drinking and domestic purposes comes from surface wells and the question uppermost in one's mind is: Has it been boiled? The day's drinking water is boiled in the morning and kept in covered containers until used. The natives are not particular in regard to the water they drink, and suffer considerably from dysen-

tery. At hotels and boarding houses, to be on the safe side, the Europeans usually drink "Apollinaris" to such an extent that it is called by the natives, "Ayer Blanda," or white man's water.

In the department of natural history the natives are quite observant. Their nomenclature is fairly complete. They possess generic and specific names, the descriptive names being numerous and often a source of error. They class all the larger Felidæ under the generic name *harimau*, and the smaller under the name *kuching*. They then designate them by distinct descriptive names. They give the gen-



FIG. 67.—A typical coffee planter's bungalow, Sumatra. Kaba Wetan Coffee Plantation, where the mosquito is unknown. See text. (Photograph by Kellers.)

eric name *rusa* to the larger deer. They apply one name to the tapir and rhinoceros, namely, *bodak*. All of the squirrels are grouped under the name *tupai*. All rats and mice are known as *toekus*, except the bamboo rat, which is called *dkan*. The frogs and toads are classed together under one name, *kodok*. The names of snakes are confusing as all are called *ular*, the specific names being unsatisfactory from a scientific standpoint.

The tiger is the most feared of the mammals, although statistics show that crocodiles claim a larger total of victims. In the native legends and folk-lore, the men inhabiting the Korinchi district of Sumatra have the power of transforming themselves into tigers.



FIG. 68.—The covered wagons of Sumatra bringing in produce for market day.  
(Photograph by Kellers.)



FIG. 69.—Market day in Sumatra. Note the Durians in the foreground.  
(Photograph by Kellers.)

I was told that the natives observe a difference in the methods used by the tiger and the tigress in killing their prey, the former by breaking the neck and the latter by biting through it. The other mammals do not cause any terror among the natives, although many are dangerous when hunted.

The native Sumatran, whether an orthodox Moslem or not, believes in spirits both of animate and inanimate objects. On my second ascent of Mt. Kaba, I met a band of natives on the edge of the

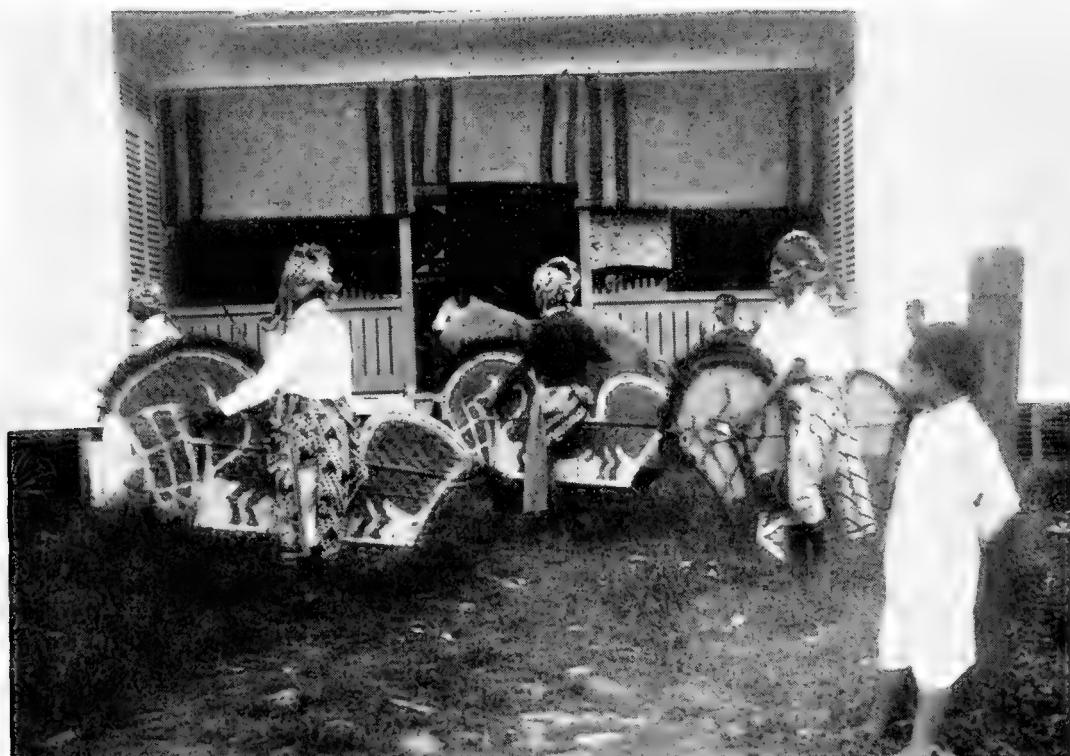


FIG. 70.—Javanese coolies giving an ancient war dance New-year's day for the members of the expedition. Note that the horses are constructed of plaited bamboo and painted. (Photograph by Kellers.)

crater offering up as a sacrifice a white pigeon, sprinkling rice and water on the ground, and conducting religious ceremonies in order to invoke the favor of the spirits for bountiful crops and to the end that their wives would bear numerous offspring. The story of today of the semi-human ape that is supposed to inhabit the southern end of the island is nothing more than the old legend of the Sumatran orang-outang (*mawas*), a semi-human spirit of great strength and ferocity.

The present age is one of transition. How long are the old customs and beliefs to survive? The native Sumatran is being educated, he reads books, he is taking an interest in newspapers, and he has a good opinion of himself.

The Dutch officials and the managers of various coffee plantations in the vicinity of Kepahiang rendered all the assistance possible to make the expedition a success. Transportation for freight and personnel across and about the island was without cost, and the detailing of natives to accompany me on my daily collecting trips shows the interest taken by the Dutch in scientific pursuits. The two trips to Poeloetikus Island could not have been made except for the courtesy of the superintendent of the Dutch Mail Steamship Co., at Benkoelen,



FIG. 71.—A rainy day in Sumatra. Note the basket hats. (Photograph by Kellers.)

who placed at my disposal a sea-going motor boat and a native fisherman.

#### BIOLOGICAL FIELD-WORK IN FLORIDA

During March and April, 1926, I visited northern Florida for the purpose of making general collections of vertebrates and plants. Work was carried on at several localities in the region extending from Gainesville to Cedar Keys. It was mostly of such routine character as to call for no special comment.

To obtain skeletons of porpoises at Cedar Keys was the chief object in view. The animals were abundant and fearless, coming close to the wharves in pursuit of small fish. Here they were easily shot but less easily recovered owing to the dense opacity of



FIG. 72.—Preparing skeleton of porpoise on beach at Cedar Keys, Florida.



FIG. 73.—Black Skimmers on beach at Cedar Keys, Florida, showing good result of local bird protection.



FIG. 74.—Sponge boats and wharf at Cedar Keys, Florida. The sponge industry is carried on by Greek fishermen.



FIG. 75.—Sponge boat.



FIG. 76.—Building foundations dug in Indian shellheap, Cedar Keys, Florida.



FIG. 77.—Turpentine gatherer. A familiar figure in the pine regions of Florida.

the water, a condition locally attributed to the heavily flooded state of the Suwannee River. The process of skinning and skeletonizing a porpoise (*Tursiops*) is shown in one of the photographs.

Cedar Keys is one of the headquarters of the Gulf sponge fishery, an industry carried on by Greeks. Seaworthy motor boats are used, the divers working in the open waters of the Gulf of Mexico, and remaining at sea about a week at a time. It is said that good commercial sponges could formerly be obtained in the waters of Waccasssee Bay; but this supply was long ago exhausted.

The town of Cedar Keys occupies a site famous for its Indian mounds and shellheaps. Many of the houses rest on foundations dug into these remnants of a vanished culture.

GERRIT S. MILLER, JR.

#### VISIT TO A CALIFORNIA WHALING STATION

During the summer of 1926 a joint expedition was made to the coast region of northern California by the Smithsonian Institution and the San Diego Society of Natural History, A. Brazier Howell representing the former and Laurence M. Huey the latter. Opportunity was taken to make collections of the local mammals and some things of much interest were secured, including seven specimens of the rare rodent, *Phenacomys albipes*, of which but two specimens had been previously known from California. The main purpose of the expedition, however, was to secure data, rather than specimens, regarding the whales and whale fishery at Trinidad, Humboldt County. This station in summer, and one near Monterey during the winter, are both operated by the California Sea Products Company, a concern that has been active in this field for many years. It is now the only well established whale fishery anywhere on the coast of the United States, although at least one other has recently started work.

Whale hunting is a very old industry and hence is of great interest historically, as well as biologically and economically. The early type of fishery has disappeared never to return because of a number of reasons, among which are the fact that the more valuable species have been practically exterminated, leaving the speedier, less valuable ones which the old-time whalers not only did not want, but could not catch with the methods then in use; and the adoption of the present technique, including small, fast steamers and harpoon guns.

The catch at Trinidad consists almost exclusively of finback and humpback whales, the former reaching a length of about 75 feet

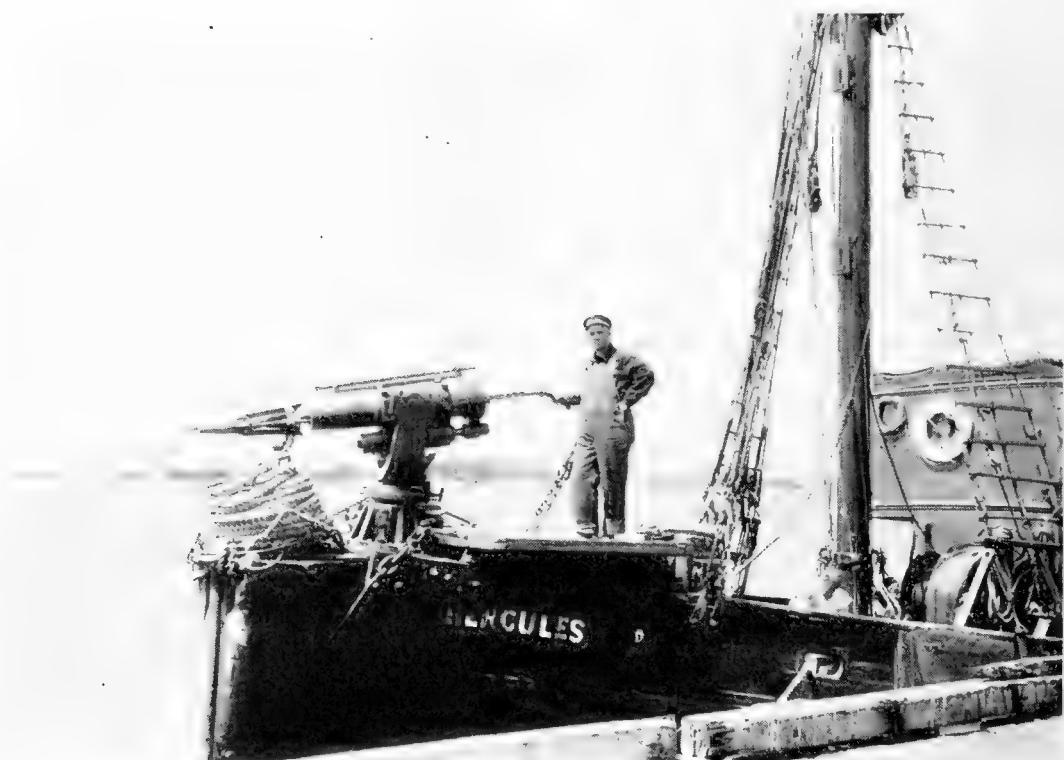


FIG. 78.—The "Hercules," largest of the three whalers, showing harpoon in position for firing and Captain Lane at the trigger. (Photograph by L. M. Huey.)



FIG. 79.—Captain Lane at the instant of firing a harpoon into a finback, shown in line of aim. (Photograph by L. M. Huey.)



FIG. 80.—The "Hercules" bringing a finback whale to the station, with the flukes made fast to the vessel. (Photograph by L. M. Huey.)



FIG. 81.—A large finback at the foot of the slip, ready to be hauled out. (Photograph by L. M. Huey.)

and the latter somewhat less. Each of the three small steamers used leaves the shore station and cruises usually to a distance from the coast of 50 miles, remaining out either until a whale is secured or until the fuel supply needs replenishing—a matter of some three days. If a whale indicates that it is wary, it is better to waste no time on it, for with the finback's maximum speed of better than 30 miles per hour it can play with its pursuer in an exasperating manner; but a close approach may usually be made, by cautious maneuvering, permitting a shot at less than 40 yards. If the bomb



FIG. 82.—The rare California gray whale being hauled up the slip. Note where sharks have bitten great pieces of blubber from in front of the flukes and also mutilated the latter after the death of the whale. (Photograph by L. M. Huey.)

fails to explode or the harpoon, weighing somewhat less than 150 pounds, is placed too far back, a fight of several hours may ensue. The cetacean may take out a mile of cable and must be as carefully played as a game fish, for although the line consists of a five-inch (in circumference) manila hawser with breaking strength of 18,500 pounds, the animal will snap this with ease if too much strain be applied or too much slack be given. When brought close alongside it is inflated with air and then may be marked with a flag and left to float while the vessel continues hunting for some time.

Upon reaching the station in tow of the vessel, a cable is attached to the tail and the carcass is hauled by steam power up the "slip"

to the covered cutting platform, where the blubber near the head is first loosened by means of huge knives, and then torn off by cables. The larger muscle masses are similarly treated and the skeleton disarticulated. The great strips of blubber are cut by hand into pieces of convenient size and so fed into the blubber cutter, which consists of a number of sharp blades revolving at high speed. The resultant sludge is then led to giant, steam-heated vats and the oil tried out. The lean meat of better quality is cut into slabs and



FIG. 83.—Head of California gray whale, the animal lying on its back. Note eye (a), baleen or whalebone (b), and large tongue (c). (Photograph by L. M. Huey.)

placed within large iron retorts in tiers, with iron plates between each layer, where it is cooked for a number of hours, then dried and finally ground. The waste, including the blood and viscera, is dumped into open vats of boiling water and after being cooked, the oil is separated and the solids dried and ground for fertilizer. After most of the meat is cut from the bones the latter are also placed in retorts and cooked. Considerable oil is obtained from them and the dry bones are then dumped in a pile which grows to large proportions as the season advances. The baleen or "whalebone" of this group of whales is short and coarse and is not at present of commercial value, so it, too, is cooked and ground for fertilizer. The



FIG. 84.—A finback on the slip. Note corrugations in the skin of the throat which probably permit great expansion during feeding. The spots on the chin at (a) indicate the positions of short bristles, the last remnant of a hairy coat. (Photograph by L. M. Huey.)

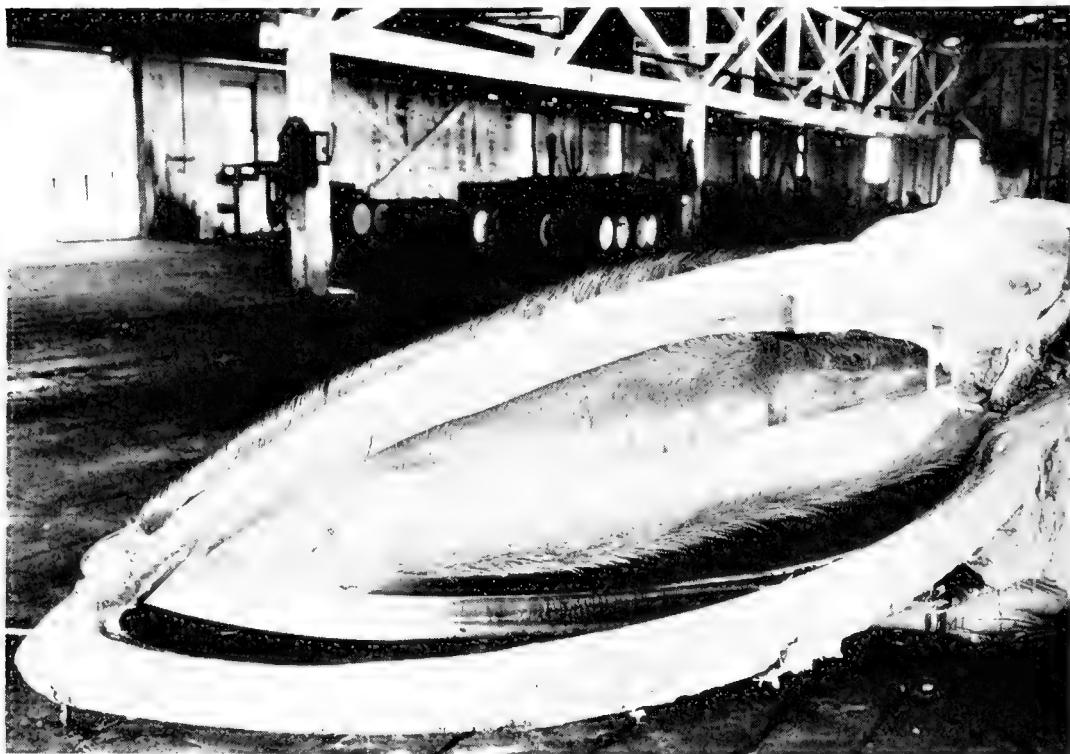


FIG. 85.—Roof of the mouth, showing baleen plates, and bony part of lower jaw of a finback, after the corrugated portion of the throat, shown in figure 84, had been removed. (Photograph by L. M. Huey.)



FIG. 86.—Great mass of skeletal bones of whales—the accumulation from dozens of individuals. (Photograph by L. M. Huey.)



FIG. 87.—The western gulls gather by the scores and hundreds, ever hopeful of snatching bits of blubber and meat. (Photograph by L. M. Huey.)

blubber oil is produced in several grades, some being used by manufacturers of fine soap, some as lubricants, chiefly in combination with mineral oil, and still others in the manufacture of certain foods. The better quality of meat meal is sold as chicken feed, and the bones are shipped in bulk to Honolulu, where, after being made into a fine grade of bone black, they are used in the refining of sugars.

The overhead and other expenses of such a plant as that of the California Sea Products Company are considerable, as it is necessary to have much machinery of various sorts and large size, and a large pay roll, which continues alike through times of cetacean plenty or scarcity. Hence it is necessary that each whale be utilized to as complete a degree as possible, and in this the company is as successful as is the case with the proverbial slaughtered pig. And the work must be done expeditiously, before partial decomposition of the huge carcass has lowered the quality of blubber and meat. Hence, in about three hours after being landed the whale has disappeared to the last shred within vats and retorts.

The prepared products from one whale of average large size may be worth as much as \$2,000 and from this it may be seen that our whale supply is a matter of economic importance, and not merely of aesthetic concern to those with emotional tendencies. When whales have become sufficiently numerous in any district a whaling station is at once started and invariably this continues operations as long as whales are to be had in sufficient numbers to offer a margin of profit, after which the station is abandoned. If whales existed in paying quantities along any of the remainder of our coasts, there would be whaling stations there for their capture. In some few cases the whales will regain a part of their former numerical status, but in others they can never recover, and in all cases the rarer species will have been reduced to the point of grave danger. Thus the gray whale was believed by scientists to be practically extinct on the west coast of the United States, but the whalers say there are a very few left, and by great good luck we were at Trinidad during the six years of its existence. A number of extremely interesting observations, chiefly of an anatomical character, were made of this specimen, as well as of the commoner species, but it was saddening to realize that this might possibly be the last such opportunity afforded a mammalogist in the United States.

Few naturalists are now so situated as to be able to observe whales at first hand and it is felt that much of value will result from our

stay at Trinidad, our work having been facilitated in innumerable ways by the cordial cooperation of the officials of the California Sea Products Company.

#### EXPLORATIONS IN SIAM

Many years ago the Smithsonian Institution received from the National Institute, in Washington, a collection of about 100 specimens of birds from Prince Momfanoi (also called Chawfanoi) of Siam, half-brother of the King of that period, and "in truth, rightful heir to the throne" according to Dr. Ruschenberger (*Voyage around the World*, 1838). He was reported to be an enlightened man, who loved pets, had many live animals and birds, and had a museum in which were many stuffed birds and animals, set up by himself. Due to faulty preservation, a large proportion of the specimens received from Prince Momfanoi have long ago been destroyed through the ravages of insects, but the record of his gift remains.

From 1896 to 1899, Dr. W. L. Abbott, the veteran explorer, spent several months of each year working through the province of Trang, in the peninsular part of Siam, giving the Institution its second collection of birds from that country. Later, in 1914-1916, he supported Mr. Cecil Boden Kloss in the latter's exploration of parts of southeastern Siam and the Franco-Siamese boundary, which resulted in over 130 additional birds. In 1916 and 1918, Mr. Kloss visited the southwestern and other parts of the country, contributing 496 more specimens. In 1924, over 200 birds were received from Dr. Abbott, collected by J. H. Chambai and K. G. Gairdner; these were from south and central Siam. In the same year, Dr. Hugh M. Smith, while engaged in fisheries investigations for the Siamese government, obtained a few specimens in the southern part of the country, especially from the island of Koh Chang, in the Gulf of Siam, including a new species of small "timaline" bird, *Pellorneum smithi*.

During the years 1925 and 1926, Dr. Smith continued his natural history work, with the aid of a Dyak collector, and has sent to the Smithsonian Institution 968 birds from southern and central Siam. In addition to birds, he has forwarded about 70 skins of mammals, several hundred mollusks, crustaceans, fishes, reptiles, and ethnological material. Dr. Paul Bartsch, curator of mollusks, says, "Dr. Hugh M. Smith's work in Siam has enabled him to make distinct contributions in the field of mollusks. I feel sure that quite a few new species and races will eventually be described when this material is worked over with a fine-tooth comb. All of it fills a decided

gap in the collection, for prior to Dr. Smith's enterprise few mollusks from that region were found in our collection. The sendings in 1924 amounted to almost 2,000 specimens, while during the present year over a thousand specimens have been received, among them two new species of shipworms as well as other novelties not yet fully determined."

Count Nils Gyldenstolpe, a Swedish naturalist, has recently published a list of the birds of Siam, enumerating about 730 species and subspecies, of which 113 are water birds and waders, the remainder land birds. The list is confessedly only an incomplete one, for much additional ornithological work must be done before the birds of Siam may be regarded as well known.

Among the birds sent in by Dr. Smith is a specimen of the Openbill or "Shell ibis" (*Anastomus oscitans*), a remarkable species of stork, peculiar for the character of the bill, which is said to be "the result of wear, caused by the shells of the mollusca, on which the bird feeds." In the young bird the lines of the bill are straight, and show no gaping space as in the adult. Several species of fruit pigeons are represented in the collection, a group of birds usually of bright colors, green predominating in many of the species. They are native to the Eastern Hemisphere, a few species in Africa, an increasing number in southern Asia, with the majority in the Dutch East Indies and Polynesia. About 13 species have been recorded from Siam, of which five are restricted to the northern parts of that country.

#### BREEDING EXPERIMENTS WITH CERIONS

Dr. Paul Bartsch, curator of mollusks, U. S. National Museum, spent the period from August 10 to August 21 at the Tortugas and from August 21 to August 24 examining the Cerion colonies planted on keys between the Tortugas and Miami. An examination of the small island colonies yield the following results:

Island 1. Twenty-five *Cerion incanum* and 25 of a new species of *Cerion* with spiral sculpture were planted here 2 years ago. Last year, 22 of the *incanum* were found dead; this year no additional specimens of this species were noted. Of the *Cerion* new species, 18 were dead last year and 1 dead and 2 living this year, which accounts for 21 out of 25 of these specimens. The missing individuals may be buried in the sand, dead or alive, or they may have been carried away by some agency as, for example, the little Sparrow Hawk, which occasionally indulges in that pastime. In this island were

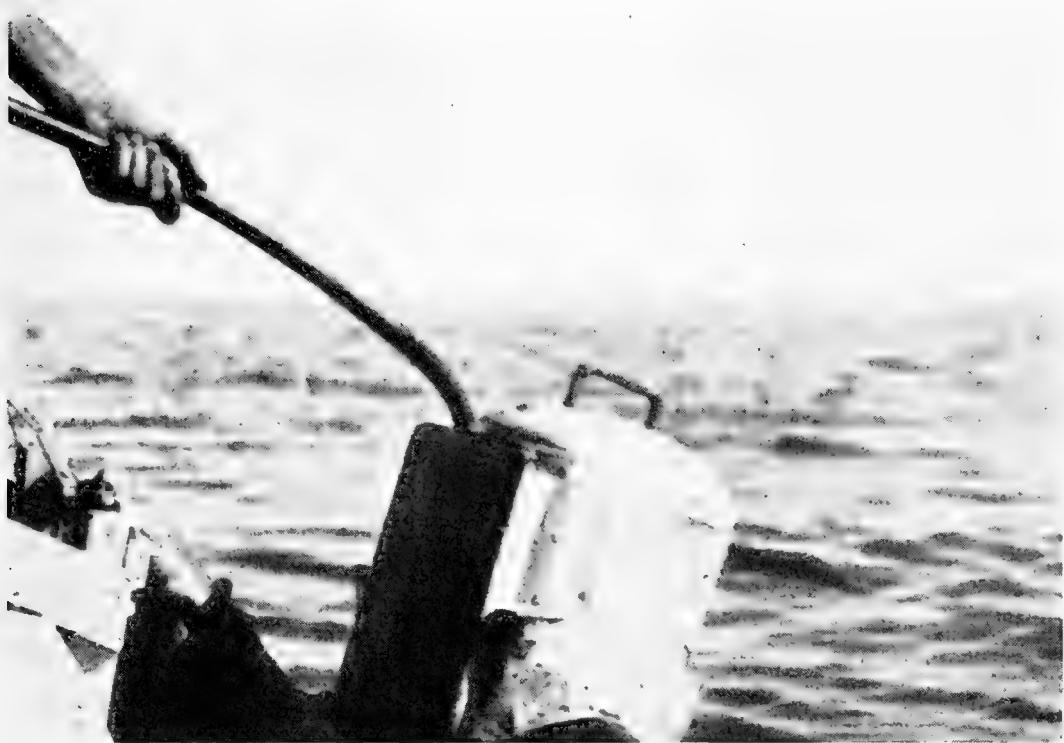


FIG. 88.—Dr. Bartsch going down with diving helmet.



FIG. 89.—Dr. Bartsch coming up with the diving helmet just removed.  
(Enlargement from movie film.)

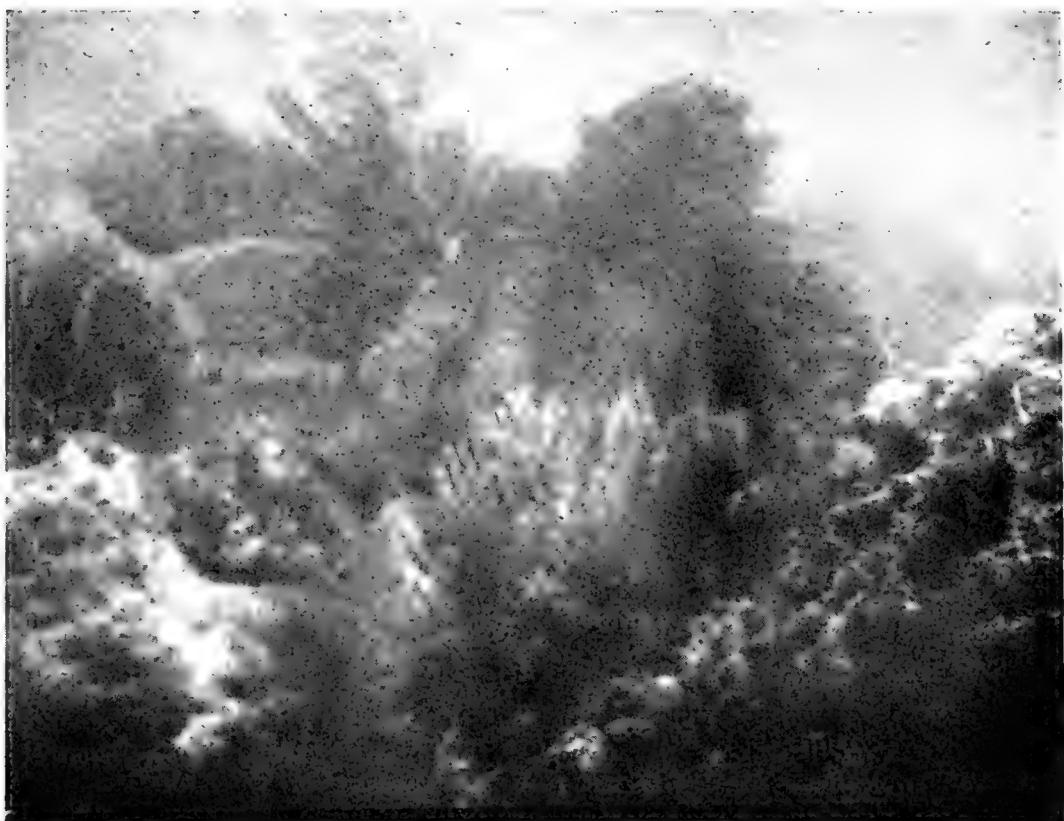


FIG. 90.—A general undersea view showing a field of Gorgonians.  
(Enlargement from movie film.)



FIG. 91.—Gorgonians and Goat fishes. (Enlargement from movie film.)

also found a number of quite young shells, too young to determine their relationship at this time. Dr. Bartsch therefore refrained from seriously disturbing the sand for fear of exposing these small creatures to unfavorable stresses.

Island 2. In this were planted, 2 years ago, 25 *Cerion incanum* and 25 *Cerion chrysalis*. Last year 11 of the *Cerion incanum* were found dead and this year 4 dead and 1 living, accounting for 16 of the planted specimens. Of the *Cerion chrysalis*, 12 were found dead last year; to this were added 4 this year and 2 living individuals, which accounts for 18 of the 25 planted. Here, too, small young were in evidence.

Island 3. On this island were planted, 2 years ago, 25 *Cerion incanum* and 25 *Cerion mummia*. Last year 16 dead of *Cerion incanum* and this year 2 dead and 5 living were recovered. Of *Cerion mummia* 17 were found dead last year and 1 this year, and 1 living. All but 2 of the *Cerion incanum* are therefore accounted for in this island. Here, too, some young were present, and the interesting observation was made of finding a specimen of *Cerion incanum* mating with a *Cerion mummia*.

Island 4. Here were planted, 2 years ago, 25 *Cerion incanum* and 25 *Cerion tridentatum*. Of these, 13 *Cerion incanum* were found dead last year and 3 this year, and 2 living. Of the *Cerion tridentatum*, 10 were found dead last year and 3 this year, and 10 were living. No young were observed.

In the 8 small islands, all the adults seem to have died, but small young are present in some, which makes it wise to leave them undisturbed for another year as these may prove to be the desired hybrids. However an additional marked specimen of *Cerion incanum* and *Cerion viaregis* were added on each island.

Last year some of the old wooden cages were cut down to mere 4-inch base boards which were partly buried and fastened securely to the ground. To the free edge of each, which projects some 3 inches above the ground, a narrow strip of monel wire was tacked, bending inward to prevent the escape of the mollusks.

In each of these cages a specimen of *Cerion incanum* and *Cerion viaregis* was placed. Upon examining these inclosures this year, most of the shells were found dead and many were crushed, the damage probably having been done by rats. Each of these 75 cages were restocked with a marked specimen of *Cerion incanum* and *Cerion viaregis*.



FIG. 92.—Yellow-Tail and Slippery Dicks, and Sea Urchins. (Enlargement from movie film.)



FIG. 93.—Hogfish. (Enlargement from movie film.)



FIG. 94.—A school of Gray Snappers. (Enlargement from movie film.)



FIG. 95.—A school of Grunts and Gray Snappers. (Enlargement from movie film.)

The two original colonies of Cerions, namely, *Cerion viaregis* and *Cerion casablancae*, are simply swarming in their respective places and gradually spreading over adjacent territory.

The colony of *Cerion uva* from Curaçoa is gradually passing out, but it was a surprise to find that the colony of *Cerion crassilabre*, which was in bad shape a year ago, was not at all on the verge of extinction, but yielded sufficient material to give complete measurements of all the characters of enough specimens to complete the hundred series of both the first and second generations of Florida-grown individuals. This again shows that it is not safe to estimate the strength of a colony merely from the appearance of material above the surface of the sand, for Cerions under certain conditions have a way of disappearing beneath the surface and thus hiding themselves from view.

The huge colony of Cerions, brought from the Island of San Salvador and planted on the east side of the laboratory, does not appear to have found the habitat a suitable one, for there is an endless number of dead strewn about the ground, but not a single living specimen was seen.

The colonies planted on the rampart of Fort Jefferson 2 years ago are holding their own.

On the way north, September 21, a stop was made at Boca Grande Key where it was found that the part of the key bearing the plantings was again burnt over, and the same fate has overtaken the colonies which had been planted on Man Key, Boy Key, Woman Key, and Girl Key.

On September 22 a visit to the two plantings in the grounds of the U. S. Bureau of Fisheries Station at Key West showed both colonies doing fairly well.

On September 22, the *Anton Dohrn* was left at Newfound Harbor Key, and a visit made to the keys containing Cerion colonies between Key West and Miami. The hybrid colony on Newfound Harbor Key was doing splendidly. The last hurricane had not seriously damaged it. Some additional variant specimens were taken to Washington for dissections. This colony, as well as experiences on other islands, shows plainly the desirability of placing colonies not on unoccupied keys but, if possible, to select ground for them near some house where the people will take an interest in the experiment and see that the ground is protected against fire.

Bahia Honda, where the colony of *Cerion casablancae* was placed in 1912, was next visited. The hurricane some years later had cut the ground, where the original colony was planted, to such an extent

that it was felt that it had been wiped out. Examination after the hurricane gave no indication of its survival, but this year's visit showed that it not only had survived, but was flourishing and spreading.

An examination of Duck Key, where a colony of *Cerion viaregis* had been planted in 1912, showed that the tall, dense grass and cactus, which had usurped the places of planting, still prevailed to such an extent that no specimens were visible.



FIG. 96.—Albino Noddy Tern, on Bird Key.

On September 23 Indian Key was visited and it was found that the colony of *Cerion casablancae*, which on our last visit seemed to be on the verge of extinction, was flourishing and doing well. There were enough specimens to warrant taking a series to Washington for measurement.

The colony of *Cerion viaregis*, planted on the adjacent Tea Table Key in 1912, failed to show a single specimen.

On September 25 a stop was made at Sands Key and Ragged Keys where plantings were made in 1912, but here, dredgings, fillings-in, human activity in general, and hurricanes have so overwhelmed the place that not a trace of any of these colonies was apparent. With the rapid spread of habitation in this neglected region of

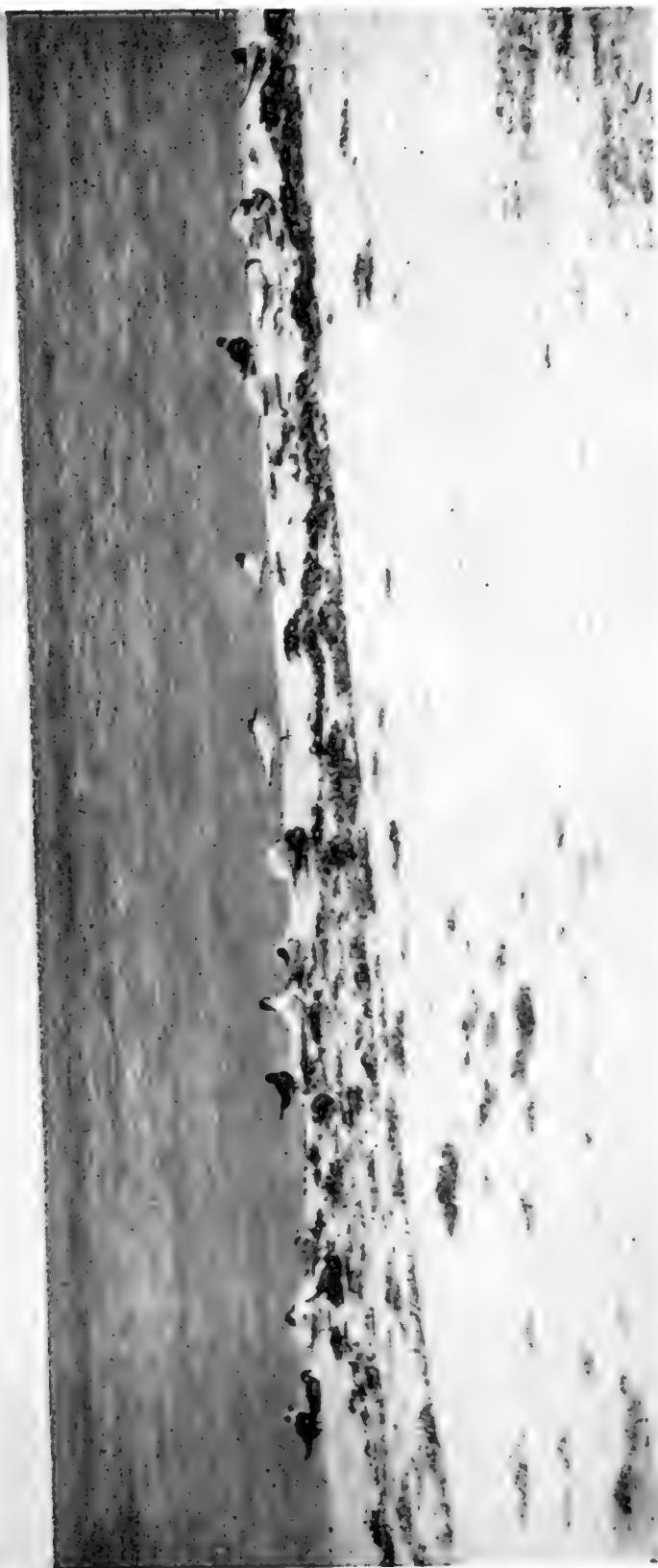


Fig. 97.—A group of Black and Least Terns on Loggerhead Key.

Florida it will be possible to secure the sympathy of interested people to make further plantings among these keys and to have them secure from harm.

During the trip northward from Key West to Miami stops were made at a number of places not before visited and collections of the native *Cerion incanum* were obtained.

At the Tortugas Dr. Bartsch exposed 2,400 feet of moving-picture film among the coral reefs undersea, securing a series of pictures showing faunal associations of marine organisms *in situ*.

As in former years, Dr. Bartsch kept account of the birds observed at the Tortugas from day to day, as well as on the other keys visited.

#### STUDY OF THE CRUSTACEANS OF SOUTH AMERICA

As noted in the Smithsonian Exploration Pamphlet for 1925,<sup>1</sup> Dr. Waldo L. Schmitt, curator of the division of marine invertebrates, U. S. National Museum, the holder of the Walter Rathbone Bacon Travelling Scholarship, visited South America for the purpose of studying the crustacean fauna of the continent. His activities from August 1 until November 2, 1925, when he arrived at Itajahy, Brazil, were reported on last year. After a short sojourn at that port, he proceeded to Florianopolis, Brazil, where he made valuable collections. He next visited Montevideo, Uruguay, arriving November 10. Here Dr. Schmitt met Dr. Florentino Felippone, a correspondent of the U. S. National Museum, who showed him every courtesy and aided his work in many ways. Here also, through the assistance of Señor Tremolaras, arrangements were made for obtaining rheas for the National Zoological Park at Washington. He arrived at Buenos Aires, Argentina, December 14 and procured from the Buenos Aires Museum the loan of a valuable collection of crustacea. At this point it was found impracticable to proceed to Punta Arenas, Chile, as he had planned. On January 19 he returned to Santos, Brazil, and went by train to São Paulo where he visited the Instituto Butantan and obtained a collection of living Brazilian reptiles. On January 21 he embarked at Rio de Janeiro for New York, where he arrived February 1.

This year Dr. Schmitt is devoting his studies chiefly to the west coast. He left New York August 19, arriving at Cristobal, at the Caribbean entrance to the Panama Canal, August 25. At Panama Dr. Schmitt had the pleasure of meeting Mr. James Zetek, resident

<sup>1</sup> Smithsonian Misc. Coll., Vol. 78, No. 1, pp. 40-44.

custodian of the laboratory at Barro Colorado Island, who in the past has sent many valuable specimens to the National Museum. The ship left Balboa on August 26, and reached Salaverry, Peru, August 30. As hotel accommodations were not to be had there, Dr. Schmitt was obliged to move a short distance up the coast to Trujillo, where Mr. Sears, the agent for the Grace Lines, generously offered to take him into his own residence. The offer was accepted, and during his stay at Trujillo Dr. Schmitt enjoyed the most generous hospitality of a delightful private home. In regard to the climate he remarks, "You will not believe it, but it is like a cold California night. I am sitting here with my hat and overcoat on so as to keep warm enough to write. What will working in the water be like? I'm told the Humboldt current off the coast of Peru is way out of its course; that while it usually turns out to sea off Talara, it is now running way up into the Gulf of Panama; that it affects (kills) the supply of fish and has driven the pelicans up off the California coast in the vicinity of the Catalina Islands where as it is said here, they were never known to occur before. The heavier rains resulting from the shift of the Humboldt current have washed out a lot of land and killed off much of the marine life. The hotel at Salaverry was washed half full of sand by the last wet season's rains, thus the lack of accommodations."

Dr. Schmitt left Salaverry September 1 for Guayaquil, where he arrived September 4. He states that there is much more English spoken on this coast of South America than upon the east coast where he visited last year, and that there is a great deal of American machinery used everywhere. At three places along the route while the boat stopped to take on cargoes of sugar, he succeeded by means of his bottom sampler in getting mud samples. Guayaquil has but one fairly paved street, the main one running from the water front to the main Plaza. Dr. Schmitt finds that great quantities of shrimps and two species of crabs are sold in the markets of Guayaquil. A species of *Callinectes* much like our blue crab of the Chesapeake, and a red *Ucides*, a land crab, appear to be the only two species used as food. He says, "Oysters are very plentiful, but with all the hundreds of thousands that must have been shucked by the men with whom we had converse, none had ever seen a crab in an oyster."

After a week's unavoidable delay, Dr. Schmitt finally reached Santa Elena, which is on the coast directly west of Guayaquil. Collecting here was excellent, but dredging was impossible as the only two motor boats of the place were laid up, and the only other avail-

able boats were the native dugouts. A number of species of crabs and shrimps were taken here, some of which Dr. Schmitt believes will prove to be new. A most interesting assemblage or association of marine animals was found to be inhabiting old worm galleries. Dr. Schmitt thought the coast around Santa Elena, if he could have given the time to it, would probably have proved to support the richest fauna of all the regions that he had visited in the past two years, but his time being limited, he was obliged to return to Guayaquil on September 19. He says, "We started early Sunday morning and between auto and train were under way from 6 a. m. to 7 p. m.



FIG. 98.—Paita, Peru, showing the rocky nature of the coast.

just covering 90 miles of country. It took us two hours to make the last 20 miles." Dr. Schmitt had hoped to visit Quito, but owing to the great loss of time in getting to and from Santa Elena he found it impossible. While at Guayaquil, Dr. Schmitt did some excellent collecting in the so-called Salada, an arm of the ocean which reaches up behind the city. There the black flies were a terrible torment, and he suffered severely from their attacks, but to offset in a measure this inconvenience he procured a species of *Upogebia*, the little shrimp that bores holes in rocks. This genus of shrimps had not until then been found on the west coast of South America. Here also were taken some pinnotherid crabs which are symbiotic in the shells of mollusks.

He left Guayaquil October 3 and arrived at Paita, Peru, late the same day. He says, "Here we drop into a holiday in memory of

San Francisco de Assisi. The holiday alone would not keep me out of work, but the Custom House was open only to let our stuff in. We arrived on the fourth, and the fiesta of San Francisco lasted two days, the 4th and 5th. And today the fisherman, families, etc., are resting up." Collecting proved to be very good here, and much fine material was procured from a point of rock jutting out into the water, and from a fine reef well north of Paita.

Dr. Schmitt left Paita October 15 and arrived at Salaverry October 17. Here the coast is just a bold surf-beaten headland with huge immovable boulders. At low tide the collecting was good, and the



FIG. 99.—Chorillos, a suburb of Lima, Peru, showing the cliffs at the water's edge which are in some places 200 feet high.

exposed beach yielded many invertebrates. Here also worm tubes were found to contain interesting and valuable specimens of crustacea and other forms. He found here a genus of shrimps not before reported from the Peruvian coast, and also procured a fine series of fresh-water shrimps.

On October 25 he left Salaverry, Peru, and reached Callao early the next morning. The Ambassador, Mr. Poindexter, procured him a pass to San Lorenzo Island, the naval base in Callao Bay. He made several collecting trips to the island and secured many amphipods and some remarkable porcellanid crabs, which live on the under side of a sea urchin. The fine material obtained here shows how much zoological work is yet to be done on this coast.

When last heard from, Dr. Schmitt was on his way to Valparaiso, Chile, where he expected to arrive on the 18th of November. From there he will proceed to Buenos Aires and then to his destination, Punta Arenas, Chile. Several cases of specimens have already arrived at the Museum.

#### INVESTIGATION OF THE AMPHIPODA OF THE TORTUGAS

Mr. Clarence R. Shoemaker, assistant curator of marine invertebrates, U. S. National Museum, spent the period from July 13 to



FIG. 100.—Fort Jefferson, Garden Key. Many amphipods and isopods were obtained from the rich growth of algae, hydroids and ascidians upon the wall of the old moat. (Photograph by Shoemaker.)

August 20, 1926, at the Carnegie Marine Laboratory, Dry Tortugas, investigating the Amphipoda of the keys. While studying the collections sent to the Museum by former investigators at the Laboratory, so many new and interesting forms were observed that it was thought advisable to spend some time at the Laboratory making as thorough a survey as possible of the amphipod fauna.

The waters surrounding most of the principal keys, and also the water of the moat at Fort Jefferson, were exhaustively examined. Pelagic species were scarce, but algae and old coral-rocks yielded many forms and almost countless numbers of individuals. Many

of the species, as is usually the case in tropical waters, are very small, so that even sorting the specimens into the different kinds proves to be a long and somewhat tedious process, but enough has already been accomplished to show that many additional new forms have been discovered, and that the range of many species has been greatly extended. Some of the species were found to be very vividly and beautifully colored, while the coloration of others seemed to be of a protective nature, exactly matching their surroundings.

In order to escape their principal enemy, the fish, amphipods avail



FIG. 101.—Bush Key Reef. The abundant marine algae at the edge of this reef afford protection to innumerable amphipods and isopods. (Photograph by Shoemaker.)

themselves of the shelter of old coral-rocks which have been tunneled and bored by other marine organisms. The cavities in sponges and the interstices of algae also afford them the necessary protection. Each of these locations yielded many specimens which when finally identified will, with those already known to occur, probably be an almost complete list of the species inhabiting the waters of the Tortugas.

#### ENTOMOLOGICAL TRIP TO GUATEMALA

Dr. J. M. Aldrich, associate curator, division of insects, U. S. National Museum, went to Guatemala for the purpose of increasing



FIG. 103.—Maya monument near Quirigua,  
Guatemala.



FIG. 102.—Native hut on sugar plantation,  
Guatemala.

the Museum collection of tropical muscoid flies, while at the same time collecting such other insects as could be obtained. He left Washington on the last day of March for New Orleans, where he took the United Fruit Company's steamship for Puerto Barrios, arriving there April 7, and continuing by train to Guatemala City the same day.

He made his headquarters in that city for about a month, taking trips to the Mexican border at Ayutla, to the Pacific Coast at San José, to Antigua, to the interior lowland at Quirigua, and some nearer places. In the immediate vicinity at Guatemala City the collecting was poor in April, as it was in the latter part of the dry season.



FIG. 104.—Military headquarters on plaza in Coban, Guatemala.

Numerous courtesies were extended to Dr. Aldrich by the Agricultural Department of Guatemala, especially by the Director-General, Mr. J. G. Salas. The Department was at the time very much concerned with an outbreak of the migratory locust and had reared some parasites, which Dr. Aldrich was able to identify. This locust is a great pest of agriculture from Southern Mexico to Argentina, and there was much interest in its parasites. These, it happens, belong to a group of flies which Dr. Aldrich has studied extensively.

About May first the Minister of Agriculture proposed that Dr. Aldrich give up his plans for collecting in the western part of the country and join a government party in a trip to Cobán for the purpose of making investigations on the locusts and their parasites and meeting a similar investigating party coming over from Mexico. As it seemed possible that some important information regarding



FIG. 105.—Morazan, Guatemala. Approaching the plaza.



FIG. 106.—Scene in market, Guatemala City.

the parasites might be obtained, Dr. Aldrich acceded to this request, and made a journey on muleback of about 100 miles to the interior town of Coban, where he remained 10 days. Unfortunately he was prevented by illness from doing as much work as anticipated, although continuing to collect flies in the vicinity of the town. The Mexican party was not heard from; and as soon as able Dr. Aldrich returned to the Atlantic Coast by way of the Polochic River, coming out at Livingston. He reached Washington June 6.

While the dry weather and change of plans interfered greatly with the expected results of the trip, a considerable number of specimens were collected and some discoveries of importance were made on grasshopper parasites.

The cordial relations which were established with the Guatemala Department of Agriculture, The International Health Board, the United Fruit Company, and with individuals, will no doubt be of value in future work.

#### COLLECTING AND REARING FRUIT FLIES IN PANAMA

On March 6, 1926, Mr. Chas. T. Greene, assistant custodian of diptera, U. S. National Museum, sailed from New York for Cristobal (Colon) Panama, on the Steamer Ancon. His primary object was to collect and rear the fruit flies of the genus *Anastrepha* in order to associate their larvae and pupae with the adults and to get all the information possible on their immature stages, as well as to rear any other flies which he might deem of economic importance. This work was carried on at the request of the Federal Horticultural Board. Ancon, Canal Zone, located at the Pacific end of the canal, was selected as Mr. Greene's headquarters because the United States government has a well equipped laboratory or experiment station there. He remained in Panama until May 27, sailing on that day for New York.

During his trip Mr. Greene visited several places on the Pacific and Atlantic coast of Panama, searching for fruit flies, and collected at several places along the Panama railroad which follows the canal across the Isthmus. All of the localities visited yielded valuable information on the fruit flies.

The three species of *Anastrepha* of economic importance were reared from native fruits and their immature stages are associated. The results will be published in the near future. Numerous other species of flies were reared and notes made on their immature stages in connection with this work. A large number of other species of

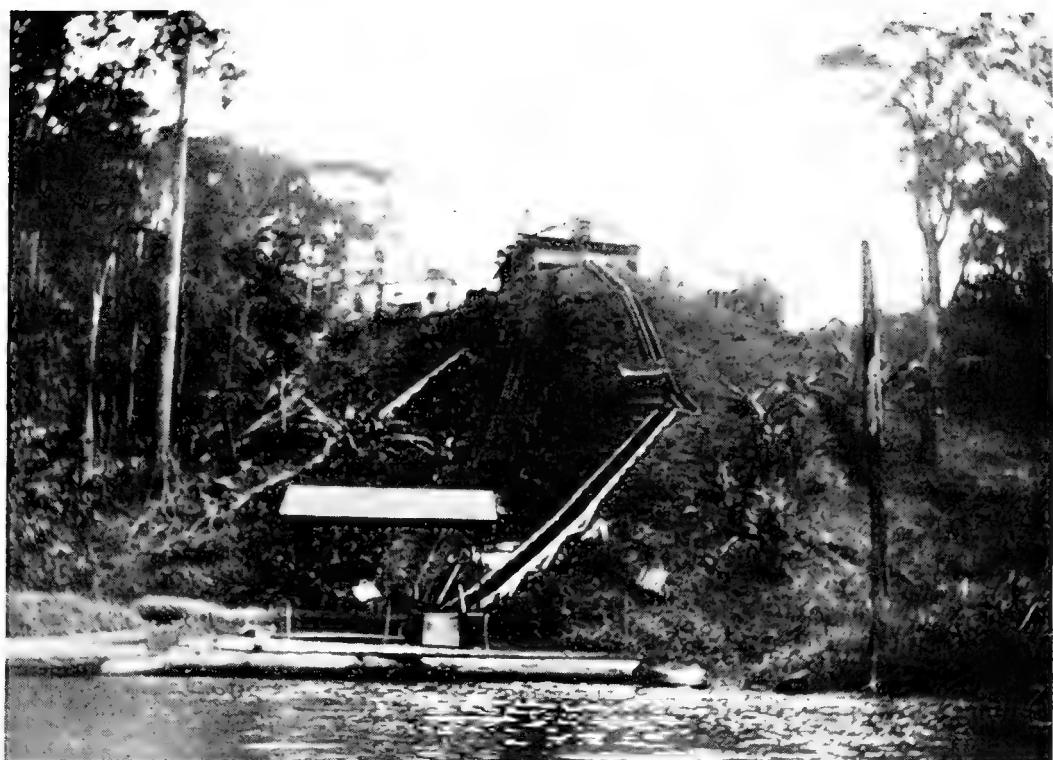


FIG. 107.—Boat landing and laboratory at Barro Colorado Island.



FIG. 108.—Entrance to one of the large trails on the island.

diptera were collected and many are new to our National Collection. Some insects of the other orders also were captured and brought back to the Museum.

One of the most interesting places which Mr. Greene visited in Panama was Barro Colorado Island. This large island of about six square miles is in the Panama Canal and located about half-way between the Atlantic and Pacific Oceans. Animal and bird life on this island is protected, and the abundant insect life makes it



FIG. 109.—Central Avenue, main business street in Panama City.

almost a paradise for the collector. Mr. Greene caught a large number of interesting species during his several visits to this island.

There is a large well-equipped laboratory on the island with facilities for studying and for lodging. Several large trails lead in various directions from the laboratory, but otherwise the jungle is undisturbed.

#### EXPLORING FOR FERNS IN THE BLUE MOUNTAINS OF JAMAICA

With the object of obtaining additional material needed in preparing a descriptive account of the fern flora of Jamaica, Dr. William R. Maxon, associate curator of plants in the U. S. National Museum, spent the months of June and July, 1926, in botanical exploration

in that island, paying particular attention to certain areas in the difficult Blue Mountain region, which rises to nearly 7,500 feet.

The ferns of Jamaica were among the first to be described from the New World, but in many instances the names originally given them came later to be applied loosely to related but distinct kinds from other regions, with much resulting confusion. To afford a proper basis for studying the diverse fern floras of tropical America as a whole, it thus becomes of prime importance to know thoroughly that of Jamaica, an end that can be attained, naturally, only with the aid of adequate material.

Of the 500 species of ferns and fern allies described or known from Jamaica nearly all are found in recent large collections brought to American herbaria from that island; yet there are a few collected by Sir Hans Sloane in the latter part of the seventeenth century, and by Swartz about a hundred years later, that still are known only from the original specimens preserved in European museums. Present field-work is concerned therefore in the re-discovery of these "lost" species and of other very rare ones described more recently, but equally also in the discovery of new kinds, and in assembling data as to the distribution, characteristic habitats, habits of growth, and inter-relationship of those other species that are comparatively well known.

The equable temperatures and surpassing beauty of the Blue Mountains are proverbial. What is not appreciated by the traveler or the novice in botanical collecting is that the absence of springs and streams above 5,000 feet, the almost complete lack of trails and habitations, the steep, often precipitous character of the forested rocky inclines, and extremely fickle weather conditions make exploration difficult and laboriously slow. Approach must be through the drier coffee-producing regions on the south side of the range, except for two trails that cross at either end, nearly 25 miles apart; the wet northern slopes, from 1,500 feet to the top of the higher peaks, present an unbroken forest which can hardly be easier of penetration today than at the time of discovery.

It happens thus that our knowledge of the high mountain fern flora—which invariably in tropical regions is more luxuriant and diverse than that found at low elevations—is based mainly upon material collected on several peaks and in a few high passes near the former botanical station at Cinchona (5,000 feet) and on Blue Mountain Peak itself. The extremely rugged eastern end of the range and almost the whole heavily wooded north slope, with its



FIG. 110.—Looking westward from Blue Mountain Peak. The dense low forest is characteristic of the high peaks, several of which are shown in the background; Mossman's lies at the left. (Photograph by Duncan S. Johnson.)

deep, wet, hothouse valleys, have scarcely been touched; and this notwithstanding the work done by a host of collectors.

Accordingly, except for a few days of collecting in the denuded Port Royal Mountains, the region of Mount Diablo, the famous Fern Gully, and several localities reached readily from Kingston, effort was centered by Dr. Maxon at two points in the Blue Mountain range: Cuna Cuna, and the high peaks east and west of Portland Gap.

The Cuna Cuna region, which takes its name from a low gap (about 2,400 feet), lies at the eastern end of the Blue Mountain range



FIG. III.—The fern collection about to leave House Hill, at the edge of the little-known Cuna Cuna region, facetiously dubbed "Back of Beyond."

and is traversed by a passable trail, upon which, however, there is no shelter. By good fortune it was possible to establish headquarters at House Hill, an estate lying southwest of the Gap at about 1,500 feet, in the lee of the range; and from this point many trips were taken to the Gap itself and to several of the neighboring peaks at 3,000 to 3,500 feet elevation—Gossamer Peak, Stone Hole Bump, Maccasucker Bump—all of them previously unexplored. The region is even wetter than the high peaks, an annual rainfall of 200 inches being by no means uncommon, and the luxuriance and variety of the fern flora, especially along the wet culminating crests and in the deep forested ravines, rich beyond all expectation, for so low an altitude. A most interesting feature here was the occurrence,



Fig. 112.—The main, heavily forested Blue Mountain range looking northeast from Cinchona. Mossman's Peak lies at the right. The bare patches in the foreground are newly cleared areas planted to coffee. (Photograph by Duncan S. Johnson.)

often in abundance, of a considerable number of ferns known previously only from the higher peaks to the westward at nearly twice the altitude. One day was given also to collecting in the isolated John Crow range, at a point opposite Mill Bank. The period of three weeks spent in exploring from House Hill was exceedingly productive, and thanks are gratefully tendered to the owner, Mr. C. E. Randall, and his family, for much cordial assistance, without which the work could scarcely have been carried out.

In the latter part of June Dr. Maxon joined a party of botanists at Abbey Green, a famous coffee property at about 4,000 feet, which



FIG. 113.—A "close-up interior" of tropical rain forest, Portland Gap. The ferns shown (*Elaphoglossum*) have simple stiff leaves, in strong contrast to the more usual lacy kinds.

had been leased by Prof. Duncan S. Johnson, of The Johns Hopkins University, and from this point, which lies 1,500 feet below Portland Gap, carried out intensive exploration of the higher peaks and ridges. Of especial interest was the ascent of Mossman's Peak (about 6,400 feet), lying just west of Portland Gap and hitherto unexplored, and the collection of large series of specimens upon the eastern and southwestern slopes of the mountain and at a high pass to the westward, known locally as "Main Ridge Gap." This whole upper region is densely forested and extremely humid. Fortunately a comparative drought prevailed at the time, allowing almost continuous work, and many rare and little known ferns were collected in quantity. In a deep pocket on the northeastern slope of Mossman's, filmy ferns



FIG. 114.—An early morning view of the coffee-producing region south of Portland Gap, with the steep denuded slopes of the Port Royal Mountains in the distance, southwest. (Photograph by Duncan S. Johnson.)



FIG. 115.—Entrance to a deep forest ravine in the higher Blue Mountains; the tree ferns are characteristic. (Photograph by Duncan S. Johnson.)

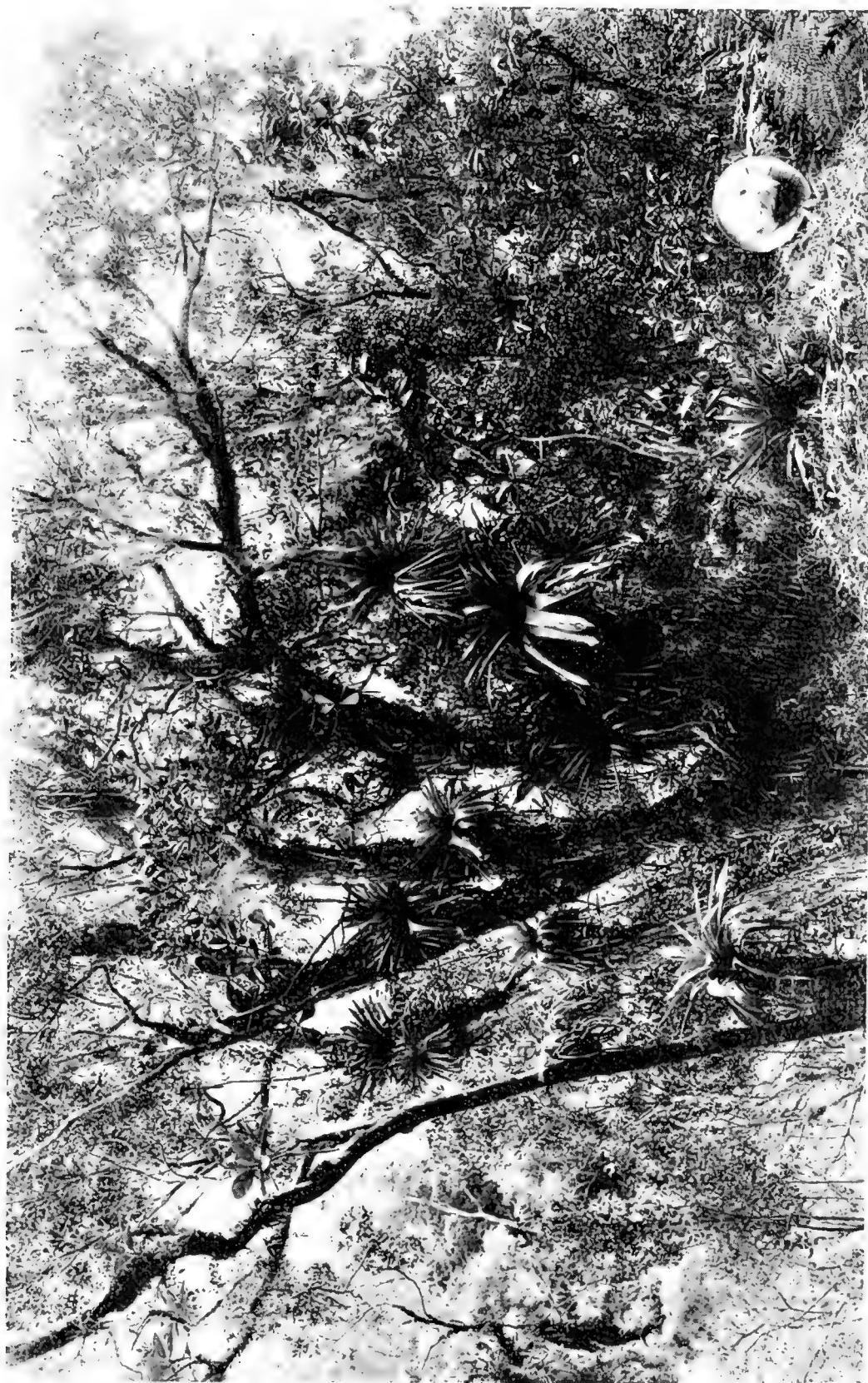


FIG. 116.—Dense epiphytic growth, chiefly bromeliads, ferns, and orchids, in wet forest near More's Gap, Blue Mountains of Jamaica. (Photograph by Duncan S. Johnson.)

(Hymenophyllaceae) were found in extraordinary abundance not elsewhere equaled.

To the east of Portland Gap similar exploration was carried out all the way along the trail to Blue Mountain Peak, the most extended trip being one of three days to the Peak itself (7,428 feet) and the



FIG. 117.—One of the rare tree ferns (*Cyathea Harrisii*), known only from the summit of Blue Mountain Peak. (Photograph by Alexander F. Skutch.)

deep forest sink between that and Sugarloaf Peak. Here a number of locally endemic ferns were collected, and observations made that will be of decided value in future exploration of the heavily forested northern slopes. At the Peak the panorama in all directions unfolds superbly, and one better realizes from the extremely broken topography why progress in exploration has been so slow. From this great height the sea, to north and south, lies only 12 or 13 miles away.



FIG. 118.—A filmy fern (*Hymenophyllum sericum*), common in the higher Blue Mountains. The tawny-gray woolly fronds, about a foot long, hang limply in masses from tree bases in forest openings. (Photograph by Duncan S. Johnson.)

The present field-work was made possible through the allotment of a grant by the American Association for the Advancement of Science, a contribution from the New York Botanical Garden, and the hearty cooperation of the United Fruit Company. In all, about 15,000 botanical specimens were collected, representing 2,050 collecting numbers, and in addition a few other miscellaneous natural history specimens. The fern material will assist greatly in the projected manuscript, which is planned for publication by the British Museum. It is to be hoped that means will be found for continuing the Jamaican exploration, which, in spite of work already done, offers as fascinating an opportunity of botanical field-work as may be imagined.

#### BOTANICAL FIELD-WORK IN PANAMA AND COSTA RICA

In November, 1925, Mr. Paul C. Standley, associate curator, division of plants, U. S. National Museum, spent three weeks in the Canal Zone, in continuance of his previous studies upon the flora, as a result of which there is now ready for publication an account of the plant life of the Isthmus. At the invitation of Dr. Thomas Barbour and Mr. James Zetek a week was spent on Barro Colorado Island in Gatún Lake at the Laboratory for Tropical Research directed by the National Research Council.

This island, about six square miles in extent and for the greater part heavily forested, was set aside four years ago as a reservation for the wild life of the Canal Zone. The heavy rainfall, sometimes as much as 30 inches per month, is favorable to a luxuriant plant growth. The huge trees, of great variety, are loaded with aroids, bromeliads, orchids, and other epiphytes, affording a rich field for the study of these groups. Mr. Standley collected about 500 specimens, and has prepared for publication a list of the plants known from the island, amounting to about 600 species.

From the first of December until early April Mr. Standley was engaged in botanical work in Costa Rica. Nearly a month was devoted to exploration of the region of Santa María de Dota in south-central Costa Rica. Santa María, situated at an elevation of 5,000 feet, is surrounded on all sides by high mountains. Originally they were covered with dense oak forest, but much of this has been cut to permit cultivation. Inasmuch as the region was practically unknown botanically, it yielded a rich harvest of new or otherwise interesting plants. Of special interest were several sphagnum bogs lying at a considerable elevation in the dense forest, in which grow



FIG. 120.—Scene in the wet lowlands of the Atlantic coast of Costa Rica. Heliconias ("wild bananas") are the most conspicuous herbaceous plants. (Photograph by H. Wimmer.)



FIG. 119.—An epiphytic cactus (*Epiphyllum ackermannii*) grown in Costa Rica. Flowers red. About half natural size. (Photograph by M. Gomez Miralles.)

many plants of South American types, nearly all of them new to Central America. New Year's eve was spent in a little cabin on the Cerro de las Vueltas, at an altitude of 10,000 feet. This mountain and the near-by Cerro de la Muerte (Mountain of Death) are unique in Central America, but are similar to many regions of great extent existing in the Andes of northern South America. The top of the Cerro de las Vueltas is an extensive tableland, partly forested but consisting chiefly of the type of grassland known in South America as paramo. In these paramos the vegetation consists principally of a velvety sward of fine grass one to two inches high, in which are



FIG. 121.—The volcano of Irazú, Costa Rica, in eruption. (Photograph by H. Wimmer.)

scattered many small plants which are essentially alpine, such as buttercups, violets, gentians, and other groups well represented in the mountains of the United States. Barberry bushes are common in some places, but the most remarkable plant is a giant dock (*Rumex*) 10 to 15 feet high. At this altitude the nights are very cold, owing to the combination of rain, fog, and wind. Ice a quarter of an inch thick forms frequently.

After leaving Santa María, a month was spent in company with Prof. Juvenal Valerio at Tilarán, in the Province of Guanacaste near the Nicaraguan frontier, a part of Costa Rica in which no plants had been collected previously. Tilarán lies at the foot of the cordillera bearing the same name. This range of mountains, one of the most reduced sections of the great backbone of the American continent,

is only 2,500 feet high, but since it is the continental divide, separating the wet Atlantic slope from the comparatively arid Pacific slope, it influences to a remarkable degree the local distribution of the plants. Ordinarily a locality of Pacific Central America with such slight elevation as Tilarán (1,800 feet) would have a hot dry climate; but the rain-laden clouds of the Atlantic plains force their way westward over the crest of the cordillera and reach as far as Tilarán before they are dissipated. At Tilarán it is nearly always raining or misting, even when the sun is shining brightly. This might



FIG. 122.—A characteristic view along one of the rivers of the Pacific coast of Costa Rica. (Photograph by M. Gomez Miralles.)

well be called the land of rainbows, for with clouds, mist, and sunshine it is seldom indeed that a rainbow is not to be seen.

The rain and wind make the climate a cool one, much like that of the central tableland of Costa Rica, whose elevation is twice as great. The flora also is similar, and we find here, at only 1,800 to 2,500 feet, many species that grow at altitudes of 5,000 to 8,000 feet in central Costa Rica.

Westward from Tilarán, beyond the influence of the clouds, the climate changes quickly, and at a distance of one or two miles the soil is parched during the winter months, and the heat excessive. Some collecting was done in this arid region, particularly near the gold mines at Líbano; nearly all the plants were different from those growing but a few miles away in the humid vicinity of Tilarán.

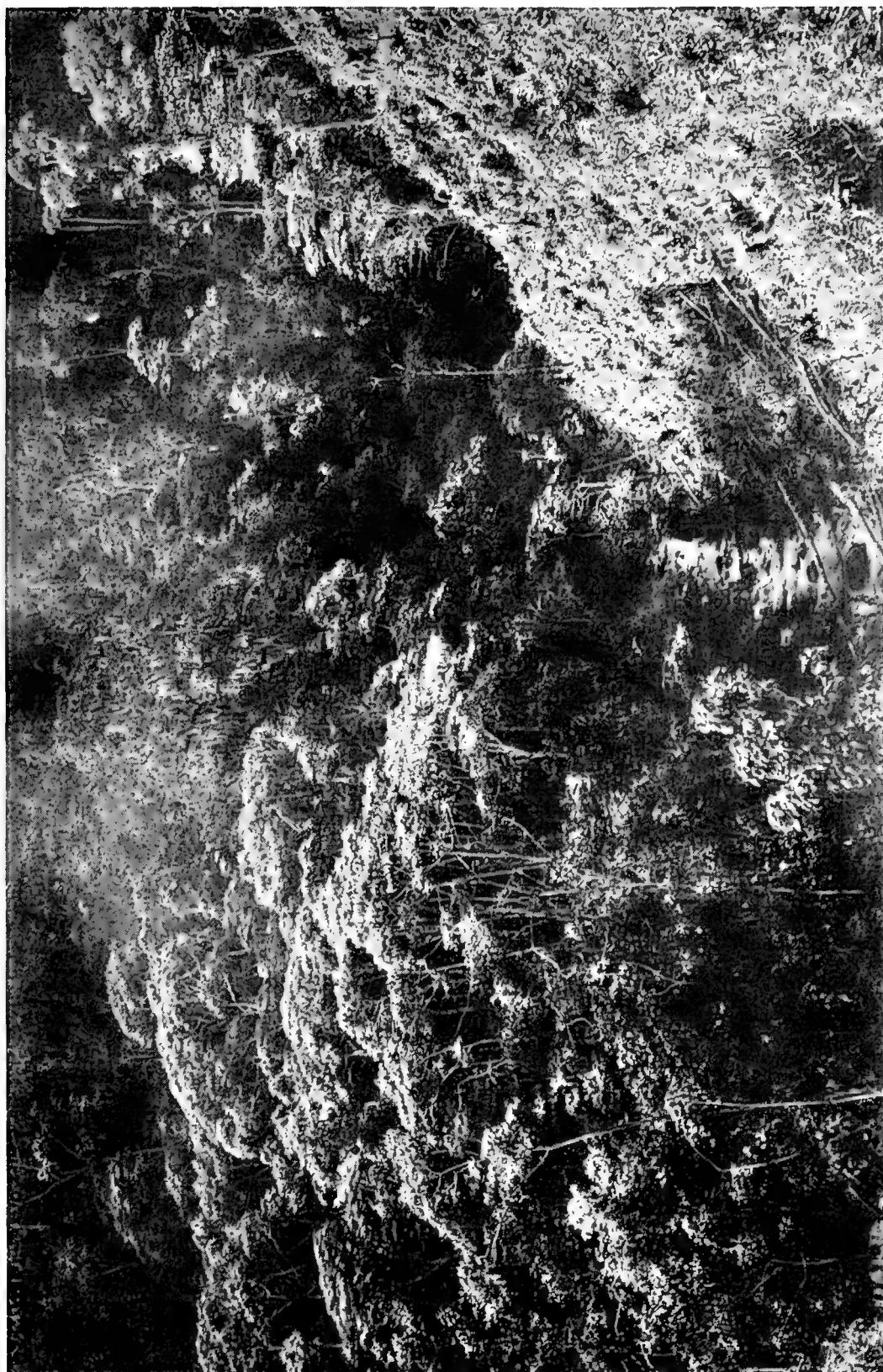


FIG. 123.—A typical view in the high mountains of central Costa Rica. Such forest is almost impenetrable. It is extremely rich in orchids and other plants. (Photograph by M. Gomez Miralles.)

A visit was made to Lake Arenal, across the cordillera on the Atlantic watershed. This lake, several miles long, is curious because of the fact that although the water is deep, its surface, at least during the drier winter months, is completely covered with vegetation. Viewed from one of the overhanging slopes one would never guess the presence of a body of water; it appears like a great savanna. At the end of the dry season the long grass covering the water becomes so dry that it may be set afire, thus affording the anomalous spectacle of a burning lake.



FIG. 124.—Páramo of the Cerro de las Vueltas, Costa Rica, at an elevation of 10,000 feet. The low clumps of vegetation are composed chiefly of a dwarf bamboo.

Field-work in Guanacaste revealed a large number of unusual plants, most of them, however, of technical rather than general interest. Much lumber is cut in this province, especially Spanish cedar (*Cedrela*) and guanacaste (*Enterolobium cyclocarpum*).

After leaving Guanacaste Mr. Standley had headquarters at San José for several weeks, making excursions from the capital and from Cartago to the surrounding high mountains, the richest region for plants in all Central America. In company with Prof. Rubén Torres an excursion was made to El Muñeco, south of Cartago, where there was discovered a new genus of trees closely related to the walnuts. Visits were made also to the lowlands of the Atlantic coast, which likewise have a varied and interesting flora.

In Costa Rica about 11,500 numbers of plants were collected, mostly phanerogams and ferns. As upon an earlier visit, much attention was directed to the collection of orchids, of which there were obtained 2,000 numbers, representing many species. In orchids no other part of the North American continent can compare with Costa Rica, and it is probably not excelled by any area of equal size in South America. About 1,000 species are known from Costa Rica. They range from the beautiful Cattleyas, with flowers equal to



FIG. 125.—Cerro de la Carpintera, near Tres Ríos, central Costa Rica. This mountain, now nearly denuded of its forest, is a classic locality for plants. Black howler monkeys still live in the patches of forest about the summit. (Photograph by M. Gomez Miralles.)

those of any hothouse orchid, to diminutive plants less than an inch high, whose blossoms are so minute that they must be studied under a strong lens.

Although Costa Rica is a small country, about as large as West Virginia, its flora is so extraordinarily varied that it is still imperfectly known, in spite of the fact that this has been the favorite collecting ground of a large number of botanists. It may seem strange that so small a country should not have been exhausted long ago, but to one familiar with Costa Rican geography the explanation is simple. Some of the provinces are so difficult of access that they are practically unknown even to the national government. The Republic

consists of a great mass of high mountains separated by steep-sided forested valleys, across which travel is nearly or quite impossible. Each valley and mountain possesses plant species all its own, hence many decades of exploration will be needed to exhaust this narrowly limited portion of the American tropics.

#### BOTANICAL EXPLORATION IN NORTHERN HAITI

Further field-work in Haiti was undertaken in November, 1925, by Mr. E. C. Leonard of the division of plants, U. S. National Museum. This work was fostered by Dr. W. L. Abbott, who in recent years has made a number of visits to Hispaniola, procuring much valuable material in several branches of natural history. The botanical specimens collected on these expeditions will be studied in the preparation of a flora of Hispaniola which is now under way.

Mr. Leonard commenced the winter's work in the vicinity of St. Michel, using as headquarters, with the permission of Mr. G. G. Burlingame, a house belonging to the United West Indies Corporation. With the invaluable assistance of Mr. F. C. Baker of the United States Department of Agriculture and Mr. E. J. Sieger, Manager of the Atalaye Plantation at St. Michel, it was possible to reach this region almost immediately after arrival at Port au Prince. The plantation is situated three miles east of St. Michel on the northern edge of a large savanna. During the winter season these plains are covered by a dense growth of a tall reddish-yellow grass, *Themeda quadrivalvis*, a native of Africa. It is of no value as a forage crop and is a serious menace to the plantation buildings, since fires started by Haitian farmers are constantly breaking out, and sweep rapidly over considerable areas. The principal crop raised on the plantation is tobacco; both cotton and sugar cane were tried but did not thrive in the black mucky clay of the savanna. A large number of Haitians, four hundred to three thousand, according to the season, are employed to assist with the crops, and, judging from the melodious cadences drifting in from the drying barns and fields, they find happiness as well as a congenial occupation.

The comparatively meager flora of the plains being soon exhausted, excursions were made to the neighboring mountains, the nearest of which, Mt. La Mine, lies a short distance to the north. Its arid, thicket-covered slopes produce many unusual plants. Of great interest in this region are several caves whose floors are covered by a thick layer of dust, débris, and fragmentary bones of an extinct fauna.

Other mountainous regions, more distant but accessible by horse-back, were Mt. La Cidre, Mt. Platanna, both southwest of St.



FIG. 126.—The northern slope of Mt. Platanna, showing the xerophytic nature of the vegetation.



FIG. 127.—Logwood ready for export, at Gonaives, Haiti.



FIG. 128.—Cactus plains east of Gros Morne, Haiti. The tall tree-like cactus is *Cephalocereus polygonus*, the lower columnar cactus at its base is *Lemaireocereus hystrix*, the prickly-pear in the foreground is *Opuntia antillana*.



FIG. 129.—One of the interior towers of the Citadel, northern Haiti. The Citadel was constructed by the emperor Christophe as a last retreat in case of a French attack.

Michel; Kalacroix, south of Atalaye Plantation; and St. Raphael, Dondon, and Marmelade, to the north. In the regions of Kalacroix and Marmelade the altitude was great enough to permit an abundant growth of ferns. In climate and character of vegetation the region of Kalacroix resembles in many respects that of Furcy, south of Port au Prince, visited by Dr. Abbott and Mr. Leonard several years before. In the rich valleys of both Kalacroix and Marmelade a great deal of coffee is grown. On the low mountains, between the occasional streams, one usually finds xerophilous grasses or thickets. In some places high cliffs and steep inclines of jagged lime rock, partially covered by tangled vegetation, are the predominating features.



FIG. 130.—Three donkey loads of guinea grass, Gros Morne, Haiti.

Dondon, a picturesque but somewhat inaccessible village, was next chosen as a collecting base. It is near the famous Citadel, that stupendous monument to futile effort erected with so much suffering and loss of life as a final stronghold of Christophe, once Emperor of the North.

Lumbering possibilities in Haiti have long been a subject for investigation. In the regions visited on this trip, timber did not seem plentiful enough for profit. The common tree of the higher regions is *Pinus occidentalis*; yet even it is scattered and of poor quality. On the plains and foothills mahogany is fairly abundant, the trees growing a considerable distance apart and owned, as a rule, by individual landholders. Logwood is found mostly in dense thickets. When the native finds a tree which has produced sufficient heartwood,

it is hewn into convenient lengths with a machete and the useless sapwood removed. The pieces of heartwood, which contain the dye, are then carried by head or on pack animals to the nearest clearing house, a shelter and rude balance erected by the roadside near or in some village, and there offered for sale.

On January 11, 1926, a new headquarters was established at Ennery, a village midway between St. Michel and Gonaives. The high mountains, rising abruptly on the south, resemble Mt. La Cidre and Mt. Platanna in both physiographic features and flora. On the north the Puilbureau or Cape road, winding upward in a continuous grade to an elevation of about 2,700 feet at the Pass, gave excellent oppor-



FIG. 131.—Market at Gros Morne, Haiti.

tunity for collecting the plants of the surrounding region. A dense thicket at the summit of the Pass, wet on its north slope and dry on its south, was especially rich in strange plants. The flora along Trois Rivières in the vicinity of Gros Morne, Pilate, and Plaisance, typical of most river vegetations throughout Haiti, was rather uninteresting, but the arid thickets between Gros Morne and Gonaives were extremely productive. These undoubtedly would furnish excellent botanical material if visited during the wet season.

After completing his field-work in the northern mountain region of Haiti, Mr. Leonard returned to Port au Prince, where several days were spent in packing specimens and in exploring the sources of Thor, Bizoton, and Mariani with Dr. Erik L. Ekman and Dr. H. D. Barker.

As a result of this expedition, a collection of 3,143 numbers (about 9,000 specimens) was procured, some of the species being new or rare ones not previously represented in the National Herbarium. In addition to the herbarium material, a number of land shells and insects were collected.

#### ARCHEOLOGICAL SURVEY OF THE FÊNG RIVER VALLEY, SOUTHERN SHANSI, CHINA<sup>1</sup>

In the latter part of December, 1925, Mr. Bishop suggested that I undertake some work in the field. The idea immediately occurred to me that before the spade be brought out, a preliminary survey should be made, so it was agreed that I should go to the southern part of Shansi and investigate the archeological possibilities along the Fêng River valley. The president of Tsing Hua College, Mr. Y. S. Tsao, kindly consented to cooperate. In his official capacity, he wrote to Governor Yen Hsi-san and successfully arranged for a permit for me to travel in southern Shansi. By a lucky coincidence also, the Geological Survey of China was on the point of sending Mr. P. L. Yüan to the same region for some field-work in geology. Mr. Yüan is a geologist of much experience, having travelled with Andersson in Kansu for two years and acquired a great deal of interest in prehistoric archeology. So we arranged to travel together. Our start was somewhat delayed, and it was not until February 5, 1926, that we left Peking, just a week before the Chinese New Year.

We arrived at T'ai-yüan on the 7th, and spent the whole day of February 8th in making calls and purchasing equipment. When I left Peking, I brought a large number of letters of introduction to the Governor and the various officers of influence in Shansi. Among these was one written by Mr. Liang Ch'i-ch'ao, now senior professor of the Tsing Hua Research Institute. Similar to many other letters, this one explained the purpose of my visit and the necessity of archeological work at present. The Governor, however, was too much occupied with matters of greater importance to see us; but we succeeded in having an interview with his secretary, who, on behalf of the Governor, promised us all the help we asked. These promises were well fulfilled later on.

<sup>1</sup> EDITOR'S NOTE: It is greatly to be regretted that, owing to lack of space available in the present publication, Dr. Li's excellent report, his illustrations and his interesting conclusions cannot be printed complete at this time. The following excerpts will, however, convey some idea, at least, of what he has accomplished by his preliminary search for archeological sites in southern Shansi.

We left T'ai-yüan on the 9th (fig. 132) and, traversing what is geologically a *loess* area, arrived at Chieh-hsiu three days later. I was much impressed by the extensive use of arches that is noticeable from T'ai-yüan southward. It seems to be quite a peculiarity of Shansi architecture. The first series I saw was along the Chêng-t'ai road. All the way, in houses that were built on a grand scale, as well as in the small inns, we found such arches employed. Buildings of this type are known as *yao-fang*. Native scholars told me that they are warm in winter and cool in summer, the style being derived from the early cave-dwellings. At present, we still find all the transitional



FIG. 132.—Our cart in front of a roadside temple.

stages from the *loess* cave type to the most complicated *yao-fang* represented in this region.

We took advantage of the Chinese New Year to see the city of Chieh-hsiu (fig. 133) and also made some measurements of the natives, who seem to be quite a heterogeneous group. I saw bearded men who can be compared with the average Armenian; I saw also men with 100 per cent yellow moustaches. One of the commonest physical types found in this district is the round headed individual with a long face, a disharmonious type according to physical anthropology. Such an occurrence did not, however, surprise me at all, as both dolichocephalic and brachycephalic people are found in this region. Very likely it is the mixing of these two fundamental types that has given rise to this disharmony.

On the 15th, we started our first trip to the mountain (Mien-shan) in the southwestern part of the district where some of the ancient

temples are found. Of two of these, especially, I made some detailed study. Both temples are Buddhist, one located at the foot of the mountain, the other near the top of one of the peaks. The one at the foot was first built in the T'ang Dynasty, but has been destroyed and rebuilt many times since, only the bell and drum-tower still retaining a pre-Yüan style. The temple on the peak, also, was first built in the T'ang period, but burned during the Ming. The stratification of the three different layers of culture is here plainly visible.



FIG. 133.—Chieh-hsiu: in front of  
Kuan-yao Miao.

One of the halls is located very near to a cave. The images that are worshipped at present are evidently of recent origin. Behind them is another row of images cast in iron; and finally in the cave I found two broken statues of stone, one with a head and one without, carved in simple, bold style, showing T'ang workmanship; but they are cast away in the rear of the cave and covered by dust. Perhaps, however, the most interesting thing we saw on this trip is a stone ox washed down by a mountain torrent some time ago, from where no one knows.

The river Fêng has its source at Kuan-ch'in-shan and flows in a straight southerly direction till it reaches Chiang Chou. From I-t'ang

southward, it cuts through the Ho-shan range for about 40 miles, after which it flows through the plain again. For a whole day, the 23d, after leaving Chieh-hsiu, we wormed our way through the Ho-shan along the river bed. About noon we reached Hsia-mén Ts'un which is one of the most beautiful villages I have seen in this province: the buildings of brick and limestone, the windows and doors arched.

From there southward, the mountains on both sides rise steeply, and in them are many limestone caves, some of which I explored, but found only traces of modern habitation. We stopped at Ho-chou, between which place and Lin-fêng Hsien there are many historic places; but as I did not intend to make any intensive study north of the latter, we passed this region rather hurriedly and reached Lin-fêng Hsien on the 25th.

Lin-fêng Hsien (or P'ing-yang Fu), a city that has aroused imagination in the past—the ancient capital of the Emperor Yao! What Chinese scholars are not acquainted with the list of virtues of this august monarch? Did he, however, also create a model city? Since he was, perhaps, the most self-denying emperor that the world has ever known, it would not be in harmony with his ethical principles if he should have used the national wealth to build luxurious palaces like those found in Troy and Knossos; but whatever he might have done in this respect, it is a fact that there is not even a tradition as to the exact location of his capital. The modern city of Lin-fêng Hsien is, like every other city in inland China, surrounded by machicolated walls. About a mile west of the city flows the Fêng River, and west of the Fêng is the famous Ku-i-shan where, according to the mythical tales of Chuang-tzû, resided many fairies.

We rested in Lin-fêng Hsien for a day, and on the morning of the 27th started to explore Ku-i-shan in the western part of the district, the place being popularly known as Hsien-tung (Fairies' Caves). A mile out of the western gate of the city, we crossed the Fêng River. Between the river and the foot of the mountain there is a series of *loess* terraces ascending higher and higher towards the mountain and dotted here and there by villages, some of which are merely a collection of cave dwellings. It took us more than half a day to reach the Northern Fairy Cave, where we were received by a monk—an old man, widely travelled, and evidently knowing something about his profession.

The temples in this mountain are for the Buddhists. They were originally built in the early part of the T'ang Dynasty; but in later periods they were repeatedly ruined and rebuilt. For some time in the

Mongol Dynasty, the Taoists took hold of them and converted them into Taoist temples. They were, however, soon restored to the Buddhists again.

The purpose of my own visit to this place was to explore the limestone caves; that of Mr. Yüan, to investigate the coal region still further west; so on the morning of the next day, each of us pursued his own task. The whole region here is limestone formation, divisible into many different strata. A deep ravine cuts the ground into two perpendicular walls, north and south, in which are several rows of caves, most of them inaccessible, while some are well fitted for early human habitation. Of these I visited five, in the hope of unearthing some paleolithic remains, but the search proved fruitless. We left the mountain on the next day by a different route and made a further search at the foot of the mountain—only to be disappointed again. I had a long discussion with Mr. Yüan in the evening as to the exact route we should follow, and finally came to the conclusion that, so far as my personal work was concerned, I should follow partly the historical sites and partly the probably pre-historic settlements as my guides, so at 10 a. m. on March 2d we left for Yao-ling.

The exact location of the tomb of the Emperor Yao is a long debated question. Previous to the Mongol Dynasty, this tomb was usually located in Shantung. The tomb in P'ing-yang Fu was not so well known at that time. The argument for its location in Shansi is that as Yao retired at quite an advanced age, it is improbable that he should subsequently have inspected his distant domains and died so far away from home. As the tomb in P'ing-yang Fu is near his supposed capital, it is probably the true one—if, indeed, there be a tomb of this Emperor; but since the very existence of such a person is doubtful, we can only consider both tombs as variations, merely, of the same myth. All these considerations passed through my mind while we were riding towards the tomb of the Emperor. When we inquired about the way to Yao-ling, the natives simply stared at us, and it was a long time before we made out that the local name for the place is Shén-lin (Spirit Forest). There we arrived late in the evening, and found it surrounded by a wall enclosing a building of modest size, a solitary temple in the midst of mountains, where we stayed that night.

The tomb is quite high, pyramidal in shape and half encircled by a rivulet (fig. 134). It was officially lost for a long time, but was rediscovered in the Ming Dynasty, according to the inscription in the temple. The arguments as to whether this is the real tomb are diffi-

cult to follow; but in spite of them the question remains a question today, and undoubtedly will remain so until the spade of an archeologist shall clear it up.

We worked about two hours in the morning and left this reputed resting place of the august Emperor at 10 a. m., arriving at Fou-shan Hsien late in the afternoon. On the fourth, we made very little progress. The ground was wet, and there were many steep ascents and descents. We covered about six miles in all and stopped at Hsiang-shui-ho. On this day I picked up my first piece of red pottery of an archaic character on a descending *loess* slope.



FIG. 134.—Supposed tomb of the Emperor Yao. From the southeast.

The next day we started early, while the ground was still wet. The road we followed lies deep down between *loess* cliffs. Such roads make it convenient to observe the exposed surface of the *loess*. The finding of the red pottery sherd was very encouraging and made me look carefully all along the way. Not long after we started from Hsiang-shui-ho, I began to see gray pottery sherds of the Chou and Han periods. All of a sudden I discerned a piece of red pottery decorated with black lying among the withered, wet grass. Then one after another came into view as we traced them to their source. It is a heap of earth about 10 feet in height and cut down vertically on one side to the public road. The upper surface is a long and narrow strip. This piece of land is owned by the Li brothers, who most politely received me and helped me with their spades to gather samples of the painted sherds from the exposed surface of their mound. When

I left them, they were very willing to pose for a picture (fig. 135) by the side of the heap where these pottery sherds were discovered—the first Yang-shao site to be found in southern Shansi. The rest of the day's journey was a cheerful one, and at four in the afternoon we arrived at the city of I-ch'eng Hsien.

It was a whole day's journey from I-ch'eng to Chü-wo which, in turn, is about 60 *li* east of Chiang Chou—one of the most important cities in southern Shansi and a center for curio-dealers. At this city, the Fêng River turns westward. While we were in Chü-wo, we decided to pay a visit to Chiang Chou to have a look at the various



FIG. 135.—Site at Chiao-t'ou-ho where prehistoric pottery of the Yang-shao type was found.

curio shops in that city. This, I thought, might perhaps serve to help us in forming a notion as to the kinds of antiquities which are unearthed in this region. But this idea proved to be a delusion. All the curio-dealers have a common secret: if one inquires about the exact location of the place whence the things they exhibit come, the unanimous and invariable answer is that they do not know. In vain one may tell them that the curios would increase in value if their sources were known. Thus a whole day in Chiang Chou only convinced me that so far as real archeological work is concerned, very little help can be derived from such people. Having gone to Chiang Chou from Chü-wo by the northern route through Hou-ma, we returned over a bypath through mountains in the south which has been gradually elevated from the Fêng River valley by *loess* deposit. A day and a half

was spent in exploring the terraces, and although no particular archeological results were obtained on this trip, we had a fine chance to study the *loess* formation (fig. 136), a certain knowledge of which, I think, is necessary, if the archeology of southern Shansi is to be properly understood.

After we returned to Chü-wo, our next trip was to dash across Chung-t'iao-shan. This range, according to the local estimate, extends for about 800 *li* from east to west, parallel to the Yellow River on the south and the Fêng on the north, and inasmuch as early traditions about the Emperor Shun and the Hsia Dynasty are centered



FIG. 136.—*Loess* terraces south of Chiang Chou. (Photograph by P. L. Yüan.  
Courtesy of the Geological Survey of China.)

about these mountains, I decided to spend some time here. The next four days, therefore, were devoted to crossing and recrossing Chung-t'iao-shan; but as we found no archeological prospects here, we turned immediately northward to An-i Hsien and Yün-ch'êng.

We arrived at Yün-ch'êng in the evening of the 17th and entered the city on the 18th. On the 19th we set out to visit the supposed tomb of the Emperor Shun, and on the way stopped at certain temples in Yün-ch'êng. In *Shansi-t'ung-chih* (Vol. 52, p. 2), it is recorded that the stone pillars of these temples were formerly the palace pillars of Wei Hui-wang (335-370 A. D.), recovered from the ruined city south of An-i Hsien. Some of them are now used as the entrance pillars in Ch'ênhuang Miao and Hou-t'u Miao, and those of Ch'ênhuang Miao certainly show peculiar features which are worth record-



FIG. 137.—Details of the left hand stone pillar at the entrance to Ch'en-huang Miao, Yün-ch'êng.



FIG. 139.—Type of Buddhist *stelae* collected by the Magistrate of An-i Hsien.

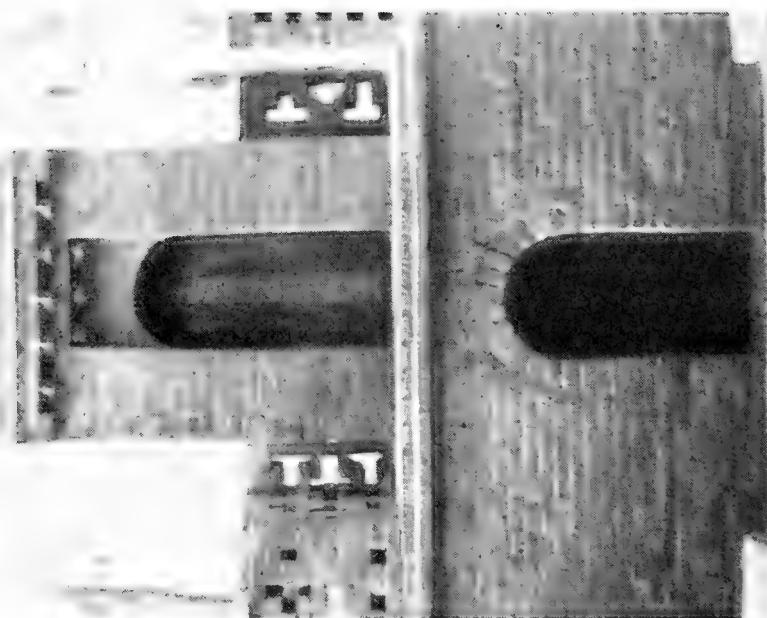


FIG. 138.—Supposed tomb of the Emperor Shun.

ing. Two pillars, hexagonal in section and carved with dragons coiled around them, are found at the entrance. The left one (fig. 137) is especially interesting, because in the claws of the dragon are grasped two human heads with perfect Grecian features: curly hair, aquiline and finely chiselled nose, small mouth and receding cheeks. One head with the tongue sticking out is held at the mouth of the dragon, while the other is held in the talons of one hind leg. It is an unusually fine piece of sculpture in limestone, wonderfully spaced and with the most graceful lines. The right one is inferior in its workmanship: evidently the two were not executed by the same hand. I saw 28



FIG. 140.—Supposed tombs of the Hsia Emperors. (Photograph by P. L. Yüan. Courtesy of the Geological Survey of China.)

of this kind of pillar in the succeeding two days; but most of them were crude imitations. It is possible, however, that some are of the ancient type and were made earlier than others. The whole subject is well worth more detailed study.

The tomb of Shun (fig. 138) has a very different appearance from that of Yao. It is located about 30 *li* northwest of the city of An-i Hsien in the midst of a vast plain with apparently no natural barrier on any side to shelter it from "the wind and the water." Half of the early references to the tomb of this emperor put its location at Ch'ang-wu. Yet Chang Chin-chün quite convincingly argued that it must be in An-i (*Shansi-t'ung-chih*, Vol. 56, pp. 20-23). The problem is similar to that concerning the tomb of Yao, and consequently the solution must be sought in the same way.

On the 20th, we were invited to dinner by the magistrate of An-i Hsien, Mr. Chêng, who is a student and collector of antiquities. He introduced us to a small museum in his *yamēn* where he has gathered together a large number of Buddhist stelæ and ancient tablets (fig. 139) which were originally scattered all over the district of An-i. Only a part of all he found has been moved to his *yamēn*; but his catalogue includes those which still remain in the different villages. He draws rather a sharp line of demarcation and leaves all the post-Sung sculptures unrecorded. It is an unusual work that he is doing, and gives one a ray of hope that some of the ancient monuments in inland China may yet be preserved. After the dinner we were taken about the city.



FIG. 141.—Site at Hsi-yin Ts'un where prehistoric pottery was found.

where we saw some more of the dragon pillars, mostly in Taoist temples. The ancient city itself, where some of these pillars are supposed to have been found, is less than a mile from the southern gate of An-i. The remains of the old wall are still visible, but, if the place was a city at all, it was indeed a very small one, measuring about 400 by 250 yards. It may, however, be the site of an important ancient building.

We left Yün-ch'êng on the 21st, and on the 22d we arrived at Hsia Hsien—center of the traditions of the ancient Hsia Dynasty. The temple of the Great Yü and the tombs of his descendants as well as many of the famous ministers of that dynasty are said to be located here, and all these I visited (fig. 140); but I must confess that I am not at all able to determine whether, judged by their appearance, they are the real tombs or not. They all look like the ordinary burial mounds, except that they are larger. However, while on our way to

visit these tombs the unexpected happened. It was after riding through the village of Hsi-yin that, suddenly, a large field of prehistoric potteries was discovered! Mr. Yüan was the first to see it. The site (fig. 141), extending to several *mou* of land, is apparently larger than the one we found at Chiao-t'u-ho, and the pottery is somewhat different, too. While we were picking up at random the sherds exposed on the surface, the villagers gathered in large number, so we did not stay very long lest there be too much excitement created.



FIG. 142.—Votive *stela* found at Hsin-hua-shih.

When we left An-i Hsien, the magistrate had given us a copied list of the names and locations of the various votive stones which are still scattered in the different villages of his district, and as we were on our way northward again, we determined to stop and see some of them. Three places were visited on the 25th and the 26th, where besides *stelæ*, we saw also a number of individual Buddhist figures which are preserved in good condition, the most perfect piece being in San-lu-li Ts'un. Unfortunately, it is preserved in a dark room, where a picture could not be taken, as I had no flash light with me.

On the 26th, while Mr. Yüan went away on some special geological mission, I started for Chi-san Hsien to have a look at the so-called T'ang wall paintings at Hsiao-ning Ts'un, some of these paintings having been recently sold to curio-dealers who sent them to Peking for sale. Hsin-hua-shih is a Buddhist temple built in the 12th year of K'ai-huang of the Sui Dynasty near Ch'a-tien-chieh. It has been destroyed and repaired many times; but the front hall still retains some reminiscence of T'ang architecture. It is in the central and the third hall that the walls are painted on three sides. The paintings of the side walls of the third hall and those of the southern wall of the central hall (opening towards the north) have been taken away by curio-dealers. The rest is still intact; and the date is to be found on the northern wall of the third hall, being the *wu-hsü* year of Yüan (A. D. 1298 or 1358). The courtyard between the front hall and the central hall was locked, and my guide assured me that there was nothing worth seeing inside the yard. Nevertheless, I had him open it for me, in spite of his assurance, and by sheer accident I found the protruding corner of a stone which lay buried in the ground. I asked the villagers to dig it out for me, and it proved to be a votive stela (fig. 142) carved at the time when the temple was first built. This little discovery rounded out my trip, and from this day on I marched directly northward and returned to Peking.

#### NOTES

##### 1. Anthropometrical measurements at Chieh-hsiu.

Through the kind arrangements of Mr. Huang Tzü-sen, Magistrate of Chieh-hsiu Hsien, I was able to measure 86 of the natives of this District who are serving in the Army Training Camp and the Police Court. With the exception of my series of Huang-p'i and Huang-kang, this is the largest of any series of anthropometrical measurements made in any one district. The following 13 measurements were taken of each individual: stature, auditory height, sitting height, head length, head breadth, horizontal circumference, minimum frontal diameter, bizygomatic diameter, nasion-menton height, nasion-prosthion height, nasal height, and nasal breadth. Observations were also made of the following descriptive characters: hair color, eye, brow, chin, shape of nose, malar bone, shape of face, prognathism, teeth.

##### 2. Pottery Sherds from Chiao-t'ou-ho.

The total number of sherds is 127. Of these, 42 are painted. Of the painted, 20 are with rims: 6 with bent rim, 1 with thickened rim, and 13 with plain rim. The paint used is black. The ground color varies from light brown to dark brown. The patterns consist of triangles with three sides concave, or with two sides concave and one side straight or convex; straight lines; crescent moon; big round dot; cross-hatched lines; shape of X with horns elongated into straight lines; and parallel lines with big dots between. Of the 85 unpainted, 21 are gray in color and are decorated with incised lines in parallel,

cross-hatched or mixed directions; 2 are black and undecorated; 2 are dark violet and undecorated; 60 have the same ground color as the painted, and of these 17 are decorated with incised lines, 1 with ornamentation in relief, and 42 are plain. In addition to these potteries, there are also two broken pieces of finely made black stone rings, and a small piece of the shaft of a human ulna.

#### 3. Pottery Sherds from Hsi-yin Ts'un.

The total number is 86. Of these, 14 are painted. Of the painted, 7 have rims—3 bent and 4 plain. Triangles, straight lines and big dots are the chief decorative patterns. They are often combined. Of the unpainted, 15 are gray or black in color and 57 are red or dark brown. Of the gray or black, 11 have incised lines and 4 are plain. Of the red, 34 are incised and 23 are plain. One complete, rather ill-shaped cup is found in this collection. It is dark gray in color and not uniformly fired. The diameter of the rim varies from 5.5 cm. to 5.9 cm.; the height is 5.3 cm. There are 7 ridges at the bottom with 7 finger depressions between the ridges.

#### 4. Votive *stelæ* seen in An-i Hsien.

In the list of ancient votive *stelæ* given to me by the magistrate, there are 41 dated previous to the T'ang Dynasty. Of these, 28 have been moved to Fang-kung-tz'u, the museum in the magistrate's *yamén*. Twenty others are dated in T'ang and Sung, the latest date corresponding with A. D. 1101.

CHI LI,  
*Freer Gallery of Art Expedition to China.*

### ANTHROPOLOGICAL WORK IN ALASKA

Under the auspices of the Bureau of American Ethnology, Dr. Aleš Hrdlička, curator of physical anthropology, U. S. National Museum, made, during the spring and summer of 1926, a comprehensive survey of anthropological and archeological matters in Alaska.<sup>1</sup> The

<sup>1</sup> During the extended trip briefly outlined above the writer has received many courtesies and much help for which he wishes hereby to offer once more his grateful and hearty acknowledgments. It will be impossible to specially mention all who aided in the work, but in the first place thanks are due to Governor George A. Parks of Alaska; Mr. Harry G. Watson, his Secretary; Mr. Karl Thiele, Secretary for Alaska; Judge James Wickersham, formerly Delegate from Alaska; to Father A. F. Kasheroff, Curator of the Territorial Museum and Library of Juneau; Dr. Wm. Chase of Cordova; Mr. Noel W. Smith, General Manager, Government Railroad of Alaska; Mr. B. B. Mozee, Indian Supervisor, and Dr. J. A. Romig, of Anchorage; to Professor C. E. Bunnell, President Alaska Agriculture College at Fairbanks; to Mr. and Mrs. Fullerton, Missionaries at Tanana; to the Rev. J. W. Chapman at Anvik; to Father Jetté, at Holy Cross; to Mr. C. Betsch at Russian Mission and to Messrs. Frank Tucker and E. C. Gurtler, near the Mission; to Mr. Frank P. Williams of St. Michaels; to Judge G. J. Lomen and his very good sons and daughter at Nome; to the Rev. Doctor Baldwin, Fathers La Fortune and Post, and Capt. Ross, U. S. Coast Guard, at Nome; to Mr. Elmer Rydeem, merchant at Nome; to C. S. Cochran, the Captain of the "Bear," and his officers, particularly Mr. H. Berg, his excellent boatswain; to the Rev. F. W. Goodman and Mr. La Voy at

trip was in many respects a noteworthy one and rich in results, which, if followed up, promise to lead to valuable additions to our knowledge regarding the American aborigines.

Since American anthropologists started to study native man, there has always been in the background of the work the question of the origin and antiquity of the American Indian and Eskimo. There were always the questions : Who are they? ; What are their true affiliations? ; Where did they come from? ; and When did they come to the New World? One man after another under the Smithsonian Institution, and more especially under the Bureau of American Ethnology, besides those elsewhere, has given his life to the study of these problems, and research was and still is carried on in all parts of the continent on these basic questions, without the final answers having as yet been reached.

Throughout this work there has always been felt a need of more definite knowledge of those parts of America and Asia that come closest together. In the studies on the origin of the American aborigines in particular, indications invariably point to the furthestmost American northwest and thence to the Asiatic continent. Time and again, even to the present day, ideas or opinions have been advanced that the American man, or at least some of the American aborigines, may have reached this continent from other parts of the world—from Europe, Polynesia, Melanesia, Central or Southern Asia, and even Australia. The men who are advancing these ideas generally forget that when we are dealing with the peopling of America we are not dealing with the people of the continent within anything like historic times, but thousands of years back when man was by no means as civilized or apt in any part of the world as he later became, and when he did not control as yet sufficient means of navigation or, especially, of provisioning for any extended journey such as could have brought him into this continent. The best students of the question agree that man, up to relatively late times, could only have come into America over small stretches of ocean ; and so everything points in the one direction of Alaska, and beyond to the Asiatic continent. And here many people have assumed that there must have been up to recent

---

Pt. Hope ; to the American teachers at Wales, Shismareff, Kotzebue, Pt. Hope and elsewhere ; to Tom Berryman, Jim Allen and Mr. Chas. Brower, traders respectively at Kotzebue, Wainwright, and Barrow ; to Mr. Sylvester Chance, Superintendent of Education, Kotzebue, Alaska ; to the U. S. Marshals, Deputy Marshals and Postmasters along the route ; and to the numerous traders, miners, settlers and others who were helpful with specimens, advice, guidance, and in other matters.



FIG. 143.—Harding Glacier, Resurrection Bay, Alaska.



FIG. 144.—Episcopalian Mission, Yukon Tananá Jct.



FIG. 145.—Chief Thomas, of the Tananá Indians, with his young wife. (At Nenána.)

times a land connection. But Dall and others have shown that we have no sufficient foundation for this assumption within the time that the American man may have come over; nor was such a connection at all necessary. There may have been a land connection preceding, and possibly even during some part of the glacial period, but those times are so far away that they play no part in the peopling of America, however large a rôle they may have had in the exchange of various animals between the two continents.

When one looks on the map of Alaska, it seems a relatively small portion of the world and it would seem that the exploration of it for traces of ancient man should be fairly simple. There are a few large rivers; almost no harbors; there are in general only a few favorable spots in Alaska where ancient man could have established himself, and it would appear easy to reach these points, to survey them, and to see what they promise or can give. As a matter of fact, Alaska is as large as one-third of the United States; the whole of it has less than two hundred miles of good roads; and the interior—and by interior is meant here anything away from the shores of the seas and the banks of the rivers—is practically impassable except for short stretches during the brief summer. In winter the country can be traversed more easily with dog sleds, but winter is not the season for archeological work. And when the explorer comes to the rivers or shores, he finds that transportation facilities by boat have, since the gold rush is over, become very limited, suitable boats being hard to obtain and very expensive. So that the student from the very start is presented with serious difficulties which at times seem almost insurmountable.

Under these conditions it was difficult to carry out systematic work planned ahead from beginning to end; but the writer soon learned that Alaska in general is peopled today by the most helpful, big-hearted and generous men and women, and their help counted for much. With this many of the difficulties were overcome until the Bering Sea was reached, where by good fortune was found the Revenue Cutter "Bear," which was ready to help. On it the writer went to St. Lawrence and other important islands; and with it he was enabled to visit point after point of anthropological interest along the Seward Peninsula, the Kotzebue Sound, and then through the Arctic Sea right up to Barrow. The "Bear" could not give all the time needed, but enough was given to make possible at least the most essential observations on each spot and fair collections.

The journey began, strictly speaking, at Vancouver, for at the several stops of the boat between Vancouver and Juneau an opportu-



FIG. 146.—Chief Joseph, Yukon Indians, Tananá. (Photographed at the Mission.)

nity was had of seeing the natives of the coast and the islands. The striking characteristics of these natives are their relatively large faces and big chests, combined with rather short legs and stature. There are large numbers of mixed-bloods among the younger generation.

A stop of several days was made at Juneau, to see the excellent local museum under the able directorship of Father Kashevaroff, and to obtain the needed official papers. The occasion was utilized also for a visit of the last remaining known site of the Auk tribe of Indians, and for some important collections. The chief among the latter is an old Shaman mask of the Yakutat tribe beaten from one piece of copper.

From Juneau, transportation was taken for Seward on a boat which stopped at several stations for a sufficient length of time to enable the writer to see such things as could be found in these places, and to make inquiries of principal local men about Indian remains. Some specimens were collected on this part of the trip, including a very typical skull of an Indian child donated by Dr. Chase of Cordova.

From Seward the journey was continued on the government railroad to Anchorage, with some further collecting and information at the latter place. Through the courtesy of the general manager of the railroad, Mr. Noel W. Smith, a stop was next made at the now small but formerly more important Indian village of Eklutney. Here exists a new and well conducted Indian school in which, thanks to the principal, it was possible to examine a large number of Indians, with a few Eskimo children.

From Eklutney a train was taken to Nenana, where a number of local Indians, headed by their old Chief Thomas, were waiting for a brief talk; and then to Fairbanks, where additional specimens of interest were obtained, and where the writer was enabled, thanks to the kindness of Professor C. E. Bunnell, President of the Alaska Agricultural College, to examine the ethnological, archeological and paleontological collections at the college. From Fairbanks, the writer returned to Nenana, where he boarded a small river steamer with which he proceeded down the Tananá River on which are several small Indian villages.

The main part of the inland journey began at Tananá, at the junction of the Tananá and Yukon Rivers, and extended down the Yukon for a stretch of over 900 miles. It was covered mostly in small boats, some owned by traders, some by Indians. We zigzagged from bank to bank, from settler to settler and camp to camp, making inquiries, observing natives, examining old sites, and collecting what it was possible to collect. In this way considerable light was finally gained on our

problems along the Yukon, which grand stream must have been one of the principal arteries of the ancient movements of population; and the impressions increased until by the time the mouth of the river was reached it was possible to formulate the following conclusions:

1. The living Indian population along the Tananá, and the Yukon below the Tananá, is scarce. It is doubtful if the total number of the natives on both rivers, as far as covered on this trip, reaches 1,000. And many of the younger adults and especially the children, are mixed-bloods. Due to a lucky coincidence—a potlatch at the mission above Tananá, and other conditions—about 400 Indians were actually



FIG. 147.—Anvik, on the lower middle Yukon.

seen. They all belong to one type, of moderate stature and features, moderate pigmentation, and brachycephaly. They are identical with, or very near to, the Alaska Indians further south.

2. The boundaries between the Indian and the Eskimo both culturally and physically, are indefinite and vague. Moreover, in olden times the Eskimo, according to indications, extended somewhat farther up the river than he now does. But the Indian seemingly occupied always the middle two-thirds of the Yukon, and the Tananá. As the trip proceeded down the Yukon below Ruby, the more specimens obtained and especially the more skeletal material gathered, the more difficult it became to say just where ended the Eskimo and where began the Indian. There is no clear line of demarcation between the

two; they interdigitated and mixed together, culturally as well as physically.

3. From Tananá down stream to its mouth, the Yukon is now and was evidently in the past peopled almost exclusively on the right or northern side. This side is essentially that of the heights, the left being mainly that of flats. But even in the flat country towards the mouth of the river (north mouth) the settlements are all on the right bank. The Indians and the Eskimo behaved alike in this respect, as in a good many others.

4. The old banks of the Yukon, where preserved, show occasional sites of human occupation and yield stone tools, fragments of pottery, more or less fossilized animal bones, and now and then barbed points of ivory or other bone objects.

The habitations in general were of the partly subterranean "igloo," or pit-and-tunnel type. Traces of Russian presence are common. The occupation of some of the sites is still remembered. A few appear earlier than the coming of the white man. No trace was found or heard of any remains that would suggest geological antiquity.

So much for the Yukon. When the Bering Sea was reached, the first more important visit was to St. Lawrence Island. This island was formerly not much considered in archeology and anthropology. It was believed to be rather an out-of-the-way place with small if any connection with the American side, and on which there was not much of importance. This idea must now be given up, for as a result of what was seen and learned this large island should be one of the principal points of attack for future research and is one of the most promising. On the St. Lawrence and the little "Punuk" Islands southeast of it, there are now being recovered by the Eskimo quantities of objects made of ivory which through age has become more or less "fossilized," and these objects in some cases show remarkable and beautiful decoration. Definite information was obtained that on one of the Punuk Islands numerous such implements are actually visible frozen in old refuse heaps. A small party from the Revenue Cutter "Algonquin" reached these islands this year (1926) and obtained, according to reliable information, several bushels of such articles and of old ivory. These objects were brought away to be worked up into beads, pendants, etc., which find ready sale. A number of them, parts of which were still extant, showed human workmanship. These and other facts indicate that these islands are of much promise, and it is urgent to explore them before what they can give disappears.

From St. Lawrence the voyage led to the Diomedes, passing King Island. This island was at that time bare of population, all of the

inhabitants having gone to Nome for the summer. At Nome, where they now come every year, these Eskimo work at various trades, and manufacture articles from the walrus ivory which they have gathered during the rest of the year. They do not return until late in the season, when they have sold all they have made. We also passed Sledge Island, with two interesting dead villages which ought to be explored.

The next stop was on the smaller or American Diomede. At this time the writer did not have permission from the Russian Government (received later) to visit the larger island, which belongs to Russia. We found, however, that both the larger and smaller Diomede were



FIG. 148.—June 26, 1926. Bird's-eye view of Cape Prince of Wales, Alaska. Picture taken at midnight on above date showing the midnight sun. The point on the left hand margin of the picture is the nearest point to Siberia.

*Note:* The village can be seen extending along the coast to a point about 300 ft. beyond Village Creek. Large body of water on the extreme right is Lopp Lagoon. (Photograph by Clark M. Garber.)

nearly deserted, the inhabitants having gone to Nome where they, too, stay through the summer making articles of fossil (mammoth, walrus) or fresh (walrus) ivory. If the student wants to see these islanders in summer he must go to Nome, where on one side of the town live the Diomede, on the other the King Island people. The majority of both were seen there before the start with the help of the very efficient and good Father La Fortune.

Although the small Diomede is difficult for exploration, some interesting features were found. They consisted of rock burials, old refuse heaps, and ruined habitations. The burials have been made among big boulders of granite that cover the steep slopes of the

island. Beneath these boulders are many large crevices in which nest thousands of the little auks. One hears the birds constantly chattering deep beneath one's feet, but never sees them. The crevices are deep and spacious, and into them have fallen beyond redemption many of the skulls and bones of the people buried once among the rocks above. Only here and there a bone or a skull that escaped such fate remained to be collected.

As to the village on the little Diomede, it is a poor little hamlet of only five houses, and could never have been much larger. But it is built upon something that preceded it and the ruins, the tumbled



FIG. 149.—Portion of Native Burial Grounds from which specimens of skeletons and crania were collected for Smithsonian Institution. *Location:* Northern Talus slope of Cape Mountain about  $\frac{1}{2}$  mile from Village of Wales. (Photograph by Clark M. Garber.)

buildings of older times, have served for a foundation of the newer dwellings. Dr. Jennes of the Ottawa Museum came out with us from Cape Prince of Wales to do some excavation on the island.

The next stopping place after a brief visit to Wales, was the site of two old native settlements with a living village between them, called Shismareff, located near the middle of the northern coast of the Seward Peninsula. Along this part of the coast are several other old dead villages, some of them particularly promising for exploration. Of the two at Shismareff itself, the more important was unfortunately appropriated recently for a fox farm, the burial grounds were razed, the skeletal remains mostly dumped into holes, the surface of the old igloos levelled and cages for the foxes erected upon the flats thus made.

It seems that there is no protection for such sites and nobody cares sufficiently to save them, and so, in this case at least, what is probably one of the most interesting sites of that coast is lost to science. And there are others.

From Shismareff, the "Bear" proceeded to Cape Blossom, and the Kotzebue Sound, where, with the valued help of Mr. Sylvester Chance, Superintendent of Education for the North-West district, valuable information was obtained concerning a large number of dead villages in this region. Some of these are old and some fairly recent, but all deserve to be explored. Along the Buckland River there is also apparently much archeological as well as paleontological material.

The Kotzebue Sound is an especially important region to anthropology because, as long as either natives or whites remember, here have congregated every year natives from all parts of this region—from the Diomedes, from the East Cape in Asia, from the villages of the Seward Peninsula, and from those of the Arctic coast as far north as Barrow, as well as from the inland rivers. Here doubtless is much to be found and learned, though even here much has already been obliterated or scattered.

From Kotzebue the journey led along the coast to Point Hope. This coast is barren and unoccupied, or almost so; and, except at Cape Krusenstern there is apparently but little in the way of older remains. One of the most important and interesting points however of all these coasts, is Point Hope itself. There we meet with a dead village which was occupied up to 30 years ago but whose beginnings are very old. The people have abandoned the village because, it is said, of the encroachment of the sea. They are now occupying a site a little back of it, and are assiduously excavating the old remains and selling the proceeds to whoever comes along. We were there twice—going north and coming back, and had some interesting experiences. Going north the writer bought a good number of old implements, etc., from the natives, especially from one young woman. When they found that skeletal material also was desired, they brought willingly what they could find from the old village—three human skulls, skulls of dogs and a fox, and other specimens. When the "Bear" came back, the young woman from whom a skull was obtained before, came against all expectation to the boat with a bag on her back containing five very good skulls, which she had excavated from the old burial grounds with her own hands. It was an illustration of the helpful and matter-of-course nature of these natives, who in general are progressing rapidly in civilization.

The old village at Point Hope is yielding large numbers of specimens of great variety—of such variety that one stands astonished at the extent and refinement of the former culture of these far north people. Point Hope is at the extreme end of a spit of sand and gravel many miles long extending into the sea and exposed to all the winds and storms—scarcely a place where one would expect to find a people of such varied or advanced culture. Many old articles of native trade appear from the diggings, trade with the people of Kobuk River to those of the Bering Sea and perhaps even Asia. And in the upper layer occur occasional articles (metal, beads) of white man's introduction.

The further journey to Barrow was a series of difficulties, with not much of anthropological interest except at Barrow itself. Between Point Hope and Barrow there are but few settlements, old or present. There is however Kevaleena, a small new village, with two old and possibly important sites, one along the lagoon and one further inland, on the river. Then comes Wainwright, another small recent village with an older site nearby, followed by a few little camps of reindeer herders. Then, just outside of Barrow, is an interesting old village site, and again another, further on, known as the "Hunting Place," the latter yielding good archeological specimens. Still further north there is a village at Point Barrow; but from Point Barrow eastward the now northern coast is seemingly barren until one reaches Barter Island, where there is a large dead village, which however was still occupied in the time of the earliest sailings in these waters. A collection of material from this village, seen in the possession of Mr. Charles Brower, the intelligent trader and collector of Barrow, proved interesting, though of much the same nature as the material along the coast this side of Barrow and, except for a few objects not as refined or beautiful.

On the return trip, each of the villages along the Arctic coast was re-visited and some small places were seen in addition; and then the "Bear" endeavored once more to stop at Cape Prince of Wales, but was prevented by a storm; it next tried to stop at the Diomedes—prevented by storm; at St. Lawrence—prevented by storm; once more at the small Diomede where Dr. Jenness awaited us, but unable to approach. Then a landing was tried at Nunivak Islands further south, but the boat was again driven away by storms and had to turn towards the Pribyloffs and Unalaska.

The total experience among the Bering and Arctic coasts may be summed up as follows: We are confronted here with an extensive region that is but sparsely peopled—the total population of today probably not exceeding 5,000 individuals—and which evidently has not been

much more peopled at any time during its existence. Here again, as along the Yukon, the only sites available for man and which were doubtless utilized in the past, were the beaches and especially the "spits" or low sand and gravel bars reaching into the sea, or separating the sea and inside lagoons, for these offered man the best facilities for getting at the animals and birds that he most needed for his food. All that was actually seen was, however, recent. The old beaches, the old flats, the old accumulations of rivers, the old lagoons, are filled up or washed away. In places there may be seen three, four, five—a whole series of beaches, and it is not known on which of these ancient man did settle. In some places these older beaches have been or are now being cut away. New lagoons have formed or are now forming, and old ones are filling up before one's eyes, to be converted into pools and marshes.

Still further, entire regions during a large part of the year, that is, during the open season when the ice goes north and again before the new ice forms, are subject occasionally at least to violent storms; and what these storms can do to human remains the writer himself saw. Eighteen miles to the east of Nome is a dead village, one of the largest on that coast. Near this village was an old burial ground, well known to some of the old white pioneers. One of these, who did not know what had happened, advised the writer to go there to collect, for he said he saw the ground covered with skeletal remains and various objects placed with the dead. The writer had, however, already visited the spot and this is what was found. In 1913 there had been a very violent south-wester—so bad that the cemetery at Nome itself was washed out and the bodies were scattered over the country. This storm absolutely washed off and left barren of human specimens the old burial ground east of Cape Nome, and had it not been for the depressions that still show where the ancient igloos of the village stood, no one could possibly guess today that an important burial ground had ever been in that vicinity.

Such storms doubtless happened repeatedly in the past, and they must have destroyed or covered many of the old sites. But many sites and remains of man of moderate antiquity still exist there. Many dead villages invite exploration and will repay excavation. And such explorations, judging from the experience acquired on this trip, will not be as expensive as might be feared.

A few words as to the problem of Asiatic migrations. The last summer's studies gave much definite light on this question. It so happened that upon reaching the upper parts of the Bering Sea we had the three clearest and most peaceful days of the whole journey; and

all this time the sensation was that of floating on a big lake, all boundaries of which could be seen at one and the same time except in the southeasterly direction. There is no problem of migration here. It was no great effort for people to pass from Asia to St. Lawrence Island, or the Diomedes, or Wales, Nome, Teller, and even as far as the Kotzebue or Norton Sounds and along the Arctic coast to Point Hope and northward. The people today think nothing of such trips. They have excellent big skin boats, much like the wooden Haida or Tlinkit boats of the south, which are so seaworthy that in going to



FIG. 150.—East Cape of Asia.

Nome from the King or Diomede Islands the natives fill them to the gunwales with dogs, ivory, and all sorts of household articles, and on the return trip they pile in boxes and barrels of provisions. An example of how little the Eskimo think of these journeys was witnessed during the last call of the "Bear" at Nome. As the year before, the King Islanders at Nome were offered the facilities of the "Bear" for transporting them homeward; but they preferred to be left behind because they had yet some purchases to make and some few articles to sell. They preferred to make the return journey in their umiaks later, regardless of the storms and distance, which shows how seaworthy these boats are and how practical native navigation was and is in these parts of the world. And once they reached the northeastern-most parts of the American continent, it was natural for the Asiatics to pass on. They were not emigrating into a *new* world; they merely saw another land a bit ahead of them and went to it, and they had no

reasons to return with the table better and better spread before them the farther they reached, and no opposition. The only questions can be, what were the exact routes the different contingents of these people took; and where are we to look and watch for their remains?

In this last respect the inquiries made along the Yukon and the coast and the islands were very instructive. There was certainly no single large migration. The people came over the Diomedes, through the Bering Sea, north and south of the Bering Strait; they came in small tribal groups, and this was doubtless repeated over a long period



FIG. 151.—Just south of East Cape of Asia. Native village to left.

of time. Then, judging from historic evidences, their movements were as follows:

It may be presumed that ancient man adhered to very much the same routes as those that are in use today, as the most practical, the most natural and sometimes the only available ones. Undoubtedly the greatest and most frequented route of farther spread was that along the coast down to the base of the Alaskan Peninsula, where with the inlets and lakes there is but a little portage over land to the Gulf of Alaska. Then there were the routes up the Yukon and Kuskokwim Rivers. On the Yukon, the earlier contingents probably did not go right up the whole stream, but branched off at the Tanana River and then went towards the Copper River which brought them into Prince of Wales Sound and the Gulf of Alaska. There were two other routes, one down the Koyukuk River, one of the largest tributaries of the Yukon, by which they would reach the latter; and the



FIG. 152.—Eskimo family of Wales on the "Bear."



FIG. 154.—Eskimo at Nome, Alaska. Indian-like in type.



FIG. 153.—Eskimo, St. Lawrence Id. Rounded, low vault.

other along the Noatak River. The latter route was probably used by but few people, but there are indications that some did follow it until they reached the Colville River, peopled its region and extended farther eastward.

To sum up, as to the routes of migration, outside of the Aleutian Islands, which are a problem of their own and point to Kanitchatka, the most plausible and doubtless most used route was that southward along the shores of the sea; the second, along the Yukon River and its



FIG. 155.—Eskimo mother and child, Indian-like in type, Reindeer Camp, n. Pastolik, Norton Sound.

tributaries; the third and fourth, along the Selavik, Koyukuk and Noatak Rivers in the north; the fifth along the Kuskokwim; and the sixth along the Arctic coast.

The questions of the culture of the older people and their physique are of much interest. So far as culture is concerned it was appreciated, more than ever before, that there existed in these parts of America, not so many hundreds of years ago, remarkable development, especially in what may best be characterized today perhaps by the term "fossil ivory culture." The people of this culture, whoever they were—doubtless ancestors of the Eskimo or Indian or both—reached a high degree of industrial differentiation and art—so high

that we have nothing to compare with it in America except among the more highly civilized and developed tribes of the northwest coast, Mexico, Yucatan and Peru. They attained a high grade of native art, which was characterized especially by decoration in curves and soft lines. There seems to be a distinction between this and the Eskimo art of today, as if some other people were responsible for the older culture; but when one examines the skeletal remains there is no indication of any other people except Eskimo and Indian in this



FIG. 156.—Eskimo woman, Indian-like type, and child, Kevalina (Arctic).

region at any period thus far represented in the collections. Therefore it seems that for the present at least it must be accepted provisionally that this culture was connected with the ancestors of the present natives of these regions. This interesting old culture seems to reach away along the American coasts; but it is not certain that its arts were actually practiced everywhere along these coasts. One of the most striking phenomena in these parts of the world is the extensive trade that, according to many indications, was here carried on in implements and other cultural objects. There is on the Kobuk River a mountain which is called Jade Mountain. This mountain was early

known to the Indians or the Eskimo of the river and its green stone was utilized by them for making adzes, drills, knives, lamps, and other objects. This particular stone is found only in that one place, yet objects and implements made of it occur scattered all the way from



FIG. 157.—Eskimo medicine man, treating a boy.

Point Hope down to Nunivak Island, and probably even the Gulf of Alaska and the northwest coast. Similarly, one finds the highly decorated objects of now fossil ivory on the Diomedes, the St. Lawrence Island, the Asiatic coast, and from Barrow and Point Hope again down to, if not beyond, Nunivak Island. The indications would seem to point to the old ivory culture having been central on the Asiatic side, whence it spread by trading along the American coast.

The skeletal remains collected on this journey will probably prove to be of much importance. They represent skeletal material from Barrow down the coast, spot by spot, including the islands; and they comprise not only recent material but also some older. These remains show at first sight that the Eskimo of these regions are by no means the highly differentiated Eskimo of Labrador and Greenland, but that they approach, in some cases almost to an identity, on one hand the Asiatic and Mongoloid types of people, and on the other the American Indians, more particularly those of Alaska. The writer has no longer any hesitation in believing that the Eskimo and Indian originally were not any two distinct races nor even two widely distinct and far-away types, but that if we could go a little back in time they would be found to be like two neighboring fingers of one hand, both proceeding from the same palm or racial source.

#### ARCHEOLOGICAL INVESTIGATIONS IN CHACO CANYON, NEW MEXICO

The Pueblo Bonito Expeditions<sup>1</sup> of the National Geographic Society, under the direction of Neil M. Judd, curator of American archeology, U. S. National Museum, were concluded in October, 1926. Pueblo Bonito is a prehistoric Indian village in the Chaco Canyon National Monument, northwestern New Mexico; archeological evidence suggests its abandonment about one thousand years ago. Pueblo Bonito may justly be regarded as one of our finest aboriginal apartment houses for, in its hey-day, it stood four stories high, comprised approximately 800 rooms, and covered more than three acres of ground. Its occupants were sedentary Indians who had surpassed all their known contemporaries in civic organization, architectural development, and dexterity in the manual arts. The National Geographic Society's Pueblo Bonito Expeditions, inaugurated in 1921, have contributed a vast store of information concerning these primitive Pueblo folk and others who, in pre-Columbian times, tilled the desert soil not only in Chaco Canyon but elsewhere throughout the plateau regions of the southwestern United States. The spacious communal dwellings these ancients built and occupied form the major antiquities of their respective periods and cultures.

During the past six years Mr. Judd and his associates have investigated the archeological evidence of the domestic and ritualistic life of the Bonitians and their neighbors at Pueblo del Arroyo and have

<sup>1</sup> Smithsonian Misc. Coll., Vol. 72, Nos. 6 & 15; Vol. 74, No. 5; Vol. 76, No. 10; Vol. 77, No. 2; Vol. 78, No. 1.



FIG. 158.—Pueblo Bonito as seen from the north cliff of Chaco Canyon. In the middle distance, the National Geographic Society's camp and the present arroyo, formed within the past century. (Photograph by O. C. Havens. Courtesy of the National Geographic Society.)

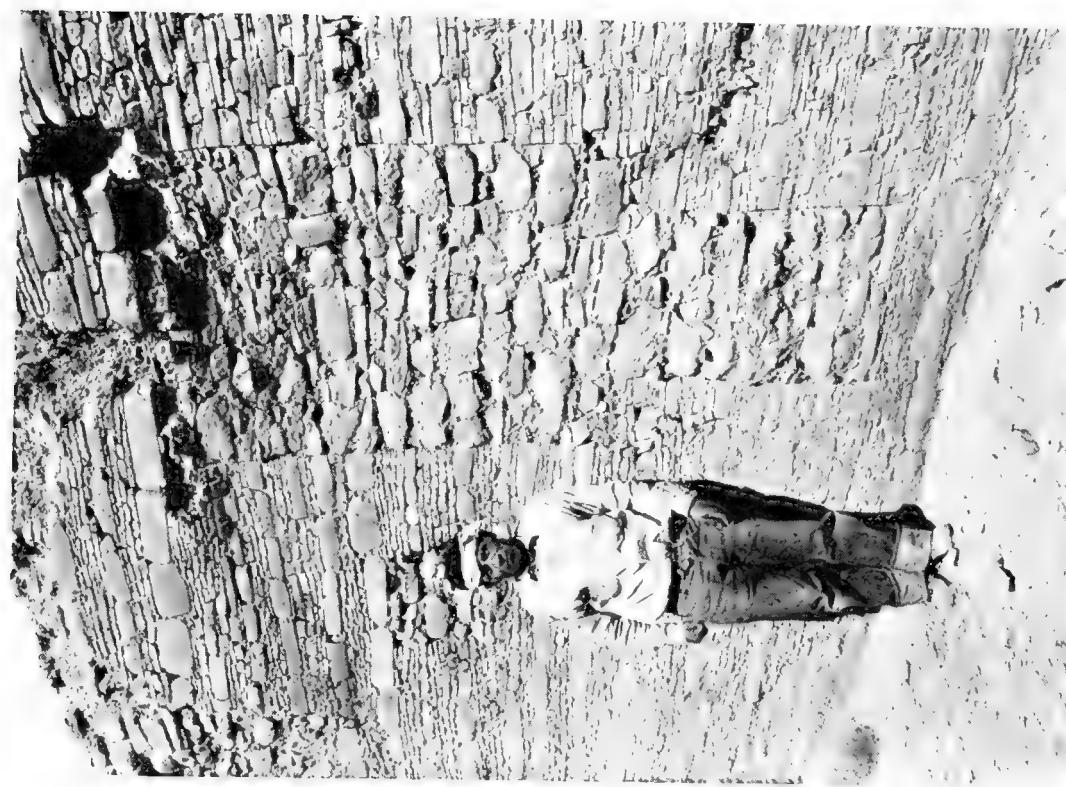


FIG. 159.—Doorways connecting rooms of the fourth or last major period of construction in Pueblo Bonito. (Photograph by Neil M. Judd. Courtesy of the National Geographic Society.)

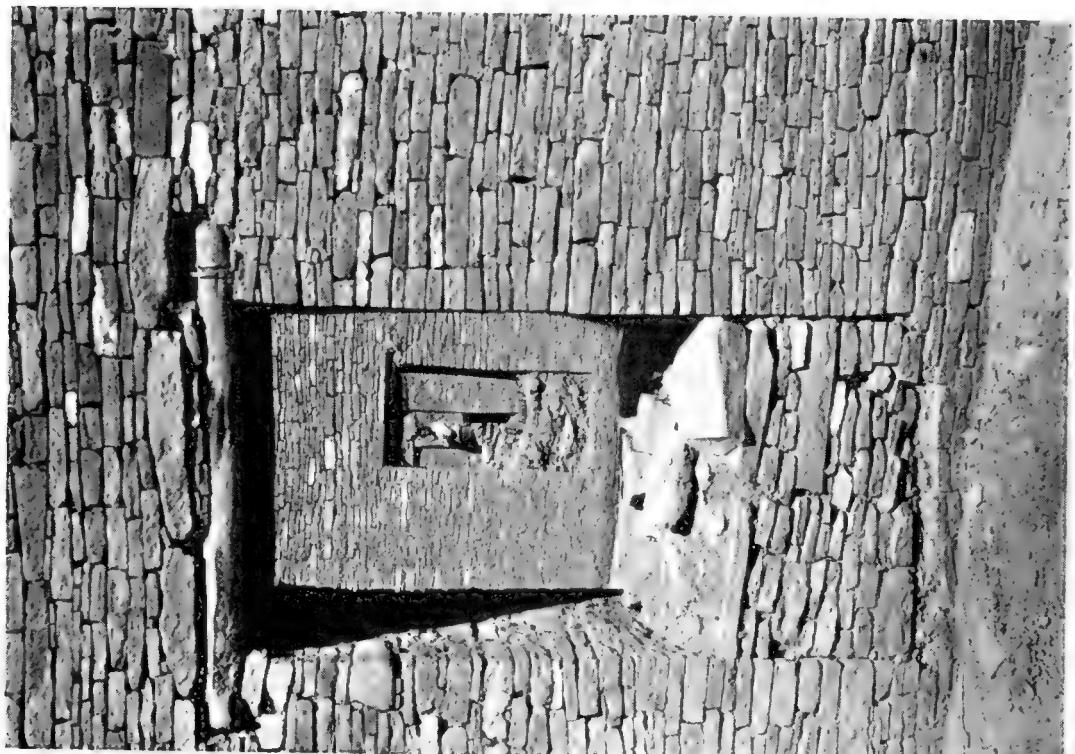


FIG. 160.—Huge, blocked, T-shaped door in a wall of characteristic third period masonry. (Photograph by Neil M. Judd. Courtesy of the National Geographic Society.)



FIG. 161.—From the north cliff of Chaco Canyon, towering close behind the walls of Pueblo Bonito, enemy warriors hurled defiance and more destructive missiles at the village folk below. (Photograph by Neil M. Judd. Courtesy of the National Geographic Society.)

also inquired into the probable geophysical changes brought about in Chaco Canyon since Pueblo Bonito was inhabited. It is now known, for example, that Pueblo Bonito was occupied by two distinct groups of Indians; that the type of architecture developed by each group was as unlike the other as were the household utensils employed in the corresponding sections of the village. Both peoples were farmers, however, and their fields of corn, beans, and squash may well have lain side by side. Hunting played no essential part in their means of livelihood despite the variety of mammal and bird bones found in



FIG. 162.—Bonitian cooking pots buried just beneath the floor of Room 350 and used for storage purposes. (Photograph by Neil M. Judd. Courtesy of the National Geographic Society.)

the rubbish piles. Agriculture was the main dependence of both groups, but there came a time when the harvests were no longer sufficient to support a population of from twelve to fifteen hundred. Arroyos formed, rain waters drained off quickly, helpful chemicals were leached out of the soil, the latter became impervious to water, crops failed to mature. This condition, it appears from the data at hand, was the indirect result of the prodigal manner in which the Bonitians utilized their available timber supply. Altered agricultural conditions, then, in addition to the harassment of nomadic, enemy tribes, unquestionably contributed to the disintegration and ultimate abandonment of both Pueblo Bonito and Pueblo del Arroyo.

Each successive period of constructional activity at Pueblo Bonito witnessed a marked intramural rearrangement of dwellings and a distinct effort to strengthen the outer walls, thus increasing their impregnability. External doorways were eliminated; ventilators were closed; the people drew closer and closer together. The single passageway which gave ready access to the inner courts was barred by a wall through which a narrow door opened; but this door was subsequently closed and thereafter entrance was had only by means of ladders which could, in time of attack, be drawn up to the housetops.



FIG. 163.—The overhang above the Indian's head shows the union of a new addition with older, partially razed walls in Pueblo Bonito. (Photograph by Neil M. Judd. Courtesy of the National Geographic Society.)

Sporadic warfare is even more vividly evidenced by discoveries made in individual rooms of the ruin.

Among other researches pursued by the 1926 expedition was that concerned with sub-court walls in Pueblo Bonito. Its closely-grouped houses were not hastily constructed from previously prepared plans. Throughout a considerable portion of the village deeply buried walls have been found. These pertain in each case to earlier periods of occupancy; they represent dwellings partially razed and over-built by later structures. Some of these demolished walls have been found as much as 12 feet (3.65 m.) below the last utilized court level. So great an accumulation of blown sand, débris of reconstruction and

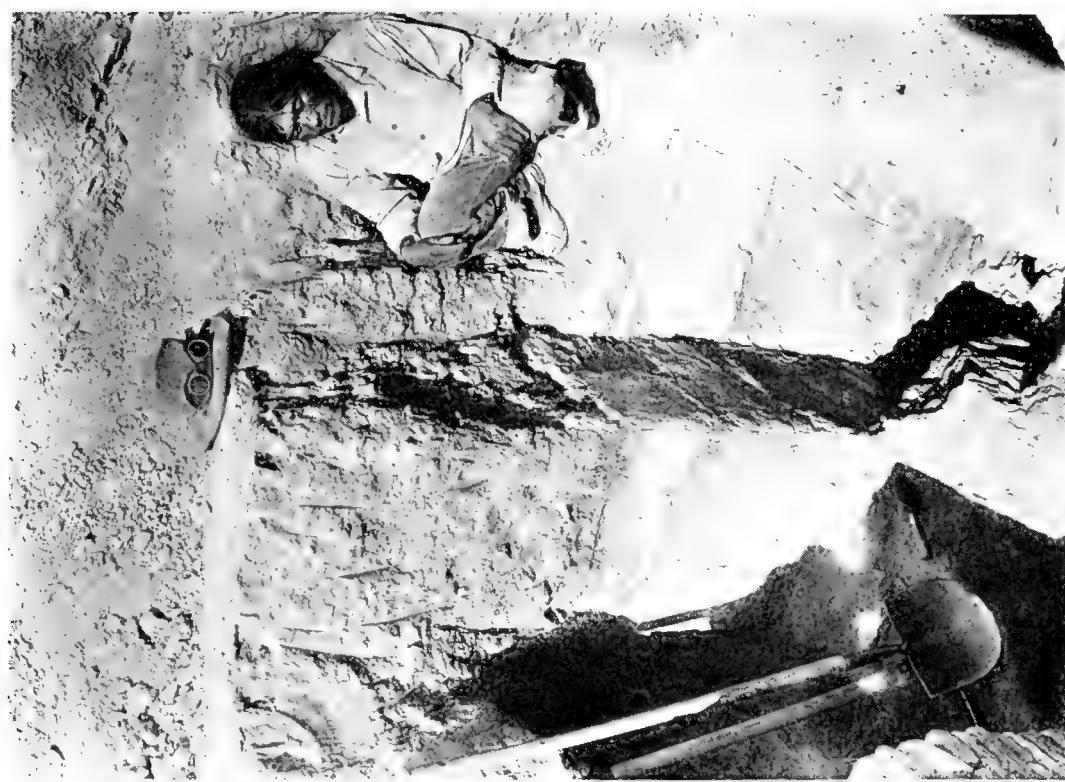


FIG. 164.—Superimposed, sub-court walls in Pueblo Bonito, representing successive periods of construction. (Photograph by Neil M. Judd. Courtesy of the National Geographic Society.)



FIG. 165.—Plastered and whitened masonry of the second period at Pueblo Bonito underlying the last utilized court level. (Photograph by Neil M. Judd. Courtesy of the National Geographic Society.)

floor sweepings furnishes mute evidence of the passing of many generations.

Mr. Karl Ruppert, one of Mr. Judd's associates in the Pueblo Bonito Expeditions, again supervised explorations at Pueblo del Arroyo. These, in 1926, were chiefly confined to excavation of a much-ruined, lesser structure close on the west side of the larger pueblo. The excavations were complicated and laborious; but upon their conclusion it was found that the site had originally been occupied by a circular tower, 73 feet (22.24 m.) in diameter, of a type



FIG. 166.—Outer south wall of Pueblo del Arroyo, showing varied stonework and later, abutting rooms. (Photograph by Neil M. Judd. Courtesy of the National Geographic Society.)

well known to the northward but not previously recorded so far south of the Rio San Juan. Interest in this structure was augmented by its apparent relationship to the super-kivas or huge ceremonial chambers of the Bonitians. Later walls joined the tower to Pueblo del Arroyo, but, subsequently, both tower and adjacent buildings were almost wholly razed by prehistoric masons who desired the dressed sandstone blocks for use elsewhere.

In addition to his study of the Expedition's ceramic collections, Mr. Frank H. H. Roberts, Jr., now of the Bureau of American Ethnology, undertook exploration of two small-house sites about nine miles east of Pueblo Bonito. Both settlements belong to an earlier horizon than

that represented by the great communal dwellings of Chaco Canyon. One of the two sites had been occupied by pre-Pueblo peoples whose local form of habitation was a semi-subterranean, circular structure the lower wall of which was formed by upright sandstone slabs. Similar houses have been noted elsewhere in the Southwest; their characteristically flat or low, conical roofs were frequently supported by four upright posts, as in Chaco Canyon. The second village examined by Mr. Roberts was much later than the first, both in time and culture. But it was never inhabited; indeed, it was not even completed.



FIG. 167.—South half of a prototype kiva at a pre-Pueblo site 9 miles east of Pueblo Bonito. (Photograph by Neil M. Judd. Courtesy of the National Geographic Society.)

Excavation established the fact that although some of its rooms had approached completion the larger number was represented merely by foundations prepared but never built upon.

This latter site had been wholly concealed by sedimentary deposits washed down from the borders of the canyon and was only brought to light by a narrow, deep arroyo cut within the past 15 years. As further indication of the not inconsiderable length of time during which prehistoric folk inhabited Chaco Canyon prior to construction of the great pueblos, it is interesting to note that the arroyo which disclosed the unfinished settlement last mentioned also exposed a "pit-house"



FIG. 169.—Nine miles east of Pueblo Bonito a deep arroyo has exposed the unfinished walls of an ancient communal house and a still older pit-dwelling (at right of Indian boy). (Photograph by Neil M. Judd. Courtesy of the National Geographic Society.)



FIG. 168.—In the branches of Chaco Canyon infrequent logs and partially decayed stumps witness the former presence of limited pine forests, exhausted by Bonitan housebuilders. (Photograph by Neil M. Judd. Courtesy of the National Geographic Society.)

whose floor level lay 13 feet 6 inches (4.1 m.) below the present valley surface. No one may say what chapters of human history still lie buried beneath the alluvial floor of Chaco Canyon.

Mr. Roberts also superintended stratigraphic studies, authorized by special permit from the Department of the Interior, in the rubbish piles at the two major ruins known as Pueblo Alto and Peñasco Blanco. These enormous heaps consist principally of floor sweepings containing ashes and fragments of pottery broken upon the hearth, intermixed with blown sand and débris of reconstruction. Potsherds are to the archeologist what fossils are to the geologist! The oldest fragments lie at the bottom of the pile; the latest, on top. The evolution or decadence of pottery technique at any one site is thus represented by a cross-section of its ash heap. In consequence of its studies at Peñasco Blanco and Pueblo Alto, the recent Pueblo Bonito Expedition has obtained data which illustrate not only the development of the art of pottery manufacture in both villages but which also indicate their probable positions in the chronology of Chaco Canyon. Mr. Judd finds no reason to alter his original impression that Pueblo Bonito was the earliest of the major Chaco Canyon villages and that it was inhabited for a longer period than any of the others.

The method by which it is hoped to ascertain the absolute age of Pueblo Bonito and Pueblo del Arroyo, namely, through study of annual growth rings in their ancient roof timbers, is already familiar to readers of the Smithsonian Explorations volume. These studies have gone forward during the past field season under the direct supervision of Dr. A. E. Douglass, of the University of Arizona. The data assembled by Dr. Douglass hold much of interest; although his conclusions may not yet be published, it is permissible to say that this phase of the National Geographic Society's explorations in Pueblo Bonito is also certain of contributing to the prehistory of the southwestern United States results not previously recorded.

#### INVESTIGATING EVIDENCE OF EARLY MAN IN FLORIDA

All research for the accumulation of knowledge pertaining to the early history of man is of human interest, and especially so in that part of it which reaches back into primitive time.

It has long been known that in Europe primitive tribes of the human race for long centuries lived contemporaneously and were well acquainted with many kinds of wild animals which are now extinct. Among these animals were the hairy mammoth, the woolly rhinoceros, the great cave bears, cave hyenas, wild horses, great oxen, etc. In

America also human bones and artifacts have been found associated with the remains of extinct animals of the Pleistocene Age. But usually either the associations or the circumstances of discovery have been of such a nature that doubt has been cast on the contemporaneity of deposition of objects found in the same stratum, it being assumed that the human remains and artifacts belonged to intrusion through later burials or other accident.

While the general problems relating to the first appearances and early development of man in America belong more properly to the ethnologist, this phase of it comes definitely within the province of mammalian paleontology and geology. Thus, members of these sciences from time to time have taken an active part in investigation of the evidences of early man in America. Perhaps the work in this line that has aroused most interest in recent years is that carried on by Dr. E. H. Sellards at Vero Beach, Florida. This work, which followed the digging of a big drainage canal at that place, resulted in the discovery of human remains and artifacts associated with fossil bones of a Pleistocene fauna. Although careful observation was made by Dr. Sellards and evidence was produced to show that the association was normal, this evidence was not accepted by some of the leading anthropologists as conclusive. After much discussion interest in this discovery lagged for a time, but was revived again a few years later by the discovery at Melbourne, about 30 miles north of Vero, of associated fossil bones and human remains in similar deposits and under similar conditions to those observed at Vero. Following this discovery in the summer of 1925, a joint expedition under the auspices of the Bureau of American Ethnology of the Smithsonian Institution and Amherst College was organized for the purpose of further research at Melbourne. I was detailed to cooperate with Prof. F. B. Loomis of Amherst in carrying out this work, and the six weeks' carefully directed field-work which followed revealed three additional localities where human remains or artifacts were found in direct association with bones of extinct species of animals. All these finds, however, were at or near the top of the fossil bone-bearing layer, and for this reason were not accepted by the anthropologists as undisputed evidence of normal association.

Time and funds did not permit completing the exploration of these important and extensive deposits at Melbourne, and in February of the present year (1926) I was again temporarily transferred to the Bureau of Ethnology and detailed to continue this work begun by the Amherst-Smithsonian Expedition. Again lack of funds prevented completing the investigation, but the six weeks' work accomplished

yielded very satisfactory results. In the additional fossil material secured were specimens representing some important species new to this locality, and the geologic observations made at this time are proving to be valuable aids in the study of the general problems involved. For example, one of the most important specimens obtained on the previous expedition was a crushed human skull and jaws which had been found associated with fossil bones. But the exact position in the geological strata was not definitely determined, owing to the fact that much of the overburden or covering layer had been



FIG. 170.—Canal bank on golf course 2 miles west of Melbourne, Florida. Crushed fossil human skull *in situ* in upper layer of fossil-bone-bearing deposit. Skull is at right of trowel handle in middle foreground, as indicated by arrow.

removed before the skull was discovered. At the time it was made certain that the sedimentary layers above the specimen had previously not been disturbed since their deposit, but it was not quite clear whether the fossil skull belonged in the upper six inches of the Pleistocene fossil-bearing deposit, as it appeared, or whether it lay in the dividing zone between this bed and the overlying deposit. This doubt was caused mainly by the fact that the upper 10 inches of the lower bed was changed into a perceptibly darker hue than that observed in the main mass below. Going back to this locality last spring I extended the relatively small excavation which had been made the previous summer, but concluded to follow a different plan than



FIG. 171.—Excavation trench exposing vertical section near spot where was found human skull shown in figure 170. The undulating contact plane is here plainly seen.



FIG. 172.—Section of the deposits near spot where was found human skull shown in figure 170, showing the uneven bedding-plane between the lighter-colored fossil-bearing deposit below and the later deposits above.



FIG. 173.—Section on south bank of main canal about 3 miles west of Melbourne, Florida. Point of trowel indicates pieces of Indian pottery *in situ* in top layer of fossil-bone-bearing beds.



FIG. 174.—Typical flat country in the vicinity of Melbourne, Florida, showing scattered pines with heavy undergrowth of scrub-palmetto.



FIG. 175.—“Mulberry Mound.” An Indian burial mound and kitchen-midden at the north end of Lake Poinsett, St. Johns River, west of Cocoa, Florida.



FIG. 176.—Remnant of great Indian shell mound at Grant, Florida. This mound before being excavated for road-building was about 1,000 ft. long, more than 200 ft. wide, and in places 14 ft. deep. Dr. Henry M. Ami, of Ottawa, Canada, is seen pointing to broken pottery *in situ*.

that before adopted. Instead of stripping from the top, the excavation was carried forward with nearly perpendicular walls so that the formation could be studied in diagrammatic cross-section at all points. In this way it was clearly observed: first, that the bone-bearing layer was everywhere plainly distinguishable from the overlying strata; second, that the separation plane was uneven, showing there had been an erosional interval between the two periods of deposition; and third, that the portion of the bone-bearing layer following the undulations of the separation plane presented a uniformly darker color on top which faded gradually into the light color of the formation below. This was exactly the condition observed at the spot where the human skull was taken, hence it may now be confidently stated that its original burial place while near the top of this layer was definitely within it. It is unfortunate that the investigation at Melbourne could not be continued. The field is a promising one and doubtless would amply repay further exploration.

JAMES W. GIDLEY.

#### ARCHEOLOGICAL AND ETHNOLOGICAL STUDIES IN SOUTHEAST ALASKA

During April and May, 1926, H. W. Krieger, curator of ethnology in the U. S. National Museum was detailed to the Bureau of American Ethnology for the purpose of inspecting native houses and totem poles at the National Monument of Old Kasaan, with a view to their preservation. The National Monument of Old Kasaan was originally established by Executive order in 1907 amplified by the Presidential Proclamation of October 25, 1916. The monument thus established contains the abandoned Haida Indian village of Kas-a-an and the surrounding forested area containing about 40 acres. It fronts on Skaul arm of Kasaan Bay, on the east coast of Prince of Wales Island, and is about 40 miles by motor boat from Ketchikan, the largest town and the first port of call in Alaska for American steamers out of Seattle.

Kasaan, like most of the native villages of southeast Alaska, is abandoned, its former occupants having moved to fish-cannery towns or to towns like Ketchikan where a number of occupations and industries await them. Indians of Alaska have adopted white man's ways, and have never been wards of the nation like the Indians assembled on reservations within the United States. In accepting the new, however, they have forgotten or learned to disregard their own culture with its splendid claim to distinction as possessing the most unique and realistic examples of plastic sculpture of all aboriginal America.

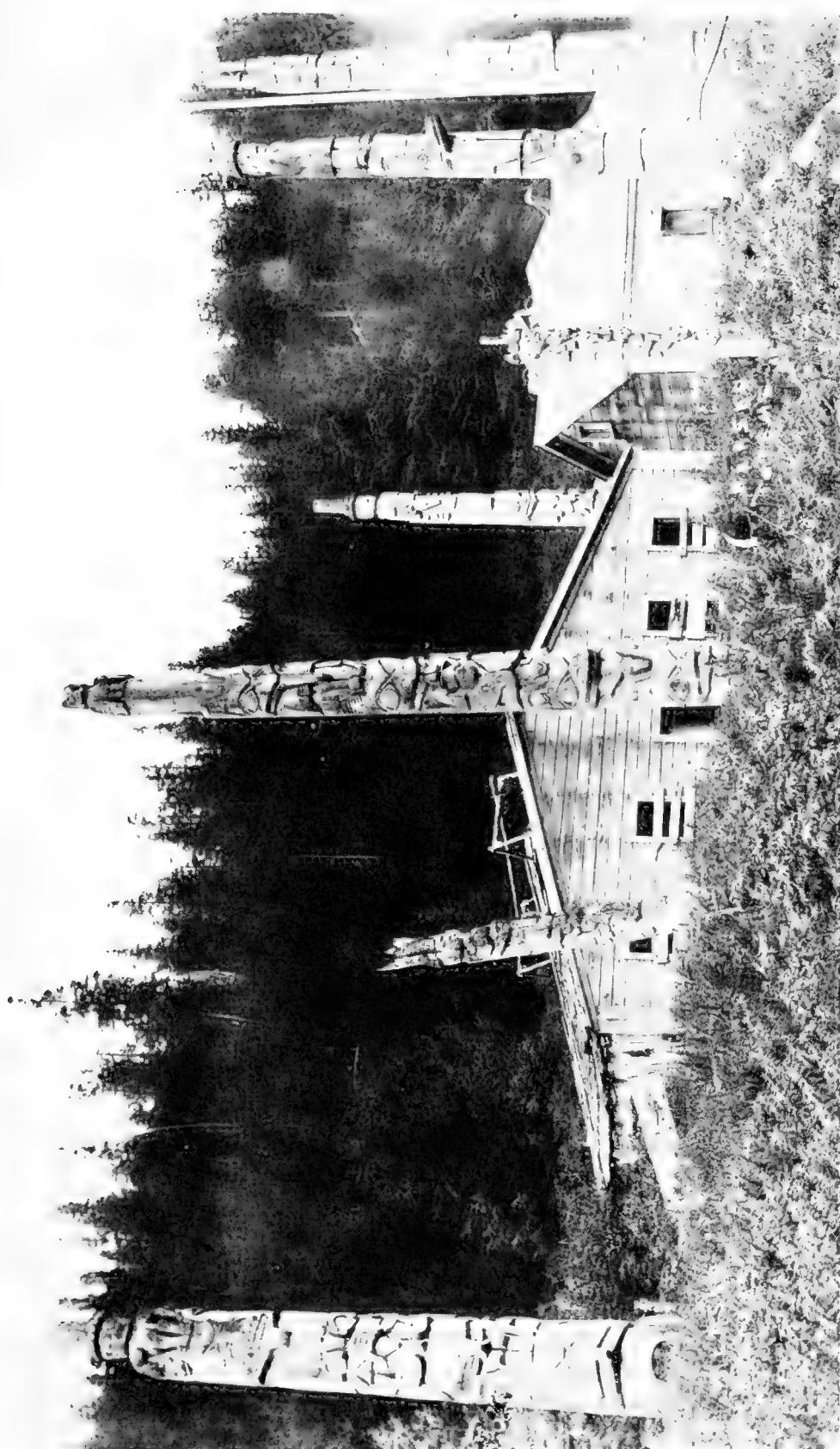


FIG. 177.—Eagle House "hut-nes," Kasaan. Built by Sanixat (Southeast), who assumed the name of the Southeast Wind in retaliation for the wrecking of his canoe in a southeast gale. The house is an old one, and originally there were no windows nor sawed boards on the front wall. Entrance was gained through a small opening reached by a stairway. The charred smoke hole frame may still be noted on the roof, which is covered with split cedar "shakes."

The abandoned village of Kasaan today consists of the ruins of houses and memorial columns. Many of the tall totem poles profusely decorated with carvings of animal and human figures representing



FIG. 178.—Frame and roof timbers of Eagle House "hut-nes" with "Eagle King's" totem pole at the front. This house is the sole remaining structure at Old Kasaan, and with the house of Jim Peel at New Kasaan, is the only surviving native house in southern southeast Alaska. Crests on pole are: eagle, at top; beaver, at bottom; bear, with protruding tongue, beaver, with large projecting upper incisor teeth, and figures illustrating the myth of "Raven Traveling," at center. See fig. 177.

the family crests are still standing. The region surrounding the abandoned village is virgin forest consisting of the giant cedar, spruce, hemlock, and a few other species. The village site itself was overgrown with alders and dense masses of the salmon berry. The salmon berry looks delicious, but is somewhat flat to the taste and is extremely

perishable when picked. Several black bear were seen feeding on these berries and on the succulent grasses within the shadow of the towering memorial columns or totem poles. As the island is uninhabited for many miles in the vicinity of the National Monument of Old Kasaan,



FIG. 179.—Side view of "Eagle House" with totem pole in foreground erected by a wealthy woman "Big Smoke Hole," the first to encounter white men; hence the crest representing a white man at the top. Beneath this is Raven with the moon in his beak. At bottom is the carved figure of "Duchtut," the strong man, splitting open a sea lion with his bare hands. See figs. 177 and 178.

game is rather abundant. Deer come down from the hills out of the forest to feed on the grasses and wild celery near the water or wherever there is a clearing. As there are literally hundreds of similarly situated islands scattered all along the coast of southeast Alaska, it has been thought that fox farming might prove a profitable industry. Thus far, however, the industry is in an experimental stage.

The view from the village of Kasaan is beautiful, looking out towards the distant islands with their hills and occasional snow-capped mountains, and the intervening water channels and inlets. If the site of this ancient Indian village had originally been selected from



FIG. 180.—Interior of Eagle House. Two benches or floor levels rise on each side of the centrally excavated pit. The hearth is at the center of the pit, and the remainder of the floor including the two benches is covered with split cedar slabs. See figs. 177-179.

the standpoint of beauty of location, the choice could hardly have been excelled.

Kasaan was originally a village belonging to a rival tribe, the Tlingit, who were probably driven away by the Haida, according to their traditions, more than 100 years ago. The name Kasaan in the Tlingit language means the "village on the rock." The Haida came from the south, originally from the Queen Charlotte Islands far out

to sea off the coast of British Columbia. The Haida Indians, like all the tribes along this island-studded coast, were great travellers, making journeys of hundreds of miles in their huge dugout war canoes, often for the mere love of adventure, but usually in search of new fishing grounds or to carry on trade with neighboring tribes. The Indian had to follow the salmon to its new spawning places whenever for unknown reasons it migrated to different spawning beds from those near the Indian's ancestral village. In his quest for food, the Alaska Indian was often forced to abandon his well established village with its large framed houses of split cedar slabs and decorative crested totem poles.

The reason for the coming of the Haida to Old Kasaan was of an entirely different order. Family life among them was communal and consequently rather complicated. It often led its members into difficulties. Each house was built large enough to accommodate two or three generations, together with their slaves and retainers. The house floor was arranged in platforms, each succeeding platform being built on a level two or three feet higher, beginning at the deeply excavated centrally located fireplace, until the outer platform or the one next to the walls of the house was reached. This platform was flush with the ground level on the outside. Each section of the house was assigned to different divisions of the large family. The head of the house, who was often the chief of the clan as well, together with his wife occupied the place of honor on the platform back of the carved house posts at the rear of the house. The slaves, strange to say, gathered and slept at the front of the house nearest the only exit.

The fire burned at the center on the lowest part of the excavated floor sections. In one house at old Fort Tongass there are nine different levels excavated so that the fireplace at the center appears from the front entrance to be at the bottom of a pit. The fireplace is a squared section of bare earth or stone; coals and ashes raise it a few inches above the floor level immediately surrounding, and it is enclosed with a frame of hewn logs or slabs. On this level, about the fire on the bare floor or on mats of woven cedar bark, with their feet toward the fire, slept the members of the family during cold and inclement weather.

The narrative of the coming of the Haida to Kasaan is an involved one and includes a story of family dissension culminating in the murder of one chief by his own brother, who was also his rival. The murder caused the villagers to take sides and led to the removal of the slayer and his adherents far to the north and to the ultimate settlement of Old Kasaan.

After an occupancy of considerably more than 100 years by the Kaigani family of the Haida, Kasaan was abandoned. About the year 1900 its entire population removed to the newly established village of New Kasaan some 40 miles distant on another arm of the same Kasaan Bay. This removal was due to the establishment of a salmon cannery there and to the offer of good wages during the canning season. This proved too much of an inducement to the Kasaan natives who were only too ready to adopt white man's ways and wages and who had already forgotten most of their ancestral lore in



FIG. 181.—Western end of Old Kasaan showing cemetery with carved memorial columns representing the family crests of killer-whale, sea lion, eagle, and bear. The dense forest growth in the background is mostly Douglas spruce, hemlock, and yellow cedar.

woodcraft and decorative art. No new totem pole has been built for more than 50 years and the art of totem pole carving is lost to the present generation.

As Kasaan appears today, after being abandoned for more than a quarter of a century, there is practically nothing remaining to remind one of its former glory but a row of tall totem poles facing the beach, still standing as erect as they were when placed there many years ago. The most recently erected pole is more than 50 years old and remains in a fair state of preservation. Many of the older poles still have sound heart wood, although the incised surface carvings crumble to the touch. The oldest poles have completely rotted away

leaving mere traces. It was the duty of the writer to attempt to preserve these realistically carved representations of human and animal figures and the totem pole itself wherever possible.

The task of restoring the abandoned village of Kasaan is practically an impossibility owing to the deterioration and decay of many years. No repair work has ever before been done. Houses have with one exception completely fallen into ruins. The Indians never repainted their memorial columns, once the pole was erected. The rotting process is practically continuous throughout the year. This may be better realized when one considers the number of rainy days in a year,



FIG. 182.—Central section of Old Kasaan as it appeared in 1924. Eagle House may be seen on the left, while the front house posts and roof beams of another house, "More-back House," is visible in the background on the right.

reaching a total of 235 at Ketchikan, the nearest observing station. Winters are mild and are hardly severe enough to freeze the rank vegetation. Alders and salmon berry bushes grow in profusion and have completely hidden from view the fallen timbers of the house frames. Large cedars and spruces grow out of what was once a house interior. In one case a cedar sprang up at the base of the hollowed back of a totem pole, and it has now grown up and filled the hollowed cavity, splitting the totem pole which still adheres to the living tree, forming two decorative panels. All remaining poles which were worth preserving were scraped. The rotted wood was removed and the pole was then given a treatment of creosote. No attempt to paint the poles in their original colors was attempted, as such expense would hardly

be justified unless tourist travel should increase materially and a caretaker could be maintained to keep down the alders and salmon berry brush so as to prevent any future danger of destruction by fire during the short dry season in the fall of the year. At Wrangell, at Ketchikan, and in the park at Sitka there are poles which have been repainted in their original colors. Attempts have been made to use the old native colors which consist of red ochre, chrome yellow, and a mordant composed of water and a gluey mass derived from crushed salmon eggs. These colors and several other native coloring agents produced a well blended effect and are not the glaring paints produced by modern white and red leads. Pigments derived from the mineral coloring matter in rocks and ores were formerly much used by the natives. The Indian was indeed an artist who was capable of carving the designs on the totem pole according to highly conventionalized patterns, and who also had the technical knowledge required to procure the proper paints and to properly apply them to the patterned designs in the conventional style.

The totemic memorial columns of tall cedars represent the highest achievement of the Northwest coast Indian. They were also his show property. If the Indian who wished to erect a memorial pole in honor of his maternal uncle was himself incapable of the task, he employed an expert or artist. These skilled wood carvers took as much as a year to complete the task. For his guidance, the native artist had a complicated set of pattern designs in wood. These panels were incised with sections of the conventional designs. It became thus the task of the artist to carefully fit these patterns to the pole to be carved, special effort being made to estimate the proper size of the pole, the entire front surface of which must be covered with the carved figures. No essential part of the animal figure crest must be omitted, although if cramped for space the figures were so highly conventionalized that what might appear to us as essential parts of the animal or human figure represented were often omitted, and no one was offended for all understood what was intended. It was high art with futuristic leanings. Then too the carver had to take into consideration the number of animal totems or crests to which the owner was entitled. If the one in whose honor the pole was being prepared was a great man in the village, he probably had so many totemic crests that the problem was one of overcrowding. If, on the other hand, there were not enough crests to fill the space of the front of the pole, the artist probably suggested that a smaller pole be selected. If this was not done, he could conveniently fill in the spaces between the animal crest carvings with representations of frogs and the ground worm. No

one claimed these lowly creatures as their animal protector, nor represented them among their crests. It was, moreover, an unpardonable offense against the amenities to have on one's pole more totems or crests than one was entitled to.

It is customary among the Tlingit and Tsimshian Indians to erect their totem poles several feet in front of their dwellings or in line several feet to the right or left of the house. At old Tongass village the writer found in front of the ruins of one of the largest houses in the village a number of poles which had been erected in honor of several maiden aunts of the former occupant of the house. The Haida at Kasaan built their totem poles in contact with the front of the house itself, a hole two or three feet square cut through the base of the pole serving as entrance to the house, ingress being possible only by crawling.

Occasionally a niche about one foot square was cut at the hollowed back of the pole some 15 feet above the ground. Into this recessed niche was placed a carved or painted box containing the cremated remains of the former head of the house in whose honor the pole had been erected. Several of such grave boxes were seen by the writer in the poles at Kasaan and at Village Island, another abandoned village.

The houses at Kasaan were placed in an irregular long row facing the shelving beach. The totem poles at the front of the houses are almost at the water's edge at high tide. The action of the salt water on the base of the pole undoubtedly served as a preservative of the wood as all the poles thus situated are still free from decay at their base while those farther removed from the beach are much rotted and decayed at the base.

The frame work of the house and the roof usually rest upon four posts commonly hollowed out at the back. Upon these house posts rest two enormous unhewn log plates sometimes each more than 50 feet long. These unhewn plates extend horizontally the entire length of the building without any other support than that of the end posts. These huge plates, the purlines, the hewn cedar planks for the side walls, "shakes" for the roof, and the logs for the posts and carved columns must be gathered from the forest with great labor, sometimes being brought from a considerable distance. They were towed to the village site where they were hauled up on skids. Forests of southeast Alaska are quite irregular, the large cedar and the spruces growing only in certain favored places where soil deposits are thick enough above the rock substratum to support their growth. Southeast Alaska will never prove a satisfactory place for farming operations as no-

where is the soil deep enough for the plow. The work of smooth finishing and assembling of timbers is undertaken at the site of the house to be erected.



FIG. 183.—Rear corner post of "More-back House" which was erected by Chief Skaul. The carved figures at top and bottom represent the bear, a crest often used by members of the Raven clan. At Kasaan, the raven crest was the vogue with adherents of the Eagle clan who lived for the most part in the western half of the village. The carved figure at the center of the post has to do with the adventures of Raven and the moon. See fig. 182.

Erection of a totem pole or a house was the occasion for much feasting and jollification by the Indians, calling to mind those social gatherings which attended barn raisings in colonial days in the United States. The day of the erection of the house was made known to the natives of neighboring villages sometimes months in advance. All

those who were invited to attend the event were expected to cooperate in the work of erecting the frame and posts. Rivalry sometimes developed between competing clans, each of which was assigned a different log plate to place into position.



FIG. 184.—All that remains of “Furthest Forward House” at Kasaan. Unusual form of house post carving.

The posts, never more than 10 feet high, are first raised into position by means of rope guys and props and firmly planted in deep holes. The log plates are next put into position with skids and parbuckles. Before the posts are firmly planted in the ground, the head of each is cut out to the shape of a crescent so as to exactly fit the log plate which is to rest on it. The plate is then rolled to within working distance of the posts and parallel to its final position. The posts are braced on the opposite side, while on the near side skids are rested

at an angle to form an incline up which the log plate is rolled. Ropes are rove over the top of the post, under and over the log, then back again over the post. The ropes serve as a parbuckle, take the weight of the log and hold it in position. Forked pike poles are rested against the log with their other ends in the ground to help the parbuckle take the weight as the plate is gradually rolled up, the poles being shifted as it rises. The combined efforts of the workers suffice to get the plate to the top of the incline. By means of pushing with poles and by pulling on the parbuckle the log is finally rolled into the rounded notch at the top of the house post. According to old accounts this work was conducted with much confusion, shouting, and sometimes fighting. The clan which finished first taunted their competitors who were still struggling to get the other log into position. The entire procedure, together with the festivities that followed the completion of the task, was the cause of much bad blood between neighboring villages.

The erection of memorial columns or totem poles was accomplished by means of poles, props, and rope guys in much the same manner that construction gangs erect telephone and telegraph poles. The essential difference is in the use of a forked pike pole by the Indians, the more modern method using steel-capped pike poles and the block and tackle.

Long hewn plates are grooved or beveled to receive the upper and lower ends of the split slabs forming the side and front and rear walls of the house. The top purlines form the supports for the roof which is made up of "shakes" or slabs of wood and bark held down by superimposed cross pieces and by rocks. In some of the newer houses at Kasaan the writer found large copper spikes and some made from wrought iron which held the spliced beams and girders in place. Usually there were only wooden pins and pegs placed at strategic points. The method relied on most for holding the framework together was dovetailing or the placing of interlocking mortises at the places of juncture of all beams and girder plates. Mere weight sufficed to keep the two huge main log plates in position.

The smoke hole is surmounted by a shutter which is closed in the direction of the wind. The shutter has a motion about the axle. When the wind changes and blows down the smoke hole a chain or rope is pulled and the shutter revolves to the other position against the wind. As the house faces the beach, and the wind usually blows up or down channel, the shutter faces one side or other rather than the front or rear of the house.

In the more recent years of their occupancy of Kasaan and other villages which are now abandoned, long voyages were undertaken by the natives to Port Simpson, at the head of Dixon Entrance, in British Columbia, for sawed boards and hardware to make a false front for their houses after the fashion of the houses of white men with a door and windows. This custom is reminiscent of the old pioneer store of early villages in the West, when the false store front with its high squared and impressive top section was almost an institution. It must be conceded that the old style of Indian house with its entrance through the base of the totem pole and its huge open smoke hole at the center of the roof, although minus windows, was architecturally more of a unit than the later Indian houses with their hardware and windows from Port Simpson.

During a recent visit by the writer to the village of New Kasaan, rather deplorable conditions with regard to ventilation and sanitation of native houses were observed. The Indian of today in southeast Alaska lives in a house built of sawed boards throughout. There are windows enough, but they are kept closed against the damp air without. There is invariably a stove in the center of the living room which consumes quantities of oxygen. If one were forced to choose between the evils of the cold unlighted slab side native Indian house and the poorly ventilated, unsanitary house of the Indian of today one would not hesitate in preferring the old purely native type of dwelling which was at once both health producing and artistically beautiful.

#### ARCHEOLOGICAL INVESTIGATIONS IN THE COLUMBIA RIVER VALLEY

During the spring and early summer months of 1926 a regional archeological survey of the middle and upper Columbia River valley was made by H. W. Krieger, curator of ethnology in the U. S. National Museum, on detail to the Bureau of American Ethnology. The project began with a study of the extensive collections obtained by members of the Columbia River Archeological Society from burials and surface finds at various ancient and historic Indian village sites and cemeteries.

Most noteworthy among the collections studied are those of Mr. H. T. Harding, of Walla Walla, Washington; of Messrs. Earl Simmons, Gibson, and Charles Simpson, of Quincy, Washington; and of Messrs. A. H. East, O. B. Brown, Guy C. Browne, Drs. R. T. Congdon, and T. H. Grosvenor, all of Wenatchee, Washington. Other collections studied are those of Dr. F. C. Evertsbusch and others at Pateros, Washington, the Eells collection at Whitman College, and

the extensive material collected by Dr. F. S. Hall and others for the State Museum, at Seattle. Enthusiastic interest in the project was shown by members of the Columbia River Archeological Society and others who have done pioneer work in locating many ancient villages and burial sites and in gathering and classifying many different types



FIG. 185.—View along the Columbia River at Vantage Ferry, Grant County, Washington. Many pictographs and petroglyphs appear on the western escarpment of columnar basalt near the water's edge. The low-lying bench land to the left was the site of a large pit house village.

of archeological material. Information as to location of sites and distribution of type specimens was in every instance cheerfully given.

The next step in the survey was the plotting of an archeological map of the Columbia and tributary valleys showing known village sites and cemeteries. A check was made on data already collected, amplified in several instances by a visit to the reported location of an isolated pit house ruin, village site, or cremation burial.



FIG. 186.—Petroglyphs pecked on the columnar basaltic rock escarpment of the Columbia River at Vantage Ferry, Beverly, and Rock Island, Washington.

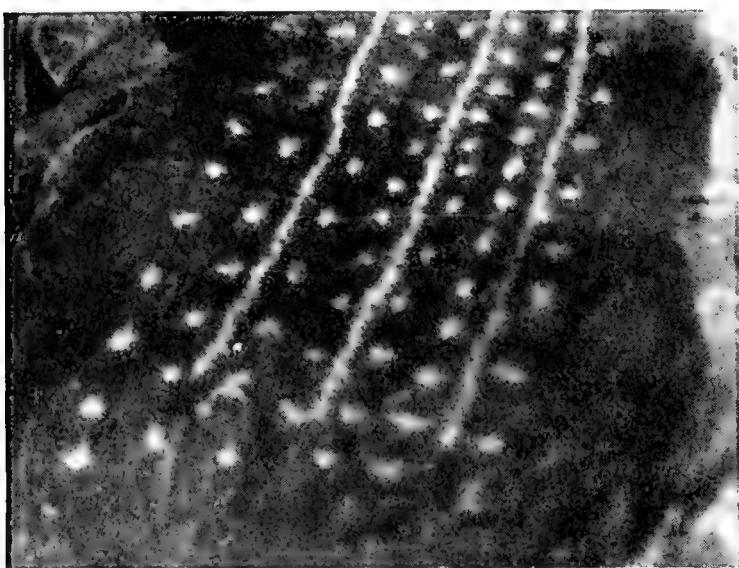


FIG. 187.—Petroglyphs pecked on the columnar basaltic rock escarpment of the Columbia River at Vantage Ferry, Beverly, and Rock Island, Washington.

The necessity for obtaining an archeological map of the valley at this time becomes apparent upon noting that the Indian village site is also the most favored location chosen by the modern orchardist for his planting. The reason for this lies in the need for protection, shelter, and an adequate water supply. A young orchard can best be successfully developed on a narrow level river bench which is high enough to be secure against seasonal flood waters and near enough to the towering escarpment of the river for shelter from the winds which sweep over the plateau above. It was just this type of narrow bench land, situated above danger from floods, and close to the precipi-



FIG. 188.—Gap in the gorge of the Columbia River where the Saddle Mountain range crosses at right angles to the river at the head of Priest Rapids. On the far bank of the river at the left was located the village of Smohalla, a leader in the Ghost Dance cult. Saddle mountains separated in historic times the territory of the Shahaptian Indians from that of the Salish tribes.

tous basaltic or lava capped river escarpment which was selected by the prehistoric occupant of the Columbia valley as a location for his permanent winter home. Here, also, under the well-nigh inaccessible barrier of the cliffs the primitive village group was secure from attack by marauding hostile bands.

As the middle and upper Columbia River valley is semiarid and barren to a degree, an adequate water supply is essential. The bench land selected as a village site must be neither too high nor the banks too steep to preclude easy access to the river. On the sloping beach below the bench were obtained useful varieties of stone pebbles, float boulders, and drift wood.

The mapping of archeological stations along the middle and upper Columbia and tributary rivers, such as the lower Yakima, Snake,

Walla Walla, Deschutes, Wenatchee, Methow, Okanogan and others began at the Dalles, in the state of Oregon, and continued to the environs of Kettle Falls, near the Canadian border. The falls and gorge of the Columbia River in the vicinity of the Dalles where the Columbia breaks through the Cascades, mark the beginning of the wooded area of the lower river which possessed an equally well marked distinct type of native culture, the Indian tribes there using principally wood in their arts and crafts, and the tribes of the middle and upper river being expert stone cutters and workers in horn and bone. Accompanied by Mr. H. T. Harding, a section of the river was covered as far north as Wenatchee. Mr. Harding's assistance was invaluable as he is intimately acquainted with the archeology of the region due to many years of experience in the field. Traces of Indian occupation are being rapidly obliterated by the plow, which is today the most productive excavator of antiquities. Where land has been brought under the plow, no record of former village sites and cemeteries is available other than that collected by members of the Columbia River Archeological Society.

Of the many sites inspected, excavation was undertaken at eight. The site yielding the largest collection of material such as ceremonial burial offerings and skeletal material was the prehistoric site at Wahluke in Grant County. There was no evidence of the burials there ever having been disturbed. Neither was there any indication of Hudson Bay Company influence in the objects recovered from the graves, such as trade beads of glass or of the shell beads which in historic times were traded to the Indians as a substitute for the *Dentalium indianorum*, or of iron tools and weapons.

The village of Wahluke is located on the east bank of the Columbia in Grant County, at a point where the river, which at this part of its course flows north, strikes a precipitous escarpment formed of yellowish gray volcanic débris and ash, known as White Bluffs. The Columbia here changes its course to a general southeasterly direction and completes the final segment of the course known as the big bend. Wahluke lies well within the territory occupied by the Shahaptian-speaking tribes within historic times, although early accounts and evidence obtained from the nature of the burial offerings indicated that in prehistoric times the entire area on the north and west bank of the Columbia as far south as the Dalles was Salish territory.

White Bluffs, which lies hard against the northern end of Wahluke, is a continuation of a range of hills known locally as Saddle Mountains from the fact that the range extending from west to east lies at right angles to the Columbia where it breaks through the narrow gorge just

below the confluence of Crab Creek, about 40 miles up the river from Wahluke. The old Indian term Wahluke is said to mean "where one can see and watch." If this is the correct meaning of the word, it would explain the term Sentinel Mountains, a name still applied to the same range. The flat east bank of the river opposite Wahluke



FIG. 189.—One of the many caves in the lava and vesiculate basalt bluffs of the Columbia River. Such caves were used as temporary habitations by hunting and fishing parties, also by bats. This cave, as may be seen, is half filled with debris composed of charred bat guano, camp refuse, such as fabrics, mats, and cooking stones, together with weapon parts and tools.

was known to the Indians as Yanuke "the place where animals come to the water and drink."

Burials at Wahluke were mostly primary and ceremonial cremation in type. Graves were placed in irregular rows along the river beach up-stream from the village proper. But one site along the river is known where a village had been built on top of a site and cemetery



FIG. 190.—A Wanapum or Columbia River Indian mother and two children in front of their tule mat covered tipi. The dog is of the type formerly kept by these Indians for the use of their shaggy coat of hair in blanket making.



FIG. 191.—Shahaptian Indian sweat house built up of tule reeds with matting of cat-tail rushes and covered over with earth. Still used by the Wanapum or Columbia River Indians. Located at the Lower Falls of the Yakima River, Benton County, Washington.

of an older date. This location, known as Simmon's graveyard is about five miles down-stream from Trinidad, the point where the Great Northern Railway crosses the Columbia. The flood waters of the river had covered the cemetery to a depth of six or more feet. A pit house village is erected over and immediately above it. At many places



FIG. 192.—Looking south from interior of Eagle House, Kasaan, across McKenzie Inlet, Kasaan Bay. Pete Williams, a Tlingit Indian belonging to Eagle clan, standing in foreground. See figs. 177-180.

along the Columbia there are similar strata of sedimentary deposits, each covering the burn and other evidence of the existence of a camp site or burial ground. These strata were formed at intervals of several years, probably generations. Temporary fishing camps which were abandoned at the close of the fishing season were left with camp débris, fragments of shell and other kitchen débris such as charred cooking stones, charcoal, and stone and bone implements. Some of these sites

are again exposed in later years when the stream forms a new channel or the flood waters erode the banks. At Pateros, the confluence of the Methow with the Columbia, seven layers of burn with intervening



FIG. 193.—Tipi used by the Wanapum or Columbia River Indians at the Lower Falls of the Yakima River, Benton County, Washington. The habitation is a temporary one and is constructed of tule reeds covered with skins and burlap. The old type of semisubterranean pit house was abandoned before the time of the Lewis and Clark expedition.

sedimentary deposits are exposed on the flanks of a little island formed on the Methow side of the channel.

Cremation graves are usually three or more feet below the surface when undisturbed. A layer of flat stones was invariably placed in oblong or circular form as a protective cover against marauding animals and erosion of the loose sand bench formation by the action of the wind. Loose sand with a slight covering of soil or sometimes dry powdery volcanic débris makes up the formation of the bench above the river bank. This was excavated with crude shovel-shaped paddles of stone, or with the hand aided by the digging stick. The body to be cremated was placed on a piece of matting of Indian hemp, tule



FIG. 194.—A prehistoric Indian grave at Wahluke, Grant County, Washington. The burial is protected with a circular ring of boulders which have been carried up from the river beach. Among the many ceremonial burial offerings found within this grave were no objects such as glass beads or iron knives which might indicate Hudson Bay Company influence.

reeds, or cat-tail rushes. About the body, which was oriented sometimes with head up-stream, sometimes to the east, or, again apparently haphazard, were arranged the personal belongings of the dead. The pyre was built up of logs of driftwood. Many of the objects placed in the grave are merely charred; others, including the skeletal material, are completely burned or calcined. No indications of burial houses such as were erected by the tribes on the lower river were found at Wahluke or elsewhere on the middle Columbia.

In some instances the skeletons were oriented in such position as to suggest secondary burial, parts of several skeletons in such cases being



FIG. 195.—Stages in the production of a pipe. Beginning at the lower left may be seen a roughly cut and grooved section of steatite. The next step shows the tubular outline formed by crumbling and pecking; the third object is perforate and shows polishing, while the pipe at the right is complete except for the reed mouthpiece which is not shown. The steatite bowl pipe at the top right is modern and is made from a design showing influence of trade pipes. All obtained from graves at various sites along the Columbia River by Mr. A. H. East.



FIG. 196.—Types of stone pipes found in graves at various sites in the Columbia River valley, in the state of Washington. The tubular soapstone pipe at the right indicates contact with Californian tribes, while the three tubular soapstone pipes at the center are the type made by the ancient inhabitants of the Columbia and Fraser river valleys. The bowl pipe with carving of human face at the side is of the type made by the tribes of the northwest Pacific coast. The large catlinite bowl pipe with inlay of lead around the margin may have come from the Sioux or other tribes of the Plains.

jumbled all in a heap. Individual cremation burials were never secondary, the burial being effected with knees flexed and skull facing downward. Incineration was usually so complete as to prevent the securing of any one complete skeleton. Several fragments of charred skeletons including several skulls were recovered from the burn, providing sufficient material to reconstruct later at the Museum. Skulls showed in every case a frontal-occipital deformation. Skulls from graves other than at Wahluke do not always show this deformation,



FIG. 197.—Frame of Salish type of sweat house on west bank of the Columbia River six miles below Pateros.

leading to the assumption that the practice was not general. The physical type is that of the tribes which occupied the upper plateau country within historic times. Skulls found in graves accompanied by ceremonial offerings having a distinctly Hudson Bay Company aspect, such as trade beads of glass, and metal objects of copper, brass, and iron, were in every instance of the same type as those occurring in prehistoric graves.

Many of the objects found in the burn among the charcoal and charred bones were objects of daily use in the life of the Plateau Indian of historic times. Most of the larger pieces as bowls and pestles were intentionally broken at burial. Objects found included

basketry, matting, objects of stone, wood, bone, horn, shell, human and dog hair, and hammered nuggets of native copper. No pottery was made by the ancient occupants of the upper Columbia valley, nor were utensils or bowls of wood discovered. This seems strange when it is noted that other objects shaped from driftwood occur in the graves intact; also many ornamental objects formed from jade, dentalium, haliotis, soft slate, and lead inlay, all of which must have been brought from the Pacific coast, British Columbia, or Alaska. It would appear from this that the burials at Wahluke are of a date preceding that of the wood-working tribes of the lower Columbia.

#### ARCHEOLOGICAL WORK IN LOUISIANA AND MISSISSIPPI

Mr. Henry B. Collins, Jr., assistant curator of ethnology, U. S. National Museum, was engaged from the middle of April to the latter part of June in archeological field-work in Mississippi and Louisiana for the Bureau of American Ethnology. The greater part of this period was given to investigations along the Louisiana Gulf Coast, a region which was practically unknown from an archeological standpoint. This section of Louisiana is but slightly above sea level and consists for the most part of great stretches of marsh, habitable only along the narrow ridges of comparatively high land that border the many lakes and bayous. It is not a region which might be expected to have supported either a large or a very highly developed aboriginal population, and yet unmistakable evidence was found that in pre-Columbian times Indians had lived here in considerable numbers, and that some of them possessed a culture closely allied or identical in general to that found throughout the widespread mound area to the east and north.

The investigations were begun at Pointe a la Hache, on the Mississippi River about 40 miles below New Orleans. About five miles southwest of Pointe a la Hache was found an important group of mounds, nine in number, the largest of which was between 40 and 50 feet high, over a hundred feet in diameter, conical in shape, and with a flat top. The other mounds were lower but were of considerable basal diameter and were all covered with an almost impenetrable growth of palmettos, vines, briars, and other vegetation. These mounds had been built on a ridge of land at the very edge of the marsh and their location was known to only a few fishermen and trappers.

From Pointe a la Hache, Mr. Collins proceeded to Houma, in Terrebonne Parish, and examined a number of mounds and shell heaps.

Here he was fortunate in having the co-operation of Mr. Randolph A. Bazet, who is deeply interested in the local archeology and who was able to supply valuable information on the many earth mounds and shell deposits of Terrebonne Parish. Such remains were found in unexpected numbers along the lakes and bayous, ranging from comparatively small accumulations of shells mixed with charcoal, pot-sherds, bones and other refuse to huge deposits of the same material, or "islands" as they are locally called, sometimes a hundred yards or more wide, about 10 feet above the marsh level, and extending in some cases for a distance of almost a quarter of a mile. These Terre-



FIG. 198.—Mound on the Fairview Plantation, Berwick, La. About six feet below the surface was a thin stratum of fire-burned earth in which were found seven pits or fireplaces.

bonne Parish shell heaps, or kitchen middens, and the others throughout southern Louisiana, are composed almost entirely of the shells of a small brackish water clam, *Rangia cuneata*, which is very common in the bayous and lakes of the Gulf region. They represent merely the accumulated kitchen refuse of the Indians who once lived along these water ways. The clams were eaten, and the shells, along with other trash, were cast aside until in the course of time an extensive heap was formed.

After devoting some 10 days to the mounds and shell heaps of Terrebonne Parish, investigation was made of those to the west and north, at Gibson, Lake Palourde, Bayou l'Ours, Berwick, Charenton and Avery Island. Having examined and carried on minor excava-

tions at these localities. Mr. Collins continued westward to Pecan Island in the southern part of Vermillion Parish where he remained for three weeks.

Pecan Island, lying between White Lake and the Gulf, is a long narrow strip of land, averaging less than 200 yards in width, and extending across the marsh for fifteen miles in a general east and west direction. It is the same type of formation as Grand Chenier and other narrow parallel ridges of land found in the marsh region which have resulted from storm wave action throwing up old beach material such as sand and finely crushed shell. Pecan Island today



FIG. 199.—Mound on the property of Mr. Ulysses Veazey, Pecan Island, Vermillion Parish, La.

supports a population of some 400 people, whose only means of communication with the outside world is by the mail boat which makes the 57-mile trip from Abbeville once a week. That it was also inhabited by Indians at an early date is shown by the presence of 21 artificial mounds and considerable quantities of potsherds and other surface refuse on the island. These mounds proved to be of two distinct groups, those on the property of Mr. J. Morgan, four in number, being the larger, with an average basal diameter of over 100 feet and a height ranging from five to twenty-five feet. These four mounds were stratified, with several thick layers of crushed shell and sand (the material of which the island is largely composed) separated by thin strata of soil mixed with charcoal, animal bones and other débris,



FIG. 200.—At its eastern end Pecan Island divides into several long narrow ridges. This view shows the main ridge viewed from Cypress Point, from which it is here separated by a stretch of marsh.



FIG. 201.—Small mound surrounded by marsh at Cypress Point, on Pecan Island, La.

thus revealing successive levels of occupancy and affording a clear picture of the manner in which the mounds were constructed. The mounds of the second type, most of which were on the property of Mr. Ulysses Veazey, were unstratified. Human bones were found in two of the large Morgan mounds and in one mound on the Veazey

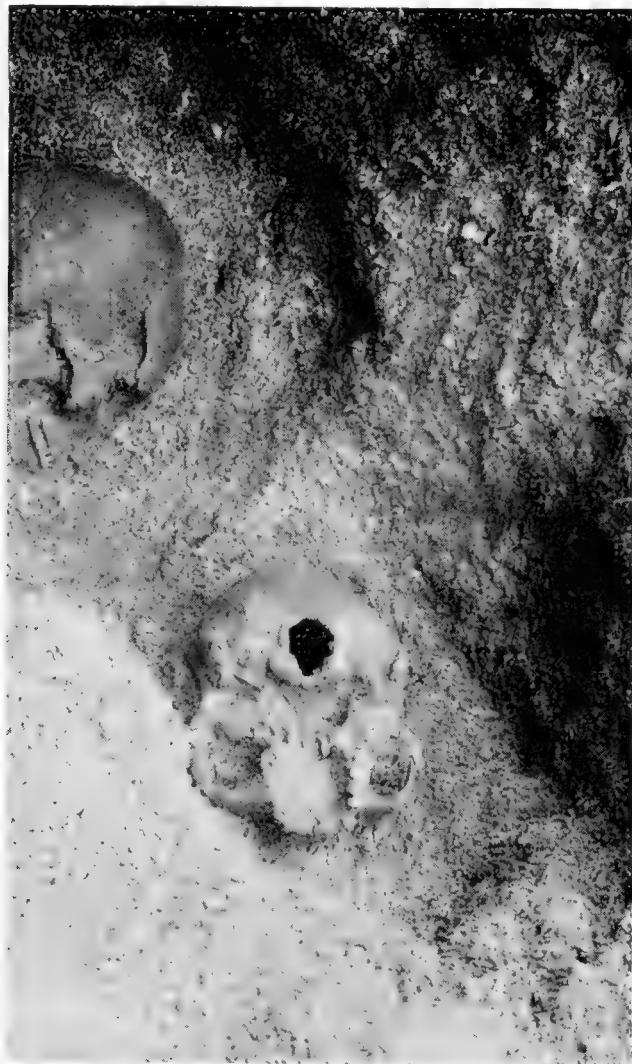


FIG. 202.—Detached skulls in Copell burial ground on Pecan Island. The bones when uncovered were soft and usually broken, but all skulls, some fifty in number, were saved and have been repaired.

place. The skulls from the former locality were all of the well-known "flat-head" type, which resulted from the practice of tightly binding the head during infancy. Skulls from the Veazey mound and those from another burial ground on the property of Mr. John Copell, which proved to belong to the same culture, were for the most part undeformed. A similar distinction was observed in the material re-

covered from these mounds, indicating that the two types represented different cultures. The objects associated with burials in the Veazey mounds and the Copell cemetery, while not especially abundant, were typical of those usually found in mounds in other parts of the country. These included chipped stone and worked bone arrowpoints; the bone end of an atlatl or "spear thrower"; beads and other ornaments of shell; large double-disk or spool shaped ear ornaments of slate covered with native sheet copper; various types of worked stone, shell and bone implements; lumps of galena; hematite; bitumen; and decorated potsherds of a characteristic type. The Morgan mounds, on the other hand, produced no such material, but the invariable flattening of the



FIG. 203.—Large kitchen-midden, or shell heap, on Chenier du Fond, south of Grand Lake, Cameron Parish, Louisiana.

skulls, the different construction of the mounds themselves, and the quite distinctive type of pottery, all point clearly to a different culture.

Pecan Island was the most western point on the Louisiana coast at which artificial mounds were found, but kitchen middens were found to continue westward and there are evidences that these extend well into Texas. After examining the aboriginal remains as far west as Grand Chenier in Cameron Parish, Mr. Collins returned eastward and began excavation of a group of three large mounds on the property of Mr. Adolph Melanson, at Gibson, in northern Terrebonne Parish. These mounds were stratified in much the same manner as the four large mounds on Pecan Island, and although a few burials were found in one of them it was obvious that all three had been erected primarily for habitation purposes.

Considering the evidence thus obtained by reconnoissance and excavation in the Louisiana Gulf Coast region, several points of interest develop. First, there is here found the most southern and western extension thus far recorded of the wide-spread and highly developed mound culture of the Mississippi Valley and Gulf States. The immediate cultural affiliations of this southern Louisiana mound area is seen to be toward the east, forming a direct connection along the Gulf Coast with Florida. The strongest evidence for this deduction is found in the pottery, certain types of which are practically identical from Florida to western Louisiana; these consist of the "checker-board" design, produced by the application of a stamp, and of enlarged rims bearing characteristic incised and punctate decoration. The exact identification of the builders of these Louisiana mounds and shell heaps will, of course, be difficult. The western part of the Louisiana coast, including Pecan Island, was inhabited in historic times by the Attacapa, a cannibalistic tribe of low culture. They could hardly have been the people responsible for either of the two Pecan Island cultures. However, they may have left behind some of the shell heaps here described, although the shell heaps cannot as a class be separated culturally from the earthen mounds. Further to the east were the Chitimacha, much more advanced than the Attacapa, and if the descendants of the prehistoric mound-building tribes of southern Louisiana are to be sought nearby, the Chitimacha might well fit into the rôle. The undoubted cultural connection with the coastal regions of Mississippi, Alabama and Florida, however, suggest the strong possibility that there may have been a direct tribal movement in one direction or the other.

The Louisiana work was completed about the middle of June, when Mr. Collins proceeded to Marion County in southern Mississippi and located seven ancient Indian village sites. From there he went to eastern Mississippi and succeeded in locating the sites of two old Choctaw villages, which were described by French and English explorers as early as 1729, but the present locations of which were unknown. These villages were Chickachae in Clarke County and Okatalaya in Newton County. The potsherds from these village sites were of the same type as those found on other historic Choctaw sites in 1925. This is a ceramic type which is restricted to comparatively recent Choctaw sites and which is quite different from the earlier mound pottery.

On July 1 Mr. Collins proceeded to Philadelphia, Miss., to continue the anthropometric studies of the living Choctaw begun in the

summer of 1925. The present investigation was made possible by an appropriation from the American Association for the Advancement of Science. Seventy-two adult Choctaws of both sexes were measured, which number, together with those obtained in 1925, affords an adequate idea of the physical type of the modern Choctaw. The number of Choctaw still remaining in Mississippi is around 1,000. Unlike some other Indian tribes they are not mixing to any great extent with whites, nor have they done so for some years past. However, they are far from being full blooded as a group, due to infiltration of white and negro blood at an early date.



FIG. 204.—Group of Choctaw Indians of the Conehatta district, Newton County, Miss. Mr. T. J. Scott of the Choctaw Agency, in back row.

Among those whose interest and co-operation aided the work in Louisiana and Mississippi, particular thanks are due to Senator E. S. Broussard; Father Girault, of Pointe a la Hache, La.; Mr. R. A. Bazet and Dr. Marmande, Houma; Mr. J. A. Pharr and Mr. W. B. Reed, Morgan City; Mr. and Mrs. Sidney Bradford and Miss Sarah McIlhenny, Avery Island; Prof. C. S. Brown, University, Miss.; Mr. T. J. Scott, Philadelphia, Miss.; and Mr. Rufus Terral, Quitman, Miss.

#### ARCHEOLOGICAL FIELD-WORK IN ARIZONA

During the summer of 1926, from the closing days of May to the end of August, Dr. J. Walter Fewkes, Chief of the Bureau of American Ethnology, excavated and repaired a little known ruin about six

and a half miles east of Flagstaff, at the base of Elden Mesa. To this ruin he gave the name Elden Pueblo. He was assisted in this field-work by Mr. J. P. Harrington, ethnologist, and Mr. A. W. Wilding, stenographer, both of whom contributed to the success of the expedition. Valuable assistance was rendered by Mr. J. C. Clarke, Custodian of the Wupatki National Monument, and by Prof. H. S. Colton, of the University of Pennsylvania, both of whom spent much time at the ruin and aided in many ways. These gentlemen called Dr. Fewkes' attention to the clearing in the pine trees that indicated the site of a prehistoric building which had been long suspected by a few local residents. The discovery of Elden Pueblo, or rather the demonstration that the clearing indicated a pueblo site, was an important one, since it opened up an extensive area where many small ruins occur but of which practically nothing is known save obscure sites. The work at Elden Pueblo developed a new type of building characteristic of the region south of the Grand Canyon and west of the Little Colorado, extending west and south to the Lower Gila, the massive ruins of which, known as compounds, attracted attention as far back as the beginning of the seventeenth century.

This pueblo was called by Prof. Colton, Sheep Hill Ruin,<sup>1</sup> but has been given its present name from the mesa which towers over it on the west. The ruin is situated about 200 yards from the National Old Trails Highway, not far from where the road to Tuba City branches from the main thoroughfare. This road is a much used one along which daily, in full view of Elden Pueblo, pass many automobiles with tourists keenly interested in the scenic wonders of the country and in the attractive remains of the former inhabitants. Very few of these tourists passed without stopping to inspect the work the Bureau was doing in bringing to light this remarkable relic of the past.

The mound which covered Elden Pueblo was not very attractive as an archeological site when work began. It was devoid of trees, surrounded by a pine forest, and covered with bushes and stones. Indistinct lines of rocks were visible on the surface of the ground, but even these could not be traced many feet. No standing walls existed above ground, the rooms later excavated having been filled level to the top with fallen stones, earth and sand. The general appearance of the site before excavation is shown in figure 205. Several old residents of Flagstaff claimed they had often herded stock or sheep over

<sup>1</sup> In his manuscript now awaiting publication in the Bureau of American Ethnology. The name Elden Pueblo is there applied to another site.



FIG. 205.—Elden Pueblo before excavation.



FIG. 206.—West wall of Elden Pueblo after excavation. (Photograph by A. W. Wilding.)

the site but never dreamed that under the surface of the earth there existed so many walls and relics of a former pueblo. Taking as guides the few stones in line, the outside walls of the rectangular building (fig. 206) were revealed by a trench dug to the level of the foundation

### North Cemetery

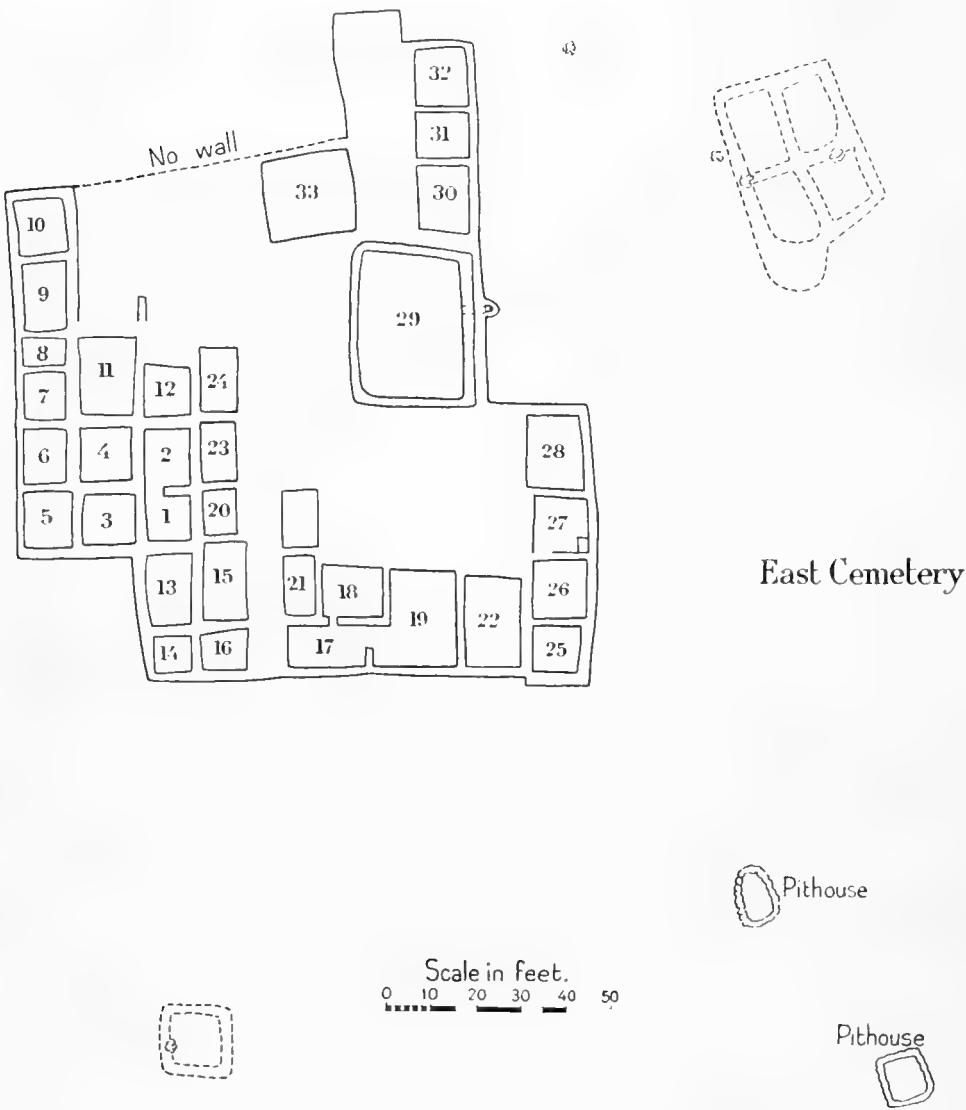


FIG. 207.—Sketch map of Elden Pueblo.

and extending entirely around the ruin. When once this bounding wall had been determined the contents of the rooms, composed of the fallen tops of walls, were dug out and the number of chambers determined. The most laborious part of this work was the removal to a distance from the ruin of the rocks and other material that filled the rooms or had accumulated outside their bounding walls.



FIG. 208.—Elden Pueblo, showing south wall and recess in the southwest corner. (Photograph by J. W. Fewkes.)



FIG. 209.—Elden Pueblo from the northwest; Sheep Hill in the distance. (Photograph by J. W. Simmons.)

Judging from the ground plan shown in the accompanying sketch (fig. 207), Elden Pueblo was a massive walled building composed of large chambers used for domiciles or granaries forming a lower story, upon which a second was built, especially evident on the western end, where, although considerably broken down, fragments of a roof rested on top of the lower rooms, with rudiments of upper walls. As will be seen by an examination of figures 206, 208, and 209, Elden Pueblo was a rectangular structure 145 by 125 feet, oriented approximately east-west. A complete wall was missing on the north side. The standing walls varied in height from about two feet at the lowest to seven feet at the highest point (fig. 210).



FIG. 210.—Recess in the exterior wall on the southwest corner, showing highest point in the wall. (Photograph by J. W. Fewkes.)

This latter occurred at the angular inset of the southwest corner, where there are indications of a shrine near a megalith forming the foundation, under which was a recess containing two or three small undecorated clay vessels and a number of rock concretions. From its position at the southwest angle of the building, facing the sunset point at the winter solstice, this shrine may be supposed to represent the winter solstice house of the sun, or the place where offerings to the sky god were placed, in the Elden Pueblo worship.

The masonry of Elden Pueblo is crude, as would be expected in a ruin of great age. Stone slabs standing on edge and megaliths occur as foundations in several places, and although here and there we find stones laid in courses, this is not a common mural characteristic. Large stones alternating with rubble thrown roughly together and exhibiting

no evidence of being shaped by human hands are most abundant. In this respect the walls are quite unlike those of the buildings situated in the Wupatki National Monument, some 25 miles away, or in the middle valley of the Little Colorado.

The secular rooms are square or rectangular in shape, but there is one room, recognized at once as different from the others in size and function, which was not secular but rather communal or ceremonial, later identified as a kiva. This kiva was indicated by a depression in the surface and as is customary was situated half underground. It lies near the northeastern corner of the pueblo, surrounded on three sides by secular rooms and by a wall only on the east. It is large and rectangular with rounded corners, a low seat or banquette extending completely around the inner wall. This banquette has no vestiges of pilasters resting on it for roof supports, the roof evidently having been held up by vertical logs set in the floor. A ventilator shaft opens into the room midway in the east wall at floor level. The vertical portion of this shaft is enclosed by stone masonry bulging from the external wall of the room. The fallen rock and adobe within this ceremonial room rendered it impossible to detect a deflector (wind-shield) or fire hole in the floor, and the indications are from the amount of charcoal and absence of roof beams that there had been a conflagration in this room before or after the pueblo fell into ruins. A comparison of this kiva with one partially excavated at Wupatki, and with those at Marsh Pass, Arizona, shows a great similarity. This likeness supports an Indian legend that the Marsh Pass people were the same race as the ancient Snake Clan, still represented at Walpi on the East Mesa. Very few objects of Indian manufacture were found in the rooms of Elden Pueblo, and although there were a few bowls and one or two well-preserved human skeletons, these were so few in comparison with mortuary objects from the cemeteries that a consideration of them will be left to a final report on the ruin.

There were many good metates and manos of customary pueblo shape and several stone implements, axes, mortars, spear-points, arrowheads, and the like, a consideration of which would enlarge this preliminary account too much. There should be mentioned, however, a type of paint-grinding stones similar to those from Casa Grande. A spindle whorl may be mentioned because instead of being of stone, thin and perforated like those from the pueblo ruins, it is of clay, thick, almost spherical, like Mexican spindle whorls, identical with several elsewhere figured from Casa Grande. Another form of spindle whorl has a groove around the rim, also suggesting Mexican influence.



FIG. 211.—Incised deer leg bone used, with feathers attached, as a hair ornament. (Length  $7\frac{1}{2}$ "; width 1".)

Many bone needles were found in the rooms, a few bearing incised decorations. One bone object, figure 211, was a hairpin or ornament worn in the hair. Similar carved bones with attached feathers are still used by the Hopi and Zuñi warriors, as shown in the discussion of the possible use of one of these objects from Youngs Canyon, 12 miles from Elden Pueblo. On the cranium of one of the skeletons, figure 212, found in the Elden Pueblo cemetery there was a similar bone hairpin, still in place.

Two cemeteries were located in the work, one on the eastern, the other on the northern side of the pueblo. Many skeletons and mortuary objects were taken from these burial places. There may have been cemeteries also on the south and west sides, as a burial was found near the west wall a number of years ago when a logging road was constructed through the pine forest. Although a few "test holes" were dug on these sides, no systematic excavations were made there by the Bureau's expedition, which confined itself to the east and north cemeteries of the pueblo. These cemeteries, however, were not completely dug out on account of limitation of funds, but other interments may be brought to light by future archeologists.

There was nothing on the surface of the ground to indicate the position of skeletons in the cemeteries, but the remains of the dead were found by trenching or by probing with iron rods. The number of skeletons located was about 150, many of which were in fairly good condition, but in a much larger number the component bones were either missing or so much broken that they were of very little scientific value. After a skeleton had been located and the mortuary bowls and other objects which accompanied it had been removed with care they were replaced about the remains and a photograph made of the interment *in situ*, showing the relative position of accompanying objects (fig. 213).

There is some variety in the positions in which the dead were placed in their graves. As a rule,

however, they lay on their backs, although a few were placed on their sides; but there were no flexed burials. Some of the skeletons were a few inches under the surface, others several feet below it. The latter were accompanied by the same kinds of pottery as that accompanying the shallow burials. As a rule, to which there were exceptions, the skeletons were oriented with the head to the east. Double burials in the same grave, infant internments, and



FIG. 212.—Burial showing position of the effigy of an unknown animal at the pelvis, and carved deer tibia (shown in fig. 211) between vase and the skull. (Photograph by J. P. Harrington.)

a skeleton of a woman with skull fragments of an embryo in place were noted. In one grave was found the skull of a dog, and bones of other mammals and antelope horns occurred in several graves.

One of the most interesting graves was that which had the skeleton encased or covered by a hard crust of adobe (fig. 214), but this seems to have been the only instance of this form of burial. In no instance was the skeleton enclosed in a stone cyst as occurs so often at Wupatki. Individual stones standing on edge were sometimes found, but whether these were placed in that position for a purpose could not be deter-

mined. The dead did not appear to have had any wrappings when buried; if so, these wrappings had long since disappeared. They were accompanied by their ornaments, such as bracelets made of shell, necklaces, turquoise ear pendants, finger rings, and other adornments. Shell and stone beads of a necklace of considerable size were sifted out



FIG. 213.—Burial with vertical rock like a head-stone and various mortuary objects, including 6 shell bracelets on left forearm. (Photograph by J. W. Simmons.)

of the earth surrounding the neck of one skeleton. Several paint grinders and one or two mortars and pestles were taken from the graves, but a larger number were found on the floors of the rooms.

There were also clay images of quadrupeds and a small clay effigy of a bird (figs. 217, b, c) with outstretched wings. Miniature vessels, corrugated or painted black on white, often accompanied the dead. A particularly fine small cup of black and white ware with graceful



FIG. 215.—Burial shown in figure 214 with crust of adobe removed. (Photograph by J. W. Simmons.)

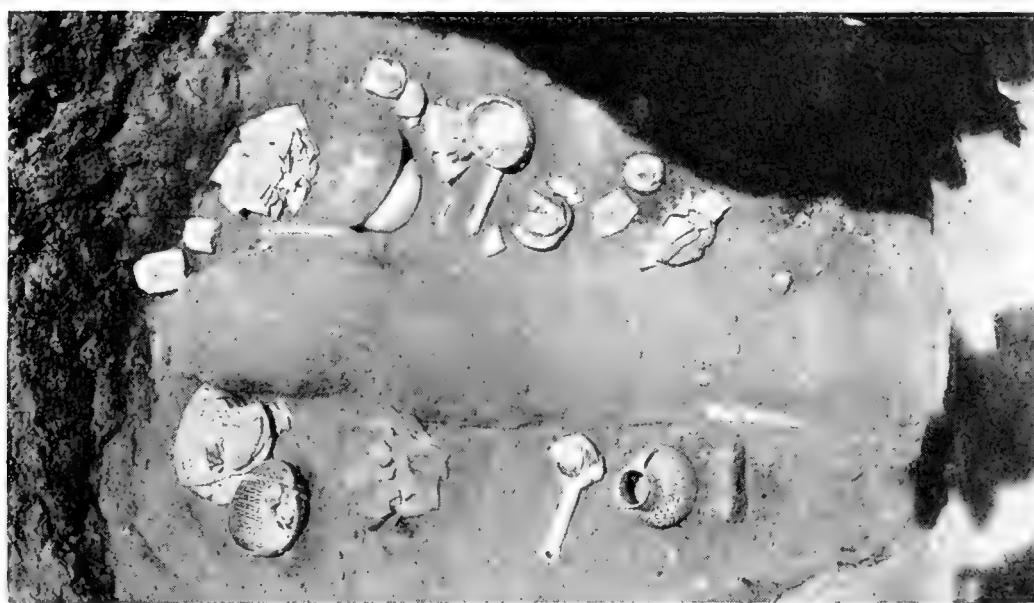


FIG. 214.—Burial with skeleton covered with a hard crust made of adobe, showing disposition of mortuary pottery. (Photograph by J. W. Simmons.)

neck and handle (fig. 217, a) lay over the breast of a priest. This vessel probably once contained medicine water.

By far the most numerous mortuary objects obtained in the Elden Pueblo graves were pottery vessels or utensils made of burnt clay. Each skeleton was accompanied by several pieces of pottery, differing in form, color, and other features, but all characteristic of the ruin. Among the objects represented were ollas, vases, bowls, jugs, dippers, ladles, effigy jars and other forms. Some of these are painted, others are plain pieces without decorations, but there were no specimens of true glazed ware, leading to the conclusion that, in common with the

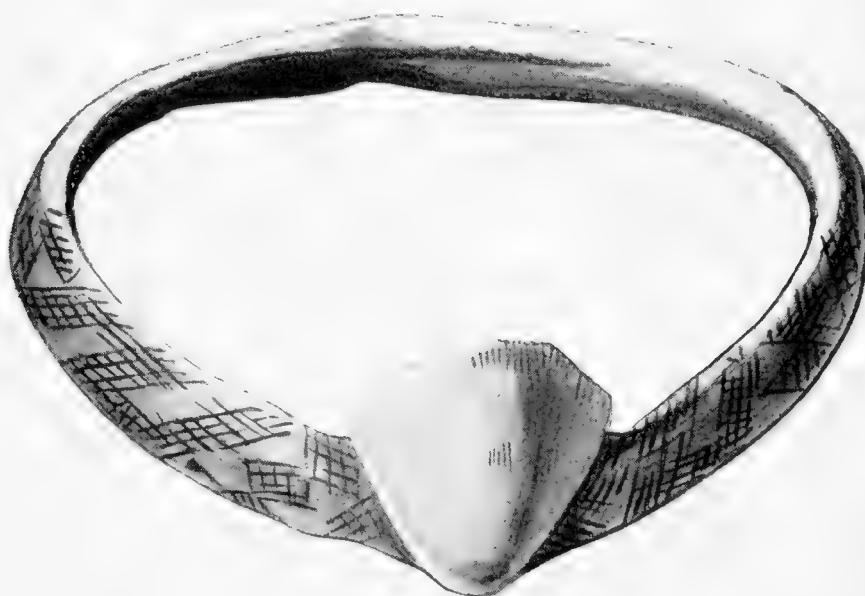


FIG. 216.—Bracelet made of Pacific Coast clam shell (*Pectunculus*), similar to those on the left forearm of fig. 213. (Diam.  $3\frac{3}{8}$ ".)

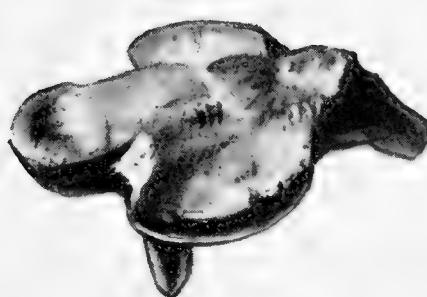
San Juan region, glazing of ceramics had not yet come into vogue at Elden Pueblo when it was in its prime.

As a rule Elden Pueblo pottery is not of the finest texture—some specimens are very coarse—nor are the decorations carefully made, although variegated. The fact that a relatively large number of pots and bowls were small naturally attracted attention. As several appear too minute for utensils it has been suggested that some of them were specially made as mortuary vessels. None of the vessels was punctured or "killed" before burial, and only one specimen had a "life-line" or break in the surrounding bands.

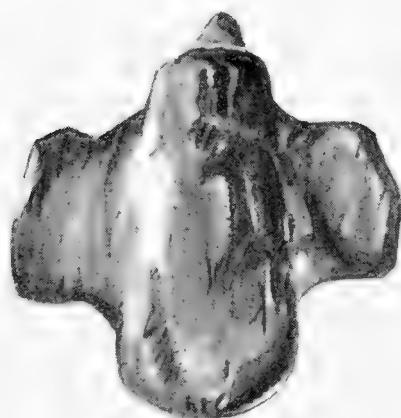
The corrugated and coiled ware largely represented at Elden Pueblo appears to be contemporaneous with the black and white specimens which are equally abundant. The latter are coarser than



*a*



*b*



*c*



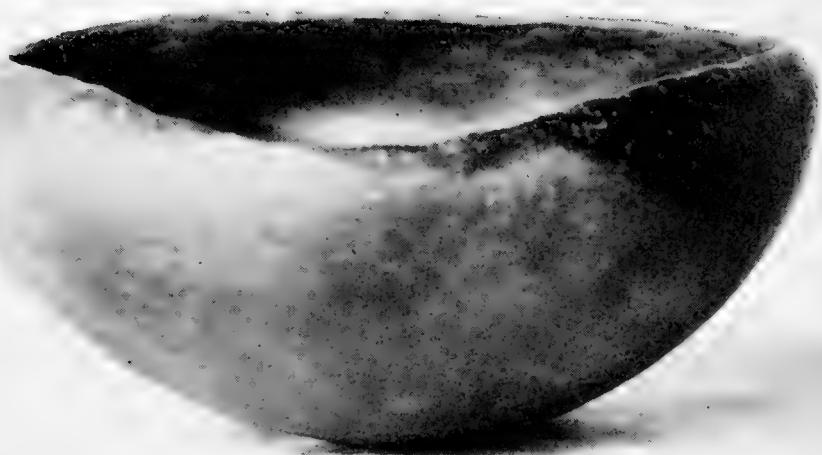
*d*

FIG. 217.—Small pottery objects and clay image of a bird. *a*, Medicine cup from breast of a skeleton; *b*, *c*, Lateral and dorsal view of a bird fetish; *d*, Medicine vessel.

*a*, Largest diam.,  $1\frac{3}{8}$ "; height  $1\frac{1}{2}$ ". *b*, *c*, Length  $1\frac{7}{8}$ "; width  $1\frac{3}{4}$ ". *d*, Length  $3\frac{1}{2}$ "; height  $2\frac{1}{4}$ ".



*a*



*b*

FIG. 218.—*a*, Smooth red vase with blackened interior; *b*, red food bowl with lustrous black interior.

*a*, Diam. 6"; height 5 $\frac{1}{4}$ ". *b*, Diam. 6 $\frac{1}{2}$ "; height 3".

those from Mesa Verde and show an imperfect technique, nor are they as boldly drawn and cleverly combined. They show a close resemblance to the black and white ware of the Marsh Pass ruins and those identified as belonging to the San Juan culture. There is no external ornamentation on the black and white food bowls, but jugs and other forms of the same ware show elaborate external decoration.

A prevalent type of pottery obtained in the Elden Pueblo cemetery has a bright red color on the exterior and lustrous black on the interior (fig. 218). Some of these specimens have their outer surface corrugated, but the black interior surface occurs both in many of those which are corrugated and others whose outer surface is smooth. This ware, whether bowls, jars, or vases, is characteristic, and may be known as the Flagstaff ware; although widely distributed all over the Southwest, it is especially abundant in localities where Gila Valley ware prevails. The black color on the inner surface of the jar or bowl was formed in the same way as at the modern Santa Clara pueblo, where it is produced by the action of smoke from a smothered fire. Various substances may be used to create this smoke. The Hopi often use for that purpose a thin piece of corn bread, called paper bread, but other substances are likewise employed. A similar method of using smoke to impart this black color was employed by the ancient Greeks and Egyptians.

The forms of the red pottery here described as Flagstaff type are food bowls, vases, jugs, ladles, ollas, and the like. The several jugs and bowls, some smooth, others with corrugated exterior and lustrous interior surface, would indicate that these two groups were contemporary. Both, however, are supposed to antedate what is called the black on white pottery, which type is decorated and by far the most attractive of all the archaic ware from Elden Pueblo. The designs on this ware are conventionalized figures painted on a white ground.

In order to simplify a study of the variety of pottery found at Elden Pueblo these artifacts are here divided into six groups, classified as follows: 1. Rude and undecorated, with no evidence of coil; 2. Corrugated and coiled; 3. Mat red ware; 4. Smooth red ware; 5. Polychrome; and 6. Black on white, or white on black, decorated with geometrical designs.

1. *Rude, undecorated, and uncoiled.*—The few objects referred to this type of pottery are very coarse and show no indications that they were made by coiling. They seem to have been fashioned by the hands, working a lump of clay and possibly smoothing it by the aid of a stone or some other implement. Finger prints and other markings occur on the surface of these vessels. They show no at-

tempts at painting a glaze decoration and their shapes recall the very crude products of workmen who were unskilled in the work. Among the varieties of this form may be mentioned small crucible-shaped receptacles, like children's playthings, larger bowls, ollas, cooking pots, vessels with grooved handles like gourd ladles, and others. Images of animals, birds, quadrupeds, and even human effigies were pressed into shape from balls of clay.



FIG. 219.—Red corrugated vessel. Diam.  $5\frac{1}{2}$ "; height  $4\frac{1}{2}$ ".

2. *Corrugated and coiled ware*.—Elden pottery of this group is very characteristic and is easily distinguished from the corrugated and coiled ware of other pueblos by its red color. We sometimes find examples, mostly bowls, vases and jugs, of gray color with black lustrous interiors, the corrugations being quadrilateral in shape, smooth on the surface, indentations shallow. The quadrangles are arranged in regular rows (fig. 219). Variants of this regular corrugation are many, the differences being mainly in form and relative size but the corrugations are so regular that some form of angular instrument must have been used in making them. There are also specimens of coiled ware in which the corrugations are very small, closely

crowded and apparently made with a stone, a piece of wood, or some pointed implement. The coiling often appears broadly separated by parallel grooves. Vessels made of corrugated ware have not as a rule thin walls like those characteristic of the San Juan, especially Mesa Verde cliff dwellings, and lack appended scrolls.

3. *Mat red ware*.—There are two types of red ware, both of which may be called abundant. The most common red ware has a bright burnished red color, generally more or less blackened in burning, with a lustrous black color on the interior. It takes the form of globular bowls, flat open food bowls, ladles with short handles, and jugs. The most abundant red ware specimens are globular jars. Some of the red food bowls have the opening pear-shaped, resembling a form of ladle. The lips of red jugs are outcurved and the neck is compressed, generally short. One of the most highly decorated examples of red ware with dull black decoration on the interior (fig. 222, a) has also on the outside white figures representing a circle of human hands or animal paws, which is rare among food bowls from Elden Pueblo. The designs on this bowl recall those on a vessel formerly used in the snake washing of the Hopi snake priests.

4. *Smooth red ware*.—The most unusual type of pottery and therefore the most instructive is the smooth red ware, commonly without decoration exteriorly but often blackened on the inside. This ware occurs sporadically in the pueblo region but is well known from the ruins in southern Arizona and is most abundant among modern Pima, Kwahadt, and Papago. The smooth red ware of Papago is generally decorated with geometrical patterns in black. Several specimens of both the smooth red ware and the corrugated have their interiors a lustrous black color, but with no designs. The white or gray ware bears black decorations.

We have this same condition of corrugated ware with inner surface black in the cemeteries of Pipe Shrine House on the Mesa Verde, a specimen of which has been figured elsewhere. The smooth red ware which is so abundant at Elden Pueblo is very rare in the Rio Grande and exceptional in the Little Colorado. The decorated red ware of Elden Pueblo is like the ornamented red ware at Homolobi and Chevon, pueblos near Winslow, and is abundant in the ruins at Tuba City and on the road to Marsh Pass.

5. *Polychrome ware*.—Polychrome ware is very rare at Elden Pueblo, only a few sherds and but one or two small food bowls having been found in the collection from this ruin. This is astonishing when we bear in mind that collections made at Wupatki and Marsh Pass contain many specimens of this ware. As a general rule, polychrome



*a*



*b*

FIG. 220.—Two specimens of black and white ware. *a*, jug; *b*, canteen with glossy black and white decoration.

*a*, Diam. 5"; height 4 $\frac{1}{2}$ ". *b*, Diam 6"; height 5 $\frac{1}{4}$ ".

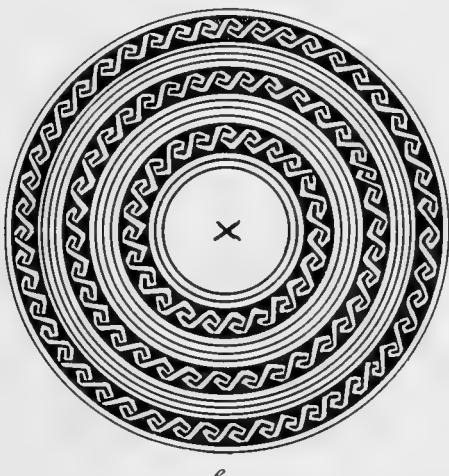
*a**b**c**d**e**f*

FIG. 221.—Inside decoration of six food bowls of black and white ware showing variety of the geometrical decorations.

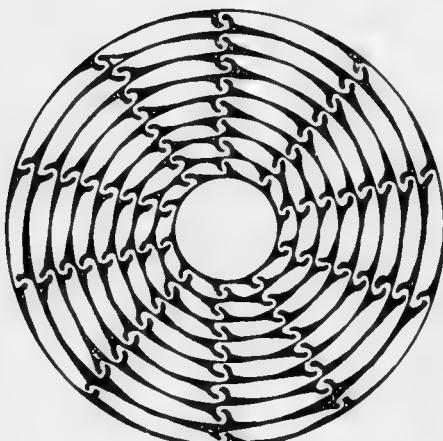
*a*, Diam.  $4\frac{1}{2}$ "; height 2". *b*, Diam.  $9\frac{1}{4}$ "; height  $4\frac{3}{4}$ ". *c*, Diam.  $5\frac{1}{2}$ "; height 3".  
*d*, Diam.  $7\frac{3}{4}$ "; height  $4\frac{1}{4}$ ". *e*, Diam. 6"; height 3". *f*, Diam.  $5\frac{1}{2}$ " x 5"; height 3"; handle  $6\frac{1}{2}$ ".



a



b



c



d



e



f

FIG. 222.—Decorations on the interior of food bowls. *a*, interior of dull red ware bowl; *b*, exterior of same bowl; *c-f*, interior decoration of black and white bowls.

*a, b*, Diam.  $11\frac{1}{2}$ "; height 5". *c*, Diam.  $6\frac{3}{4}$ "; height 4". *d*, Diam. 7"; height  $3\frac{3}{4}$ ". *e*, Diam.  $5\frac{1}{4}$ "; height  $2\frac{1}{2}$ ". *f*, Diam.  $6\frac{1}{2}$ "; height 4".

*a**b**c**d**e**f*

FIG. 223.—Characteristic designs on the interior of black and white food bowls.

*a*, Diam.  $10\frac{1}{4}$ "; height 6". *b*, Diam.  $8\frac{1}{2}$ "; height 5". *c*, Diam.  $8\frac{3}{4}$ "; height  $3\frac{3}{4}$ ". *d*, Diam.  $8\frac{1}{2}$ " x  $7\frac{7}{8}$ "; height 5". *e*, Diam. 8"; height  $4\frac{1}{2}$ ". *f*, Diam.  $3\frac{1}{2}$ "; height  $2\frac{1}{4}$ ".

ware in the last mentioned localities has the same geometrical symbols as the Elden Pueblo black on white ware.

6. *Black and white ware.*—The common decorated pottery at Elden Pueblo is the well-known black on white. In many instances the



FIG. 224.—Ladle of black and white ware. Bowl,  $3\frac{3}{4}$ " x  $4\frac{1}{4}$ "; handle,  $4\frac{1}{4}$ ".

figures, which are here always geometrical, are white in color on a black base, but generally the reverse is the case, *i. e.*, the design is in black on a white base. The former may be called "negative." The distribution of the white and black commonly leads to patches or bands of checkerboard areas or mosaic patterns well illustrated in pottery

from the middle Little Colorado valley. While the black decoration on white is mainly geometric, some of the designs are very intricate and beautiful. No realistic and few conventionalized figures appear. Decoration appears on the inside of food bowls and ladles (figs. 221 to 224), but are confined to the outside of vases (fig. 225), ollas, jars, and seed bowls. Many of the designs are modifications of the swastika or of the friendship sign. There are no ornamental figures on the outside of bowls and generally no broken lines. The

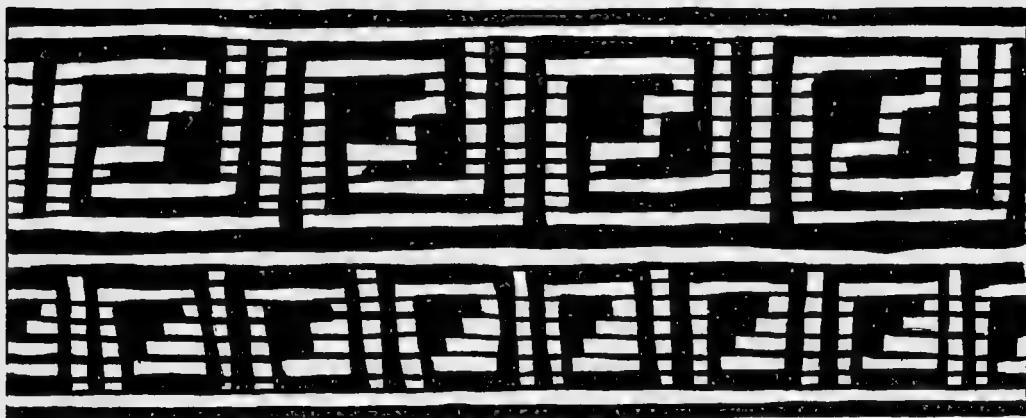


FIG. 225.—Decorations on two black and white vases.

bowls are hemispherical in shape, generally thick walled with square, round, or outcurved lips. In the last-mentioned, the outcurved inner rim when broad enough is decorated with simple designs differing from those of the body of the bowl.

The globular vessels of black and white ware called seed bowls are represented in the collection by several specimens, all highly decorated with scroll, frets, and other designs. These seed bowls are sometimes designated as globular vessels. They do not always contain seeds, for two specimens of red ware are filled with red and green pigments.

One of the most exceptional forms of Elden Pueblo pottery is an effigy vessel here placed under the black on white ware and shown in figure 226. This specimen was found upon the pelvis of what appeared to be a priest, as shown in figure 212. It is a most remarkable piece of prehistoric pottery, especially when it is borne in mind that it is made of archaic black and white ware and must therefore be very old. Its purpose is unknown, but it may have been a receptacle for medicine liquid employed in ancient rites and ceremonies. It was evidently



FIG. 226.—Vessel of black and white ware in the form of an unknown animal probably used in carrying medicine or sacred meal in ceremonies. Length  $8\frac{1}{2}$ ", height  $6\frac{3}{4}$ ".

carried by a cord forming a handle attached to a perforated ridge between the stumps of horns or ears and to a similar ridge at the posterior end of the back.

It is not possible to identify what animal this effigy was intended to represent but it was a quadruped with divided hoofs at the extremities of short and stumpy legs, three of which are partially broken. The mouth is wide open and the head bears between the eyes and near the two ears the broken remnants of two horns. The body is almost globular in shape and is covered with designs in which sun emblems predominate. The designs repeat several times a circle with short

extensions from the periphery. The circle among the Pueblo people symbolizes several supernatural conceptions in the Hopi art, among which are sun or sky god and earth, but whether the effigy jar represents either of these or some other conception is not evident.

The form of this effigy is not unlike an inferior specimen from the cemetery of Pipe Shrine House, Mesa Verde National Park, Colorado.<sup>1</sup>

The mortuary pottery from Elden Pueblo is allied in several features to that found in the great cliff ruins of the Navajo National Monument and also to that from the Marsh Pass, northern Arizona. It has some points of resemblance to that of an archaic preueblo of the Mesa Verde culture that antedated the cliff dwellings of the Mesa Verde, as shown by specimens collected by the Bureau from the cemeteries at Far View Tower and at Pipe Shrine House of the Mummy Lake Group. It likewise crops out elsewhere at most unexpected localities in the Southwest, as in ruins in the Walpi Wash and Jeddito Valley. Dr. Walter Hough has called attention to the similarity of pottery from McDonald Canyon, 22 miles south of Holbrook, to that from Elden Pueblo. It would seem to characterize the oldest culture of the central Little Colorado valley as well as that from the San Juan.

In conclusion, it should be pointed out that although many important contributions have been made in recent times to our knowledge of pueblo pottery and its distribution in prehistoric times, these conclusions are tentative, as there remain many unexplored areas in our Southwest, the pottery of which is unknown. One of these is the region west of the Little Colorado and south of the Grand Canyon, as far west as California and southwest to the Gila Valley. Elden Pueblo lies in the geographical center or heart of this extensive area, of which archeologically and ceramically we knew next to nothing up to the past summer. It is a type ruin strategically placed, adding new facts bearing on several problems of the prehistoric Southwest.

The likeness of Elden Pueblo architecture and ceramics to the oldest ruins in Arizona is very pronounced. It has many points of resemblance to the ruins in the Gila basin, apparently connecting them with the pueblos of the San Juan. The relative age of Gila compounds and San Juan pueblos is a problem we are as yet unable to satisfactorily solve. We now greatly need more information on the region between Elden Pueblo and the mouth of the Gila in order to show intimate connections between compounds and pueblos, but in this re-

---

<sup>1</sup> Smithsonian Misc. Coll., Vol. 74, No. 5, Fig. 107c.

gion we evidently have a meeting place of the types of prehistoric cultures in the northern and southern parts of Arizona.

#### RECORDING OF HOPI INDIAN MUSIC .

At the request of the Starr Piano Co. of Richmond, Ind., Dr. J. Walter Fewkes superintended the recording of eleven Katcina songs of the Hopi Indians. Permission was received from the Office of Indian Affairs to take four Indians from their reservation to the Grand Canyon, where the recording was done. The singers represented the older generation and remembered Dr. Fewkes from the time of his studies among their tribe 30 years ago. The age of the singers insured the genuineness of the songs, many of the words of which are archaic and cannot be translated.

Dr. Fewkes noted with much interest the improvements that have been made in recording apparatus since his pioneer efforts along this line over 30 years ago. The Indians displayed no hesitancy in singing into the microphone and seemed quite pleased on hearing the result.

The original master records will eventually be deposited with the Smithsonian together with a set of the reproductions.

#### ARCHEOLOGICAL AND ETHNOLOGICAL RESEARCHES IN CALIFORNIA

The beginning of the year found Mr. J. P. Harrington, ethnologist, engaged in the work of following up what information is still available on the culture and archeology of the Mission Indians of southern California. Work was continued at ruined village sites in the Santa Ines, Ojai, and Simi valleys, and important discoveries were made revealing an earlier and a later coast Indian culture. The archeological sites of the region are being built over at an alarming rate, due to the settling up of the country by Americans, and thus are being lost forever to scientific investigation. The numerous pictographs, legendary stones, and place names were also thoroughly investigated. The rancheria of Misihu in the Cañada de las Uvas was traced with more than usual success, although it seems that the cemetery has been washed away by the arroyo. The village consisted of 30 or more dome-shaped huts, from 12 to 20 feet in diameter, clustered irregularly on and about a great rocky hill, also of dome shape. Most of the hut circles can still be traced, but little was found under the surface of the floors. The near-by village of Sikutip had an entirely different arrangement, standing on the floor of a meadow beside a little swampy patch of ground that must have supplied the Indians with drinking water. Four large springs with pictographs traced on their rocky walls were located in the vicinity.



FIG. 227.—Housepit at Misahu.



FIG. 228.—Indian fortification parapet at Santa Maria ranch.



FIG. 229.—Indian sign post.



FIG. 230.—Site of Simomo ranchería.

The country in Indian times was literally populated with "petrified" "first people," who lived at the beginning of the world and were transformed to stone for one reason or another, as special legends tell. There is a rocky pinnacle on a hilltop which used to be a person and evidently still has some life in it, for it is said to change its position at times, being seen by the Indians now erect, now tilted, now reclined. Two more petrified people shot arrows at each other across a canyon, with the result that one of the rocks is badly shattered. Another rock has horns. Even a whole house is petrified; a ghastly magical woodrat described as being some two feet in length is said to live in a rock



FIG. 231.—The old and the new: sheet iron stovepipes emerging from Hopi kivas. (Photograph by J. P. Harrington.)

that looks exactly like a primitive Indian wigwam. Another rock is the home of a magical beaver. Still another rock is a warclub left by the first people. Up another boulder two petrified rattlesnakes are crawling, seen as streaks in the formation of the rock.

The first people also left their barefooted or sandaled tracks. A good photograph was obtained of one of these footprints. It is a perfect human footprint, fourteen inches long. The god who made this print was heading toward the ocean.

The Indians also had the custom of placing a small rock on top of a boulder to mark the trails. One would go along the trail looking for these guides, which are always seen bobbing up ahead in conspicuous places. It is denied that Indians put all of them there; it is

said that some of them were there always, even in the time of the first people. They were the Indian sign posts.

At Simomo the cemetery was located. The great shell refuse mound of this rancheria shines white and makes the site conspicuous at a distance. The houses were on this mound and as the mound grew,



FIG. 232.—Kutqa, Chief of the Walpi Indians, who sang at the Grand Canyon. (Photograph by J. P. Harrington.)

by fresh accumulations of débris, the whole village gradually rose in elevation as the centuries passed. The spring was at the foot of the slope and had a strong flow of excellent water; it is now used as a watering place for cattle. No material of very early date was recovered from the reconnaissance of the Simomo site. At Shisholop site, the shell content of the mound was found to be unusually large and few artifacts were found in it. The shell species contained in these mounds are practically all identified as modern.

At the close of the California work, in May, Mr. Harrington was detailed to visit Walpi, Arizona, for the purpose of bringing a party of Hopi Indians to the Grand Canyon, where records were made of their songs. The Indians whose services were secured were Kutqa, Chief of Walpi Pueblo; Hunawö, head snake chief; Hungi, a leader in the snake ceremonies; and Kakapti, one of the best singers of the tribe. At the Grand Canyon they met their old friend, Dr. Fewkes, and proceeded to give their best renditions of Katcina songs to the strange machine invented by the white man to preserve these priceless songs of the remote Indian past. The Grand Canyon is a sacred place of Hopi mythology, and their visit to it took on almost a religious aspect. Songs were obtained of a dozen different kinds of Katcinas, which may be described as ancestral spirits. On the trip through the Hopi country native place names were gathered from the four aged men.

During the middle of the summer, Mr. Harrington assisted the Chief of the Bureau in the excavation of Elden Pueblo, Arizona. During the excavations, visits were received from a number of Hopi Indians and information of unique character was recorded from some of them. None of the visitors, however, was able to furnish the old Indian name of Elden Pueblo, although they gave without hesitation the name of the near-by Elden Mesa. But they were unanimous in thinking that the Elden inhabitants were ancestors of the Hopi. Practically all the artifacts taken from the ruin could be named in Indian and intelligently discussed by the Hopi.

#### ETHNOLOGICAL STUDIES AMONG THE IROQUOIS INDIANS

Mr. J. N. B. Hewitt, ethnologist, Bureau of American Ethnology, spent the period from May 25 to June 29, 1926, among the Iroquois Indians living on their reserves in the vicinity of Brantford, Ontario, and at Caughnawaga near Montreal, Quebec, Canada.

While on the Grand River Grant to the Six Nations, near Brantford, Ontario, Mr. Hewitt resumed his intensive researches relating to the content and analytic interpretation of the Onondaga, the Mohawk, and the Cayuga native texts recorded by him in former years, relating to the several institutions of the Federal League of the Five (latterly Six) Iroquois tribes, including the contents and the structure of the noble Chants and Rituals of the impressive Federal Council of Condolence for deceased Chiefs and the Installation of their successors.

With the aid of Chief John Buck, an Onondaga-Tutelo mixed-blood, as an Onondaga informant and interpreter, and Chief (retired)

Alexander G. Smith, a Mohawk speaker and informant, Mr. Hewitt obtained a fine Mohawk version and literal translation of the remarkable Requicken Address of this famous Council.

The psychological insight of the framers of this wonderful ritualistic address is without question unsurpassed in any other composition of its kind in any other literature of the world. Its primary purpose is to thwart the ultimate aim of Death—the ultimate destruction



FIG. 233.—Mr. Joshua Buck, (obiit 1923), Onondaga-Tutelo, Iroquoian stock, ritualist and native physician.

of all living—and to restore the mental equipoise of one who has been stricken with inconsolable grief through the loss of a kinsman or kinswoman, or a beloved ruler, a chief, by the ruthless hand of Death. One so stricken gives vent to extravagant expressions of grief and sorrow, lasting weeks, and months and even years, by self-torture and self-humiliation, by foregoing food and drink to the verge of starvation, by denying himself the ordinary comforts and needs of life, and even by sitting among the ashes of the hearth and casting the ashes and coals over his head and person, thus filling in time the eyes, the

ears and the throat with them, in such manner that the environing world of persons and things are no longer objects of sense; and the vitality becomes so reduced in time that the sufferer may well be regarded as moribund. To redeem a grief-tormented sufferer from such a state of collapse is the set task of the Requicken Address.

About the year 1570 of the Christian Era, five linguistically cognate Iroquois tribes, occupying at that time chiefly the central and the eastern portions of the present State of New York, united in establishing the historically well-known League or Confederation of the Iroquois for the avowed purpose of securing Health and Peace, Justice and Righteousness, Order and the Force of Personality (Orenda), as the bases of a beneficent Commonwealth of peoples.

The tribes entering into this organic unity were the Mohawk, the Seneca, the Onondaga, the Oneida, and the Cayuga. At that time these tribes were also united in a more or less close compact with the noted Neutral Nation of the Iroquoian linguistic stock, another federation of tribes, which in the person of the famous Chieftainess, Djigonsa'sen (the Wildcat), took an active part in the conferences and the deliberations resulting in the establishment of the League of the Five Iroquois Tribes and also of the other compact with the Neutral Nation. But for some reason, yet unknown, this alliance was not wrought into a permanent organic institution, and so, in the structure of the Iroquois League as known to us, there appears no concrete indication of this former important alliance; not even nominal recognition of the Neutral Nation exists. There are, however, some essential features of the structure of the Iroquois League which a uniform tradition ascribes to the helpful work of this broadminded stateswoman and Chieftainess of the Neutral Nation.

Political and religious organizations of the Iroquoian peoples function only through the interaction of two important complementary principles which are embodied in definitely organized groups of persons. This is true of the tribal and of the federal organizations. These two principles are the male and the female functions.

The unit of the tribal organization is the clan. The smallest number of clans in any tribe is three. The Mohawk and the Oneida each have this number. And in either tribe the three clans are grouped in two complementary units, the one representing the Male or Father Principle, and the other, the Female or Mother Principle. Each of these units is usually called a Phratry or a Sisterhood of Clans. The nine clans among the Seneca, the Onondaga and the Cayuga are, in like manner, respectively grouped into two complementary units composed

of four and five clans each, the one unit embodying the Male, and the other, the Female Principle.

The highest unit of organization of the federal League of the Iroquois was the Sisterhood or Phratry of Tribes. Two Sisterhoods of Tribes composed the League. The five tribes mentioned above composed these Sisterhoods; in the one were three tribes, namely the



FIG. 234.—Chief (*Merit*) John "Smoke" Johnson, Mohawk, Iroquoian stock, annalist and ritualist.

Mohawk, the Seneca and the Onondaga, in the other were two tribes, namely, the Oneida and the Cayuga; the first Phratry embodied the Father or Male Principle, and the second the Mother or Female Principle.

Viewed from the federal standpoint, what affects the integrity or the welfare of a clan of a tribe affects in like manner the entire Sisterhood or Phratry of Tribes to which that tribe belongs. So the death of a Chief of a clan of a tribe makes mourners of the entire

Phratry to which such tribe belongs, and this fact automatically makes the complementary Phratry Redeemers or Restorers. The mourners are described as *Those whose minds are prostrate*, and the Redeemers as *Those whose minds are virgin or unaffected*, and so in a position to restore to full life those who mourn.

In all formal public assemblies or councils, the Phratry of Tribes representing the Father or the Male Principle occupies a side of the real, or the imaginary, fire opposite to that occupied by the Phratry of Tribes representing the mother or female principle.

In formal public assemblies the Male or Father side of the tribe or of the League is addressed as a single personality by the pronoun, "thou," and by the terms, "My Father," "My Father's Brothers," "You, Three Brothers." The Female or Mother side of the tribe or of the league is also addressed as a single personality by the pronoun, "thou," and by the terms, "My Offspring" or "My Children," "My Weanling," and "You, Two (latterly Four) Brothers." These examples apply specifically to the League institutions. It is these figurative appellations which are employed in the Rituals and Chants and Addresses of the Council of Condolence and Installation. To understand these dramatized lyric compositions the terms in the foregoing examples must be kept carefully in mind.

These brief interpretative comments will enable one the better to grasp the significance of the contents of the Requicken Address in question. This formal lyric address is composed of 15 themes or burdens of hurts to life learned from human experience, and the asserted healing of each hurt by the use of the appropriate remedial means by the ritually prescribed agent, the Celebrant.

Each of these Themes or Burdens is set forth through a formula common to all, with one or two exceptions. First, a specific type of hurt arising from grief at the loss by death of kindred is made; then, this type of hurt is directly asserted as affecting the mourner present; and, lastly, the Celebrant executes the symbolic act which at once heals the hurt or removes its cause.

From one to four strings of wampum about four inches long (the proportion of white to purple beads varying with the theme), accompany each of these Themes or Burdens when they are in use, and they are hung upon a horizontal pole immediately in front of the celebrant Orator. As he ends the recital of a Theme he sends by the hand of his assistant the accompanying wampum string or strings to the opposite or mourning side of the Council Fire, where they are hung on another horizontal pole in front of the Speaker for that side.

The Council of Condolence and Installation requires that if the Father Phratry or Sisterhood of Tribes is the mourner then the Mother Phratry must become the unaffected one, and vice versa. It is the duty of the *unaffected* Phratry to act as the Celebrant of the Rites of the Council of Condolence and Installation.

In this remarkable Council five Rituals are employed, and four of these Rituals, when in use, are divided into two portions in such wise that there necessarily results a perplexing interlocking of one Ritual with another. This curious fact, for which the present writer has so far found no satisfactory explanation, has never yet appeared in print, in so far as the writer's knowledge goes.

The Requicken Address opens its first theme with a frank recognition of the Creator and Source of Life and with an expression of solidarity with him.

Specific names are applied to these Themes or Burdens of the Hurts of Life. In their order these Themes are as follows:

I. Tears. II. One's Ears. III. One's Throat. These three constitute the First Section of the Address, and they are used at the "Edge of the Forest," where the Fire of the Welcoming is kindled, and where the mourners first meet their *unaffected* guests, and they intone the Chant of Welcome. But the final Section of twelve Themes of the Requicken Address is not used until the other set Rituals but one have been recited and answered by the mourners, and is virtually the closing Ritual of the Council.

The intent of the Themes of the first Section is to restore to their normal condition the sight, the hearing, and the vocal organs of a grief-stricken mourner such as is mentioned previously in this paper. After this ceremonial cleansing and revivifying, he is prepared to meet the Condolers in the Principal Place of Assembly. Now he can see, he can hear, and he can talk.

The names of the Themes of the final Section are as follows:

IV. "Within the Breast (or Body)." The shock of deep grief has displaced the internal organs and they are awry, inducing much reduced vitality, with impending dissolution.

But the Celebrant gives a draught of the Waters of Pity, pressed from many words of sympathy expressed, to the sufferer, and as these waters reach the parts affected they quickly replace the disturbed organs and normal vitality is restored.

V. "The Trail of Blood from the Death Mat." "Verily, thou dost writhe in the midst of blood."

But the Celebrant does "wipe away the blood-stream from thy mat," using the "soft skin of the spotted fawn," so "that when thou wilt return to thy mat, it will be in the fullness of peace, and it will be spread out in contentment."

VI. "The Thick Darkness of Night" covers one. "Now thou dost not know the Light of Day upon the earth."

But the Celebrant comforts the mourning one, saying, "We cause it to be Daylight again for thee . . . the daylight will be fine, shining in perfect peace, and thou wilt again look upon the handiwork of the Perfector of our Faculties . . . spread out richly upon the earth."

VII. "The Sky is Lost" to the mourner. "Now, the Sky is completely lost to thy mind. Thou knowest nothing of what is taking place in the Sky."

But the Celebrant comforts with the words, "We cause the Sky again to be fine for thee; it will be beautiful, and thou wilt think contentedly as thou wilt again look upon the Sky."

VIII. "The Sun is Lost" to the mourner. "Such a person knows nothing about the Sun in its movements, nothing of its drawing nearer and nearer to him."



FIG. 235.—Chief Abram Charles, Cayuga, Iroquoian stock, annalist and ritualist.

But the Celebrant comfortingly says, "We now replace the Sun in the Sky for thee . . . and when the time for the dawning of a new day comes thou wilt see the Sun perfectly when it will rise . . . thy eyes will rest upon it as it draws nearer and nearer to thee . . . When the Sun will place itself in mid-sky, then around thy body rays of sunlight will abundantly surround thee."

IX. "At the Grave—the Heap of Upturned Clay." The shock of grief "thrusts a person aside to the place where arises the mound of earth which covers the one in whom one's mind confided and received support. . . . Unhappily one thinks, for one's mind lies there beside the grave of upturned earth. There it is shaken and rolled about on the ground. . . . It knows nothing else."

But, the Celebrant in comforting terms says: "We now level the upturn earth over the place where rests the one thou didst trust for words of wisdom. . . . A fine slab of wood do We, the Three Brothers, place over these; and gathered moss and grasses plucked up; for verily, there are two things which are done by the Day and also by the Night; the one is that, should it so be, that should the Day put forth fierce rays of sunlight, they shall not, therefore, pierce through to him; the other is, that should it so be, that driving rains fall heavily upon them by night, these too shall not go through to where he lies—though nothing save the bones be visible there. So then there will his bones lie peacefully. . . . So that even for one little day thou shouldst think your thoughts in contentment."

X. "Twenty (Strings of Wampum) are the Penalty for it" (Homicide).

But the Celebrant comforts with these words among others: "Do thou know it. . . . My Offspring (*i. e.*, the Mother Side) . . . that now, we, Three Brothers take that up now, and that, let them say it, 'Now, we wrap up thy bones, one and all (as a protection), fixing the penalty of twenty (strings of wampum) on them (for any hurt done them).'"

XI. "The Fire of the Home, Around Which the People are wont to go to and fro."

"Our grandsires, now dead, whom our minds trusted implicitly, decreed, because they failed to perceive the lineaments of its Face, the Face indeed, of that Being that abuses us ceaselessly by day and by night, of that Being of Darkness, crouching hard by the barklodges, goes about with uplifted bludgeon—with its couched weapon at the very top of our heads—eagerly muttering its fell purpose, saying, 'I, I it is, who will destroy all things,' they decreed, I say, that they would name it the Great Destroyer, the Being Without a Face, the Being Malefic in Itself—Death. So, putting forth its sinister power in thy booth of bark, it struck down one therein on whom thou didst depend confidently for words of wisdom and for kindly service, and there is therein now a vacant mat. By this blow It scattered widely the fire-brands of thy fire, and in mocking derision the Great Destroyer has stamped out thy fire."

But the Celebrant orator utters these words of cheer and comfort: "So now, do thou know it, my Offspring, that we, the Three Brothers, having perfected our preparations, say, 'Now, we gather together again the scattered fire-brands of thy home fire, and so indeed, we rekindle thy fire for thee; and the smoke thereof shall rise again; that smoke shall be fine, and it shall even pierce the sky (smoke=the activities of life). . . . Now, indeed, we raise thee again to full stature.'"

XII. "Woman."

"Now, another thing. It is that wherein the Perfector of our Faculties who dwelleth in the sky, established it, in that He desired that He should have assistants above and even down to the earth; that some shall devote their care to the matters which pertain to the earth 'I have ordained,' He says, 'one and all.' It is that, in fact, that He, therefore, caused the person of our Mother—the Woman—to be of noble worth. He designed that She shall be entrusted with the duties pertaining to the birth and the nurture of mankind, and that She shall circle around the fire in preparing,—that she shall care for,—that by which life is sustained.

"And that, too, is a calamity, that, it may be, the Great Destroyer will make a swift stroke there in the ranks of our mothers, felling one there. The evil

is that a long line of (unborn) persons will be blotted out, in the many-fold lines of grandchildren who would have come from her loins. . . . Now, furthermore, the minds of all those who still remain have fallen and are prostrate."

The Celebrant orator says: "So now, furthermore, the Three Brothers, having perfected their preparations, let them now say, "now, then, we raise up your minds again and cheer and comfort them. This, indeed, shall come to pass; and you shall now again devote yourselves to your several cares and duties."



FIG. 236.—Onondaga woman and infant on cradle-board.  
Syracuse, N. Y.

### XIII. "Hoyā'ne'r: the Federal Chief."

"They whom our minds highly respected made a decree. They strictly forbade what they denominated 'tossing it over the shoulder.'"

The Celebrant continues: "Now, Sayā'ne'r (thou, Federal Chief), we, Three Brothers, having perfected their preparations say to thee: 'Do thou, listening, hear full well what is said to thee by thy Niece (our Mothers) and by thy Nephew (the Men) of thy Clan. The reason that this must be is that to them also has been given mind—the ability to judge right things.'" (Here follow the details of several admonitions to the Federal Chief for derelictions in official duties by the Mothers, and then by the Mothers and the Men of the Clan). The Celebrant continues: "That too is another grave matter, shouldst

thou toss over they shoulder the admonition of justice and right conduct by which all the people live. Should this come to pass, then know that the time is near when the feet of thy people shall hang over the abyss of the sundered earth (of impending ruin). Should this misfortune take place there is no One under heaven who is able to draw them out of it save One, the Creator of our bodies, who has the power to do this and to aid all in distress."

#### XIV. "The Loss of Reason—Suicide."

"Our grandsires made another decree forbidding another thing, and that is, that the mind should not be permitted to lose its reason by nursing the memory of deep sorrow. . . . .

"That verily is a grave matter when the mind loses its reason because a grievous loss has befallen a person; for, it is well-known that there grow things on the earth, over which the other things of the earth have no power, but which have the power to end the days of a human being, should there be any weakening of the mind."

The Celebrant admonishes: "Should this come to pass, it will be a source of death to the people. So, for this reason, we, Three Brothers, forbid this thing to you, so that now you can again think in contentment."

#### XV. "The Ever-burning Signal Torch" And "The Short Purple Wampum String of Notification."

"When our grandsires, now long dead, conjoined their affairs they made a decree, saying: 'Here we place two rods horizontally side by side, and held fast by them fix the Ever-burning Torch.'

"And here, over the small horizontal pole of partition where it pierces the bark-wall we suspend a Pouch of the Skin of Dji'nho<sup>n</sup>'do<sup>h</sup>ye<sup>n</sup>'ā, of indifferent fur, in which we put the Short Purple Wampum String of Notification.

"And we, so many as our Council Fires number, have an equal right to these two objects. And they shall be of essential use wherever a grieved thing (=death) has taken place, or where instant peril, menacing death to one and all, is seen creeping like a serpent close at hand.

"It matters not on which side of our Council Fire (the Father Side or the Mother Side) the evil will be, these two things shall be vitally important.

"In either case, the one whose mind is *unaffected* (ago'nigo<sup>n</sup>ga<sup>h</sup>te<sup>v</sup>) shall grasp the Ever-Burning torch from its holders and also unhang the Pouch of the Skin of Dji'nho<sup>n</sup>'do<sup>h</sup>ye<sup>n</sup>'ā containing the Short Purple Wampum String of Notification, and he shall at once start going through the Lodge of the League so that the message he bears shall quickly be carried through the entire Lodge and all the Council Fires be made acquainted with it. . . . His going shall be done in such manner that there shall be no traces—no 'forms'—of lying down along the path. . . . .

"So, now, verily, with respect to thee, thy Ever-burning Torch is removed from its place and thy Pouch with the Short Purple Wampum String of Notification is unhung for thee, all this because of the grievous calamity which has befallen thee."

The Celebrant orator comforts with the following:

"Now, we, Three Brothers, again suspend the Pouch of the Skin of Dji'nho<sup>n</sup>'do<sup>h</sup>ye<sup>n</sup>'ā, of indifferent fur, over the Small Horizontal Pole where it pierces the Bark-wall of the Lodge, containing the Short Purple Wampum String of Notification which we have replaced and we also set back the Ever-

Burning Torch between the Two Horizontal Poles—these things to which we, so many as our Council Fires number, have an equal right.

"For, it may be that thou thyself will see close at hand the nameless Being of our destruction then verily thou shalt go at once and taking the Ever-burning Torch and the Pouch with the Short Purple Wampum String of Notification, and thou must go quickly along through the Lodge of the League so that in the shortest time possible all shall be notified.

"So, that verily will make it possible that thy two nephew-niece groups of kindred, and thy grandchildren as well, may live and think in contentment. So that, therefore, for one little day, you my weanlings severally may live pleasantly in the days that are coming.

"So, perhaps thus, let the Three Brothers do, so-called ever since they perfected their affairs. So, now then, do thou my weanling know that these are the sum of our words. Now then we kneel before you (thee) reverently. And now we will know presumably that the full number of our words have been realized in deed. We have now completely set your affairs in order again.

"Thus, then, did they whom we greatly revered do when they united their affairs; they made a decree, saying, 'It matters not on which side of the Council Fire which is between us the need be, it shall be possible that they shall again set his face fronting the people, that they shall again raise him up (requicken him), that they shall again name his name, and that then also he shall again stand upright before the people. In this we are following the ceremonial path. So, now furthermore, let them say, 'Do thou now point out to us the one who shall be again a colaborer with us.'

"Now, my weanling, do thou know that we, Three Brothers, have completed the Ceremony.

"And, now then, that which (short purple wampum string) notified us is on its way back to thee.

"Know thou, then, that now soon thy Father's kinsmen will arise to leave for home, and that there, then, at the edge of the forest will they lay their backs."

#### FIELD STUDIES OF INDIAN MUSIC

In July, 1926, Miss Frances Densmore, collaborator of the Bureau of American Ethnology, went to Neah Bay, Washington, to continue her study of Makah music. Neah Bay is situated on the Strait of Juan de Fuca, near the end of Cape Flattery. Encircled by the Olympic Mountains, it can be reached only by water, and during the winter months it is practically shut off from communication with the outside world. In this isolation the older Indians have kept their former beliefs and traditions with remarkable clearness, though they are anxious to be "civilized" and adopt the best of the white man's ways. Many years ago the Spaniards visited Neah Bay and the location of their fort is near the village. Traces of Spanish ancestry are seen in some of the Indians and occasional songs bear a resemblance to those recorded on the Mexican border. The intermarriage of the

Makah has been chiefly with the Clayoquot on the west coast of Vancouver Island and with the Quileute who are their nearest neighbors on the Pacific coast. Songs of these tribes were recorded as well as those of the Makah, the entire number of songs obtained being 146. The classes of songs comprise those of war, treating the sick, dances, legends, and songs for children. Eight Clayoquot songs for subduing the waves were recorded, as well as songs for fair weather and a plentiful supply of herring. Two aged people, one a Clayoquot and the other a Makah, said they had never heard of anger on the part of any "spirit," nor of any attempt to "propitiate the spirits." The words of the songs addressed to the breakers were said to "make them ashamed." These songs were sung during a storm, one containing the words:

Your teeth that are trying to get these people are long and homely.

Another song contained the words, "Please be still, you have treated us so badly." Another, sung in rough weather, had the words, "What beautiful weather this is! It is as calm as when the dogfish are moving in." The informant said, "Even when we were in the highest breakers, if we sang these songs it seemed as though very soon the water was smoother."

Although the caste system was rigidly maintained among the Makah, it is interesting to note that songs learned from slaves were recorded and that a slave was allowed to sing a song of his own country at the Klokali. A song received from a shell was recorded, as well as songs concerning the crab, chipmunk, shark, and whale.

The Klokali received special attention. This was an important gathering in the old time and terminated with dances imitating the actions of animals; it was understood, however, that the dancers represented the human beings who were the *ancestors* of the various animals and did not represent the animals themselves. Songs with representations of the wolf, deer, blackfish, and the wild white geese were recorded. One of the most important dances was that representing the elk, a dance which had no songs, the pounding on sticks and drum being the only accompaniment.

A remarkable opportunity for seeing native pageantry and hearing Indian songs occurred on Makah Day and at the rehearsals for that event. The dancing on this annual occasion is intended chiefly to transmit to the younger generation a knowledge of the old beliefs which are dramatized and presented by trained performers. Each dance has its costume and other paraphernalia. Spears decorated with hemlock were carried in the war dance, elk antlers by the elk dancers, and robes of



FIG. 237.—James Hunter in dance costume. (Photograph by Miss Densmore.)

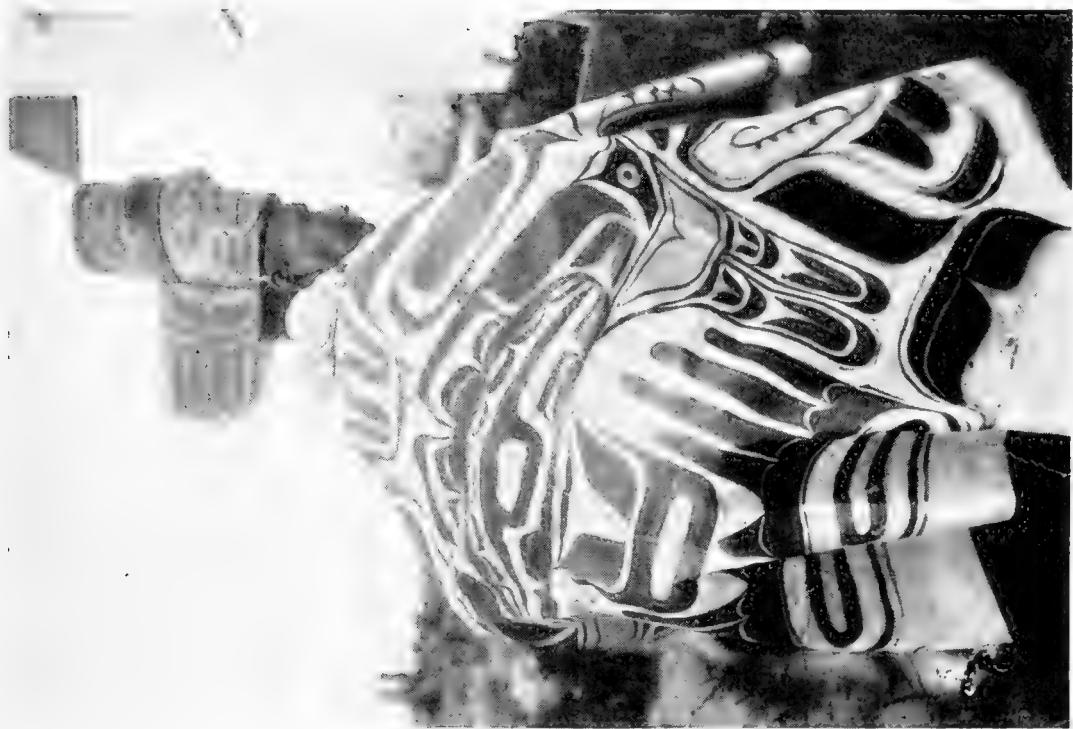


FIG. 238.—Charles Swan in dance costume. (Photograph by Miss Densmore.)

bear skin were worn in the "brown bear dance." The thunderbird dancers were followed by women who represented the lightning, known as the "belt of the thunderbird." The whale dancer carried green boughs on his back representing the dead bodies which, according to an old legend, were carried by a man preparing himself to be a whaler. Head-dresses of wood, cedar bark, and feathers were worn,



FIG. 239.—Mrs. Parker. (Photograph by Miss Densmore.)

some being decorated with shells. The legends connected with the dances, as well as their songs, were obtained. James Hunter (fig. 237) in a dance position wears a head-dress representing a duck, and Charles Swan (fig. 238) wears a similar ornament representing a wolf. Many Quileute and Indians from Vancouver Island attended this gathering, and, after the dramatic dances were concluded, each group sang its own songs, making it possible to compare the songs and manner of rendition from these widely separated localities.

The photographs at Neah Bay consisted of 12 portraits, numerous landscape and dance pictures, and a series of 20 posed pictures showing the successive postures in various dances. The 27 specimens obtained included a very old rattle used by a successful whaler, a war knife of whale bone, and a war club of the same material with feathers on the handle "to break the force of the blow" to the arm



FIG. 240.—Albert Irving. (Photograph by Miss Densmore.)

that wielded it. Other specimens were a braided rope of whale sinew and a portion of a whale vertebra used for smoothing the bottom of war and whaling canoes. Old halibut hooks of elk bone were obtained, also an old adze with blade of elk bone, this being the type of implement used in felling trees before the Makah had metal axes. The collection included a small reed instrument commonly called a whistle which, when blown, was concealed in the mouth of a thunder-

bird dancer, and another wind instrument the sound of which was said to "come through the seams" where the halves of the wooden tube were joined together. An interesting specimen is a "baby-carrier" woven of cedar bark and used only during the first four days of a child's life. In this carrier is placed a doll with pads of cedar bark around its face as formerly used to flatten the forehead and shape the cheeks and chin. A very old wooden cradle used for infants above the age of four days was also obtained.



FIG. 241.—Mrs. Sophie Wilson. (Photograph by Miss Densmore.)

The collecting of plants comprised 58 pressed specimens with descriptions of their economic uses. A majority of these were medicinal, including the entire set of remedies inherited by Mrs. Parker (fig. 239). Her children do not regard the old ways and this knowledge of plants would have perished with her.

The study of general customs included a detailed account of the making of the native canoe (dug-out), the preparation of native dyes, and a description of the whale hunt and its weapons, valuable information on the latter subject being given by Albert Irving (fig. 240).

Numerous legends concerning the mythical hero called Hirokwati were also recorded, with their songs.

On August 24, Miss Densmore arrived at Chilliwack, British Columbia, to record songs among the Indians gathered at the hop-fields where they were employed as pickers. These Indians were more than 1,000 in number. During the next two weeks she obtained more than 120 songs, 28 of which were recorded by old medicine men who use them at the present time in treating the sick. The 20 Indians who recorded songs were from 16 localities distributed over a territory extending about 400 miles north and south and about 150



FIG. 242.—Indians playing Slahal game at Chilliwack, B. C. (Photograph by Miss Densmore.)

miles east and west. Some live in mountain regions whence they go to the railroad on pack horses, while others were from remote settlements on islands or along the Pacific Coast. Among these localities were Cooper Island, Church House, Powell River, Metlakatla, Port Simpson, the Nass, Skeena, Thompson and Fraser rivers; and the west coast of Vancouver Island. Mrs. Sophie Wilson, a singer from Church House on Butte Inlet, is shown in figure 241. Among the interesting songs is one said to have been sung by a seal, another song is about a mountain goat, and another is the song of a doctor who talked with a whale and received from it the power to heal the sick.

An interesting event of each Sunday at the hop-pickers' camp was the playing of the Slahal game, its songs accompanied by pounding

on drums and planks. The playing of this game around a huge bonfire at night was a spectacular sight. In figure 242 the leader of one side has the "bones" in his hand and is preparing to give them to a member of his side for hiding. The songs occur while the location of the marked bone is being guessed by the opponents.

The material gathered at Chilliwack affords a remarkable means for comparison among the tribes represented, as well as with songs of tribes previously studied.

Among the important results of this year's work is the obtaining of data on the manner of composing songs by Indians, as distinct from the "receiving of songs in dreams." It appears that the composition of songs was assisted by walking or by the motion of a swing. Two persons sometimes collaborated in the composition of songs. Such persons were interviewed and their songs were recorded.

#### ARCHEOLOGICAL WORK IN LOUISIANA

Mr. Gerard Fowke, special archeologist, conducted important field-work on Indian mounds near Marksville, Louisiana.

It is a matter of actual knowledge that the Natchez Indians built many large mounds along the bluffs bordering the Mississippi on the east, and that this practice continued, though perhaps in a diminishing degree, until the period of French occupation of the territory. But it is not of record that this tribe, or a colony from it, moved permanently to the west of the river until within historic times.

Also, it is now an established fact that the small mounds so numerous over much of Texas, Louisiana and Arkansas, extending in great numbers down the Red River to Alexandria and, sparsely, even beyond that point, are the work of the Caddoans. The latter tribes, as far as we know, did not erect the quadrilateral or flat-topped mounds such as are prevalent to the eastward. This leaves unexplained as yet the comparatively few such structures found along the Red River, always near the stream, reaching up the valley nearly or quite to Texarkana. These may be due to Natchez, or others, who once lived here for a time but left no further traces.

Between the known territory of the Natchez and that of the Caddoans, that is, between the Mississippi and the vicinity of Alexandria, La., is a strip of country which, so far as its ancient remains suggest, did not belong to either of these people, and yet there is some resemblance to both. Whether these works indicate mingling of the two, or an overlapping of boundary lines at different periods, or whether there may have been another people in between them who borrowed somewhat from the customs of both, is not determined.

The low lands subject to overflow from the two rivers are, of course, extremely fertile, but as a rule the soil on the uplands is not productive, is so flat as to be swampy much of the time where not artificially drained, and apparently is not of a nature to invite a primitive people whose sustenance must depend in large measure on agriculture. That there were, nevertheless, settlements of Indians here and there is shown by the tumuli, sometimes more than twenty feet deep; but these are few and far between, and point only to small settlements with much open territory between them. It was a matter



FIG. 243.—Marksville. Trench partly excavated, Mound 4.

of some surprise, then, to find, a mile east of Marksville, a group of earthworks of such extent and character that they would be noticeable even in a region where similar structures are abundant, in Ohio or Georgia, for example. They extend for more than a mile along a bayou known as "Old River," which opens at either end into Red River, and, as its name indicates, is recognized by the present population as having once been the channel followed by that stream. There is little doubt that it flowed here at the time these earthworks were constructed, although at present it is several miles away. This fact, however, has no bearing on the age of the remains; such changes are frequent and extensive.

Most of the works are on the upland, close to the river bluff. Beginning at the south there is first a square, flat-topped mound eighteen feet high, covering a fourth of an acre; the sides are still so steep as to be difficult of ascent. It stands close to a tributary bayou beyond which, toward the south, no mound or other structure exists within three or four miles. Next in order is a nearly circular inclosure measuring somewhat more than three hundred feet across. This has a flat side bordering a moat lying along the outer margin of an embankment which is in the form of a rude semi-circle with each



FIG. 244.—Marksville. Mound 8, showing structure.

end at the top of the bluff; in fact, it seems that part of it has fallen with the caving of the bank. The length of this embankment is thirty-three hundred feet. Inside of it are two flat-topped mounds, each with its highest point thirteen feet above the surrounding surface. One of them covers about three acres, the other being somewhat smaller. It would seem that they were once quadrangular, but their outlines are so altered by cultivation and erosion that this is not certain. There were also within the enclosure a low mound eighty or ninety feet across, one somewhat smaller, and a conical mound twenty feet high.

Beyond this is another enclosure five hundred feet long, forming a fourth of a circle, one end on the river bluff, the other end at the bank of a ravine. Both ends are shortened by the banks caving in. There is a wide, deep moat at the outer side. The space enclosed is about four acres. Within the wall is a flat-topped mound six feet high and one hundred feet across.

Between these two embankments are lodge sites; low, circular embankments with a shallow exterior ditch from which the earth was taken to build them. These do not seem to be a part of the main works, but to pertain to a different period or a different people.



FIG. 245.—Mound inside of enclosure. Marksville.

Over a space of nearly a fourth of a mile to the east of the last mentioned enclosure no structures were erected; beyond this area, close to the margin of the bluff, are six mounds of the so-called "conical" form. Finally, in the bottom, on land subject to overflow, are four large quadrangular, flat-topped mounds from three to thirteen feet high, and three small, low, ordinary mounds, all enclosing a rectangular space of two acres. The three small mounds are on the edge of a slough.

It was a natural supposition that such conditions would be favorable for research, that works of such magnitude would repay investigation.

Six of the mounds were carefully excavated to an extent that disclosed all they had to reveal. Two, the smallest of those opened,



FIG. 246.—Pipe and vase found in Mound 4.



FIG. 247.—Left to right: Vase from Mound 4, vase from Mound 8, and plummet from Mound 10.

were simply piles of earth, containing nothing whatever to signify the reason for their existence. Had it not been for some charcoal, worked flint, and broken pottery, they might have been deemed natural formations. Two others were merely foundations for houses, but each showed plainly that at least two, perhaps three, houses had been erected on the same site, the later ones on new foundations above the old.

The last two mounds, one fifteen feet, the other twenty feet high, were tumuli. In the first a number of bodies had been placed either on the natural surface or in shallow graves, and the mound erected over them, apparently as a continuous operation. There was no evidence of a burial in the body of the structure.

The largest mound was quite different in its arrangement. There were no skeletons at the bottom, the first step having been to build up a platform of earth to an elevation of eighteen or twenty inches. On this a number of bodies had been placed, how many could not be even guessed, as all the bones were completely decayed and had no more consistency than wet chalk or ashes. They entirely covered a space several feet across. The mound had then been carried up over them to a height of about fifteen feet. Scattered through the earth for this entire distance were traces of burials, made as the work progressed, so the construction must have been intermittent or desultory, although there was no stratification or other marks to demonstrate this. Finally, the tumulus in this stage was finished.

Later, though it was impossible to estimate how much time may have elapsed, two large graves were dug in the top of the mound, several bodies placed in each, the graves filled, and the mound then added to until it was five feet higher, with a proportional increase in diameter. But the addition was largely on one side. The point beneath the apex as it was first built, was several feet away from the corresponding point in the mound as completed.

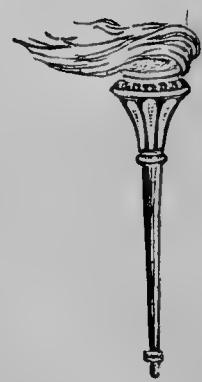
No implements or manufactured objects of any character of stone, shell, or bone were found in any of the mounds. There was some pottery—not much—and that crude, and except for two pots, neither of which is of two ounces capacity, all of it was broken. With a few skeletons were fragments of pots which had been entire when deposited, but had been broken from pressure. Some of them had decorations of incised or impressed lines and figures. A study of these, and comparison with other pottery in the southern territory, may furnish a clue as to the tribal affiliations of these Mound Builders, but unless so, there seems little hope of discovering their identity.











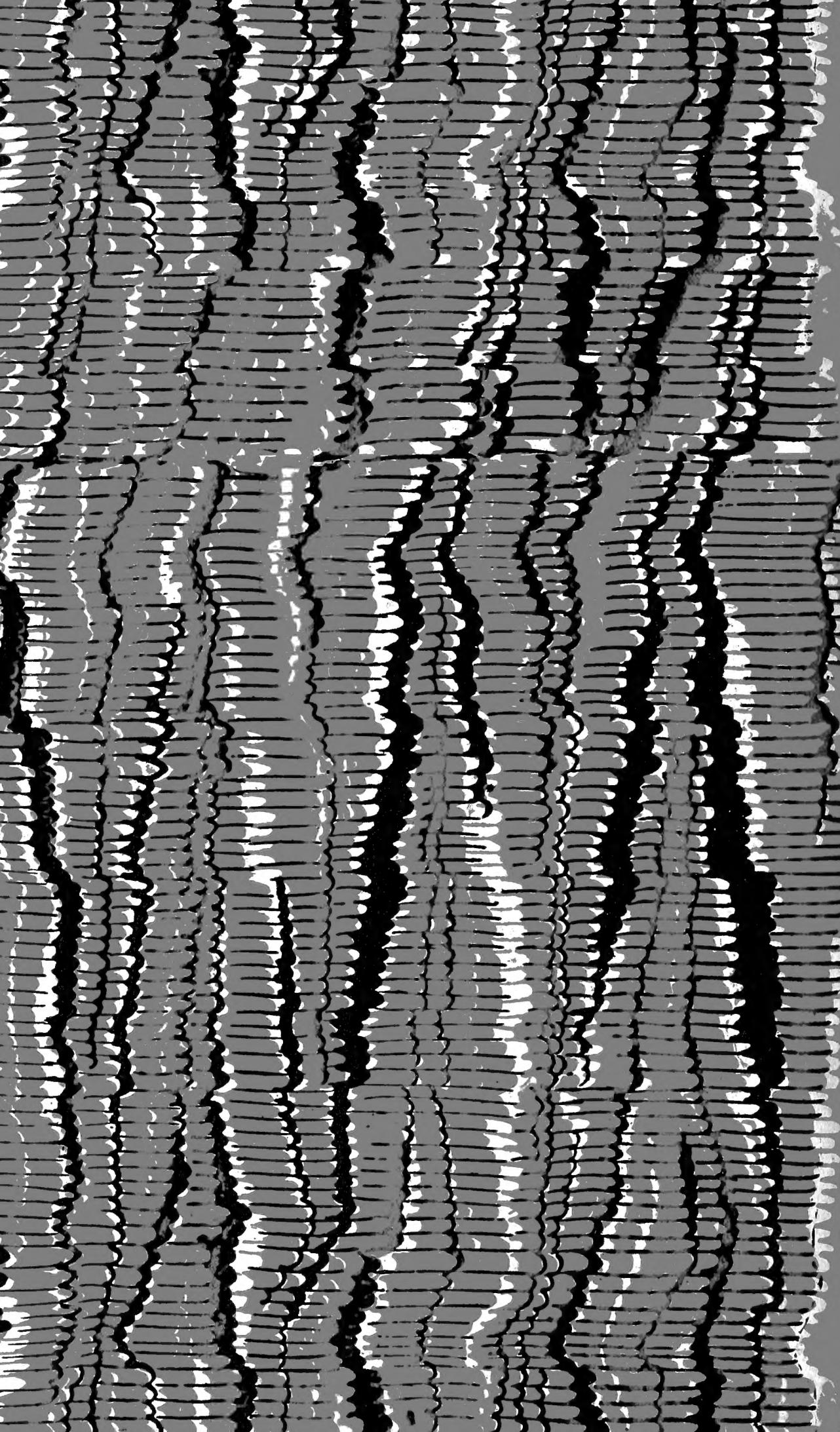


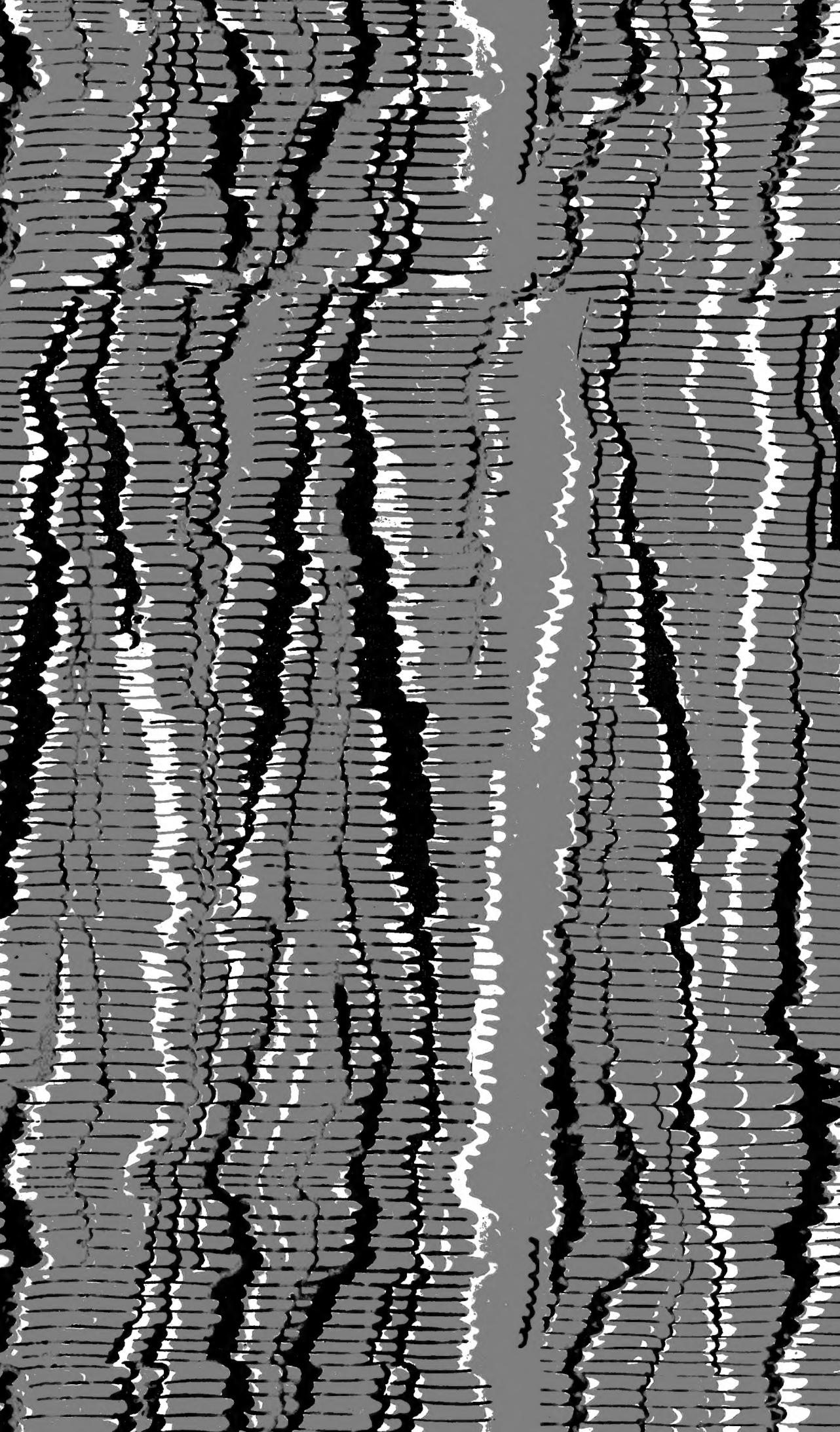












SMITHSONIAN INSTITUTION LIBRARIES



3 9088 00960 8274